

4:Barnett E-4.5 (1965-1967) 1970 AD5 Taiwan Hokkien AD5
Sanlei Ts'un

* * *

000 This is an authorized facsimile and was produced by
microfilm-xerography in 1971 by University Microfilms,
A Xerox Company, Ann Arbor, Michigan, U.S.A.

* * *

[Introductory, p. i]

4:Barnett E-4.5 (1965-1967) 1970 AD5 Taiwan Hokkien AD5
Sanlei Ts'un

71-2026

○○○ BARNETT, William Kester, 1930-
AN ETHNOGRAPHIC DESCRIPTION OF SANLEI TS'UN,
TAIWAN, WITH EMPHASIS ON WOMEN'S ROLES OVER-
COMING RESEARCH PROBLEMS CAUSED BY THE PRESENCE
OF A GREAT TRADITION.

Michigan State University, Ph.D., 1970
Anthropology

University Microfilms, A XEROX Company, Ann Arbor, Michigan

© Copyright by
WILLIAM KESTER BARNETT

1971

[Introductory p ii]

ABSTRACT

**AN ETHNOGRAPHIC DESCRIPTION OF
SANLEI TS'UN, TAIWAN
WITH EMPHASIS ON WOMEN'S ROLES**

**OVERCOMING RESEARCH PROBLEMS
CAUSED BY THE PRESENCE OF
A GREAT TRADITION**

By

William Kester Barnett

121 Evidence from a 1965-67 field study conducted in a
rural Taiwanese village suggested that the structural
position of women was not inferior to men to the extent
described in most previous reports or the literature of the
Great Tradition of China. A detailed statement of the
discrepancies, reasons for their occurrence, and suggestions
for reducing misinterpretations in the future are provided.

128 The largest portion of the four logical divisions of
this report contains a typical ethnography of a Hokkien
village in the rice-tea-orange region of northern Taiwan,
based on nineteen months of field work employing standard
anthropological techniques such as participant-observation,
mapping, census, life histories, and open-ended interview
schedules.

121 The second portion contrasts the canons of the Great
128 Tradition which contend Chinese women were expected to be
uneducated, economically useless, subordinate, submissive,
obedient, reticent, passive, and timid, with research data
from Sanlei Ts'un where many women were educated, most were

[Introductory piii]

- 121 economically important, and several were family despots.
128 Other Chinese ethnographies indicate that Sanlei is not
deviant for each contains considerable data which support
the latter description despite the fact the data is in
conflict with the author's summary regarding female status.
A few sources explicitly claim the case for the lowly
position of women in China has been overstated.

The third portion establishes how the errors in interpretation come about. One primary cause relates to the frequent anthropological emphasis on persisting aspects of social structure with a corresponding, but not necessary, focus on "ideal" rather than "real" culture; but more important, the presence of a Great Tradition which is expressed in a literary record generates problems for valid anthropological research in high civilizations. Indigenous scholars and foreign anthropologists alike become steeped in the "ideal" culture described by a society's Great Tradition before commencing field work. According to cognitive dissonance theory, it is extremely difficult to overcome any belief once it becomes internalized, i.e., any evidence contrary to existing knowledge tends to be ignored or denied. Therefore, both evidence and conclusions derived from research in civilizations by "specialists" probably will be unconsciously biased in favor of the Great Tradition.

The last major section is devoted to four suggestions for preventing further misinterpretations. The first supports added attention to concrete enumeration of rates

[Introductory p. iv]

121 and cases as part of the increased attention to research
128 methodology and reduced reliance on impressions.

The second advocates increased employment of the processural approach featuring extended case studies which place other analysts one step nearer to the social facts than conventional approaches, i.e., at the level of reading observational reports rather than abstractions.

The third and fourth proposals are two sides of the same coin. In order to maintain traditional anthropological objectivity which was customarily partially based on cross-cultural research, and yet, in order to obtain the advantages accruing from specialization in a Great Tradition, specialists should be encouraged to punctuate field activities in their special civilization by entering a third culture for comparative purposes, and conversely, other ethnographers should be encouraged to conduct research in high civilizations outside their areas of expertise. Specialization in a single society is probably dysfunctional for anthropology as presently practiced.

Nevertheless, undue pessimism is not fully warranted as demonstrated by several breakthroughs with new interpretations of Chinese cultural materials despite their conflicts with ideals expressed in the Great Tradition, i.e., in family composition, importance of affinal relations, nature of lineage organizations, etc. Further research is expected to support the contention that the status of women in China is not actually as low as was commonly accepted.

[Introductory p.v]

4:Barnett E-4,5 (1965-1967) 1970 AD5 Taiwan Hokkien AD5
Sanlei Ts'un

OOO AN ETHNOGRAPHIC DESCRIPTION OF
SANLEI TS'UN, TAIWAN
WITH EMPHASIS ON WOMEN'S ROLES
OVERCOMING RESEARCH PROBLEMS
CAUSED BY THE PRESENCE OF
A GREAT TRADITION

By
William Kester Barnett

A THESIS

Submitted to
Michigan State University
in partial fulfillment of the requirements
for the degree of

DOCTOR OF PHILOSOPHY

Department of Anthropology

1970

[Title Page]
[P. i]

4:Barnett E-4, 5 (1965-1967) 1970 AD5 Taiwan Hokkien AD5
Sanlei Ts'un

ooo To Nancy,
Beth and Sidney

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

114 This study is based on field work conducted in the
Republic of China (Taiwan) between September, 1965, and
122 January, 1967. The generous financial support for travel,
subsistence, and research expenses was realized from the
following sources: National Science Foundation Cooperative
Fellowship, Michigan State University Asian Studies Center,
National Defense Education Act Loan, and an International
Development Fellowship, Institute of Advanced Projects, Cen-
ter for Cultural and Technical Interchange Between East and
West. The latter also provided six months in residence to
organize field notes, review library materials, and consult
with visiting and resident scholars. Finally, the period
spent in writing after my return was partially supported by
a National Science Foundation Graduate Fellowship. My
appreciation is considerable for it simply would not have
been possible to accomplish the research without this aid.

114 The field work was facilitated by the hearty coopera-
122 tion of many people in Taiwan. Although operating under the
constraints of the "period of rebellion," pertinent data was
provided whenever consistent with the security of the coun-
try. Officials in such Hsin Tien offices as those of the
mayor, clerk, council, farmers' association, police, and land
all made us welcome. Scholars at National Taiwan University

114 often provided intellectual stimulation. The late Professor
122 Chen Shao-hsing, a sociologist, and Professor Chen Chi-lu,
an anthropologist, graciously served as our sponsors. Professors Shih Chien-sheng, Dean of the Law School, National Taiwan University, and Mei Ke-wang of the Central Police College furnished many helpful introductions. Much valuable data derived from the Joint Commission on Rural Reconstruction and the United States Information Service. Our major assistants, Jerry Lai, Jason Chi, and Pearl Hsieh must be commended. However, the greatest debt is due to the people who lived in the village I studied and in the other four villages which comprise the administrative unit in which it is located. They took us into their homes and into their hearts and made us a meaningful part of the community.

114 My professional training has been in the Departments
of Anthropology and Sociology at Michigan State University. Those who were most influential in effecting my scholarly interests were Drs. John Donoghue, John Gullahorn, and Ralph Nicholas. Also generous with time and valuable advice were Drs. Moreau Maxwell and Iwao Ishino of the Department of Anthropology and Dr. William Ross, the Director of the Asian Studies Center.

114 Professor Bernard Gallin has expended a great deal of
128 time and intellectual energy in suggesting improvements in this dissertation. Some of these suggestions have concerned matters of detail and some of them have concerned fundamental structural and organizational problems. In the time available to me, I have not been able to take account of all of

114 these suggestions although I believe that they would have
128 made the thesis significantly better than it is now. I
apologize to Professor Gallin and to readers for defects
that could have been remedied if I had made the improve-
ments that he suggested. I plan to make the recommended
changes as portions of the dissertation are revised for
publication.

ooo Finally, I am greatly indebted to my family. My
wife, Nancy McMillin Barnett, provided professional assis-
tance as a fellow anthropology graduate student as well as
incredible amounts of patience, encouragement, and under-
standing. My two children, Beth and Sidney, not only en-
dured what might have been regarded as the relative hard-
ship of life in a rural Taiwanese village, they thoroughly
enjoyed it, made many friends of their own, and helped make
our stay a most enjoyable one. My parents, Betty and Bill,
and my mother-in-law, Mary, never deviated from a constant
faith in my ability far beyond my own.

Please forgive the unfortunate errors of omission for
my debt to so many is too great to be recognized or repaid
other than indirectly, by a dedication to scholarship and
service to others, in order to transmit the benefits to
the next generation.

Iowa City, Iowa
May, 1970

WKB

TABLE OF CONTENTS

000 LIST OF TABLES	x
LIST OF FIGURES	xi
LIST OF SYMBOLS	xii
PREFACE	xiii
CHAPTER I: PROBLEM AND APPROACH	1
Overview of the Theoretical Problem	1
Discovery and Evolution of the Specific Problem	11
Taiwan as a Research Site	17
Constraints on the Selection of a Research Site	23
Selection of the Subject Village	28
Research Methods	31
Approach to the Problem	37
CHAPTER II: THE SETTING	40
Location and Physiography	40
Weather	46
Historical Setting - Taiwan	48
Historical Setting - Sanlei Ts'un	50
The Population	62
Social Organization	72
Languages	77
Clothing	80
Dwellings and Community Buildings	84
Personal Property	90
Health and Sanitation	92
Food and Diet	97
CHAPTER III: THE ECONOMIC BASE	106
Land and Land Tenure	106
Irrigation	116
Rice	116
Tea	123
Oranges	130
Miscellaneous Cash Crops	134
Subsistence Crops	137
Animal Husbandry	138
Wood	142
Non-Agricultural Employment	143

OOO A Case of Technological Obsolescence	158
Division of Labor	162
Household Money Management	164
Household Budgets	169
CHAPTER IV: FORMAL ORGANIZATION AND SOCIAL CONTROL	178
National Government	179
Provincial Government	181
County Government	182
Local Government	184
Divisions of Local Government and Politics	186
Regional Factions in the Li	188
Ideological Factions in the Li	192
Local Officers and Procedures	198
The Farmers' Association	201
Farmers' Association Factions	204
The Fruit Cooperative	208
Education	209
Social Control	214
Mediation and Legal Processes	216
Interpersonal Relations and "Face"	220
CHAPTER V: KINSHIP	223
Family Versus Household	225
Household Registration	225
Family Types and Distribution	230
Historical Changes in Family Size	233
Family Surnames	240
Chia Chang (Head of Family)	241
Processes Changing Family Size	245
Regular Marriage	247
Selecting a Spouse	248
Incorporation of the Bride	251
Chao Pu (Adopted-in Husband)	252
Siaosiv (Adopted Daughter Marriage)	260
Implications of Marriage Forms	267
Reasons for Adopting Daughters	267
Distribution of Adopted Daughter Types	270
Adopted Sons	275
Family Division and Inheritance	278
Basis for a Diachronic Approach to the Family	284
Postulates Affecting the Family Life Cycle	285
Family Life Cycles	288
The Basis of Extra-Familial Kinship Organizations	297
The Compound	303
CHAPTER VI: VOLUNTARY ASSOCIATIONS	314
Money Lending Clubs	314
Chieh Pai Hsiung Ti (Sworn Brothers Associations)	319
God's Associations	325
Social Effects of Men's Voluntary Associations	326
Neighborhood	327

000 Sanlei Ts'un Temple Association	331
Talei Li Temple Association	335
The Temple versus an Ancestral Hall	339
Women's Work Groups	342
Men's Work Groups	345
Tea Processors	347
Young Men	349
Young Women	349
<u>I Ching</u> (Voluntary Policemen)	350
<u>Corvee</u>	354
 CHAPTER VII: RELIGION	357
The Main Village Temple	364
Temple Gods	367
Temple Events	370
Earth God Temple	372
Miscellaneous Holy Places	375
The Home Worship Center or <u>Kung T'ing</u>	376
<u>Hsiang Lu</u> (Censer) versus <u>Shen Wei</u> (Ancestor Tablet)	379
Worship Units	383
Formal Religion	386
Religious Specialists	386
A Fire Purification Ceremony	391
Summary	407
 CHAPTER VIII: THE LIFE CYCLE	411
The Desire for Children	413
Pregnancy and Birth	416
Babies	424
Children	426
Education	428
Young Adults	432
Marriage	435
Married Life	442
Sex	445
Birthdays	448
Death and Beyond	455
 CHAPTER IX: CYCLES IN TIME	459
The Sixty Year Cycle (Chia Tzu)	461
Calendars	465
The Yearly Religious Cycle	466
The Monthly Religious Cycle	475
The Weekly Cycle	477
The Function of Religious Holidays	479
The Yearly Work Cycle	483
The Daily Cycle	486
 CHAPTER X: SUMMARY AND CONCLUSIONS	495
Traditional Accounts of the Position of Women	495
The Contrasting Position of Women in Sanlei Ts'un	501
Conclusions and Suggestions for Further Research	524

4:Barnett E-4.5 (1965-1967) 1970 AD5 Taiwan Hokkien AD5
Sanlei Ts'un

OOO NOTES	535
BIBLIOGRAPHY	543
GLOSSARY A: PROPER PLACE NAMES	558
GLOSSARY B: CHINESE TERMS AND SHORT PHRASES	559
GLOSSARY C: CHINESE SENTENCES AND LONGER PHRASES	564

LIST OF TABLES

000 1	Taipei Climatic Averages for 56 Years . . .	47
2	Historical Demographic Rates for Taiwan . . .	70
3	Sanlei Land Types and Distribution . . .	108
4	Sex of Budget Manager by Household Type . . .	165
5	Financial Statement, Liao Mou-tu <u>Chia</u> . . .	170
6	Summary of Household Types in Sanlei Village . . .	232
7	Historical Changes in Average Family Size in Taiwan	234
8	Distribution of Surnames in Sanlei . . .	241
9	Adopted Daughter Types in Sanlei Ts'un . . .	271
10	Birth Order of Adopted-in Female Residents . . .	273
11	Percentage of Sanlei Villagers who Graduated . . .	412

LIST OF FIGURES

0001	Map of Taiwan: Locating Sanlei Village . . .	41
2	Map of Sanlei Ts'un (Village) . . .	45
3	Population Pyramid Sanlei Village, 1966 . . .	65
4	Typical Sanlei House Plan with Furnishings . .	89
5	Kinship Diagram, Liao Mou-tu <u>Chia</u> . . .	231
6	Kinship Diagram, Chiu Yung-man <u>Chia</u> . . .	237
7	Kinship Diagram, Liao Chi-cheng <u>Chia</u> . . .	256
8	Kinship Diagram, Huang Wen-sheng <u>Chia</u> . . .	277
9	Kinship Diagram, Patrilineal Descent Group . .	283
10	Relations Between Parents and Child's Spouse by Sex	289
11	Samples of Family Life Cycle Stages in Sanlei . .	292
12	Kinship and Dwelling Diagram, Liao Chin-I . . .	306

LIST OF SYMBOLS

128
601



Male



Female



Deceased
Male



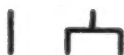
Deceased
Female



Marriage



Divorce



Descent



Adoption



Departed via
Migration or
Adoption



Adopted
Daughter
Marriage
(Siaosiv)



Adopted-in
Husband
Marriage
(Chao fu)

PREFACE

128 As is customary in anthropological reporting, fictitious names have been employed in order to protect the subjects from ready identification. Additionally, although the names of large cities and towns are correct, the names of all small communities including the subject village (ts'un) are disguised.

632 The subject village is one of five villages which are united to form a single li, a Chinese administrative unit for which there is no English equivalent. Roughly, it may be defined as the smallest political unit which possesses both an elected head and an elected representative to the next higher administrative level. For the sake of simplicity, Talei or Talei Li will be used to refer to this li although in proper Chinese, it would be Ta Lei Li (Big Port Li).

128 In accordance with a common Chinese pattern, I have
104 derived names of the five villages in Talei Li from the li name. The five villages are numbered in ascending order from north to south and the number is then combined with the second character of the li name to yield respective village names of T'oulei, Erhlei, Sanlei, Szulei, and Wulei. In proper Chinese, all five would match the pattern which is

128 indicated for the subject village of the study: San Lei
104 Ts'un (Third Port Village). Both Sanlei and Sanlei Ts'un
are used interchangeably.

128 In addition, the names of all village residents are
pseudonyms. Since each name represents a real person
rather than a composite or statistical average, an assigned
name is used consistently throughout the report with
reference to any real named individual. Consequently, any
material which might be considered injurious or which could
prove embarrassing is not identified with any of the named
individuals.

104 In accordance with several previous anthropological
128 reports pertaining to Taiwan, Mandarin has been employed
for all native terms romanized according to the Wade-Giles
[197] system. This was accomplished in spite of the fact that
the normal mode of discourse in the subject village as in
the majority of Taiwanese villages is in Min-nan Hwa
(Taiwanese). Taiwanese terms for which there are no
Mandarin equivalent are romanized according to the Douglas
system. Three glossaries are provided: Glossary A con-
sists of proper place names in Mandarin and characters.
Since the names are in common use in literature and for
postal addresses, no Taiwanese equivalent is provided.
Glossary B consists of words and short phrases in Mandarin,
Taiwanese, English, and characters arranged alphabetically
according to the romanized Mandarin. Glossary C includes
characters and English for the longer phrases and sentences.

436

Monetary amounts ordinarily express the local currency system which is often identified in the literature as N.T. (New Taiwanese). Thus, \$1.00 signifies one New Taiwanese dollar. When it is necessary to list an American equivalent, "U.S." is suffixed to the figure. At the time of the study, \$ 40.00 was equal to \$ 1.00 (U.S.) at the official rate of exchange and the unofficial rate on the black market was nearly identical.

804

There are two units of measure commonly employed in rural Taiwan and which appear frequently in this account. The measure of the land area is the chia, equal to about 2.39 acres and the measure of weight is the chin, equal to about one and one-third pounds.

CHAPTER I

PROBLEM AND APPROACH

Overview of the Theoretical Problem

121 In a field study, I found that the actual role of
562 women in contemporary rural Taiwanese society was significantly different from my expectations which were based on an analysis of the traditional literature.¹ In brief, the structural position of women was not inferior to the position of men to the degree expected. Although part of the differences between the observed and predicted patterns was due to socio-cultural change and regional variation, a significant portion is due to errors in abstraction by former reporters. The theoretical problem for this study is the delineation of the inconsistencies and an explanation of the reasons for the errors.

121 One of the foundations of the anthropological approach to research is involvement in a culture foreign to that of the investigator. This requirement is based on the belief that a minimum level of dissimilarity is necessary for both objectivity and awareness. That is, it is necessary that behavior be sufficiently different from that normally encountered by the investigator so that

12) assumptions about human nature are called into question.

It will be demonstrated that this ideal approach is not realized in some kinds of societies.

In the early history of anthropology, most research focused on primitive or tribal groups. Commencing in the nineteen-thirties, anthropologists were led by Redfield (1930), Pei (1939), and Embree (1939) to the study of major civilizations, particularly peasant societies. As Geertz has written, "The peasant is an immemorial figure on the world social landscape but anthropology noticed him only recently" (1962:1). The interest in peasants gradually increased, particularly in the last twenty years. Foster argues that problems of peasantry now occupy the attention of more anthropologists than any other (1967a:2).

There is a qualitative difference between peasant societies and primitive societies which has not been sufficiently considered: the possession of a "Great Tradition" which is clearly expressed in a literary record. There has been some research with regard to the degree which the "Little Tradition" of a local community expresses the "Great Tradition" of the society in which it is embedded.² Yet, what is often seemingly overlooked is that the "Great Tradition" and the literary record usually concern only the elite classes in a society, the bearers of the "Great Tradition." The existence of a record of this

12 | type has important implications for anthropological research.

An anthropologist prepares to study a great civilization by reading as much of its record as possible including the great novels, poetry, songs, history, philosophy, and the like. This is inevitably accomplished even though a small rural community research project is planned. It was suggested by implication in the above paragraph that the relationship between the "Great Tradition" expressed in this literature and the "Little Tradition" to be discovered in the village is problematical. It is possible that the study of the "Great Tradition" may create a bias in the observer which psychologists refer to as creation of a "psychological set." Kendler (1968:319-20), for example, argues that once the subject has internalized one set of concepts or responses, it is extremely difficult for him to learn to reverse his knowledge. In simple terms, it is implied that the investigator will discover exactly what he expects to discover. He may make good observations in the field. Nevertheless, his conclusions are likely to be consistent with the knowledge he derived from his preparations before going to the field. Two cases will illustrate this problem.

For the first, both the "Great Tradition" of China and the anthropological reports agree that the dominant residence pattern in China is patrilocal. A recent

12] description of a Taiwanese village concluded that its dominant residence pattern was patrilocal (Johnson, 1966). Dominant was employed in a statistical sense, i.e., most common. However, in the same paper, detailed data were [59] provided describing each marriage. My computations which were solely based on the listed data revealed that 31% of the residences after marriage were patrilocal and 33%, neolocal. Therefore, the author's abstraction that patrilocal residence is dominant is not supported by his own data. This is not a deliberate falsification for it is highly probable that the villagers would also agree with the investigator's contention that most brides join their husbands at his father's house.

The second example is similar. At a meeting in Taipei, I heard a sociologist's description of a typical³ Chinese wedding on Taiwan replete with the bride's red dress and sedan chair which closely matched traditional accounts. The use of the term typical implies that the [58] described pattern was most frequent. In my own village, [17] a Western-style white wedding gown rather than a red chi pao (tight-collared slit-sided Chinese dress) was usual and at the only wedding where the bride wore a red dress, my Chinese assistant was very excited by the fact that the bride was not wearing what he called the "traditional white gown." Therefore, after the paper was concluded I questioned the author informally. In his village, he had

[2] observed fifteen weddings; two brides wore a red dress and thirteen, a white gown. He concluded that there were two typical weddings and thirteen exceptions. His summary is a good illustration of the argument--his data were good, furnished without hesitation in spite of the fact the data did not support his abstraction. His abstraction was consistent with the "Great Tradition" which I argue creates a personal bias difficult for the investigator to overcome. He, for example, displayed no anxiety when I confronted him with the fact that his "typical" wedding should reflect the white gown worn in 13 cases rather than the red dress worn in two.

The kind of preparation described above for study in a civilization contrasts significantly with that by an anthropologist planning a tribal study. He too reads all that is available but most of what he reads are observational reports rather than a body of indigenous literature. He probably still brings to his study his own biases for after all, "No man looks at the world with pristine eyes" (Benedict, 1935:4). However, the biases were derived from a cultural background distinct from the focus of the field study.

It is probable that the anthropologist interested in one of the great civilizations brings to the field not only the biases derived from his own culture but biases from the culture in which he plans to conduct research.

- 121 Also note that this second type of bias is derived from a subculture of the elite classes rather than from the peasant masses. It is probably significant that many anthropologists who study China are known as "Sinologists" but there is no equivalent term for those who study the Zuni or the Nuba.

However, once a bias derived from the "Great Tradition" is overcome and reported in the literature, other investigators soon discover the fact in their own research. This does not imply that there is any falsification; rather, that once the importance of some social fact is drawn to the attention of the investigator, he looks at its implications for his own research. This latter belief is supported by the fact that when ethnographies written before its recognition are re-examined, they often provide support for the new discovery through concrete details although the original author may have reached the opposite conclusion.

- 121 Let me illustrate with the case of the Chinese
59 family. Almost all early descriptions of the Chinese family emphasized its nature as a large extended family unit. In a demographic survey of 2,866 farm families in China, Buck revealed that most of the families were nuclear and smaller than previously suggested (1930). However, Buck's report did not have much effect on the literature until discovered and reported with further data by

121 F. L. K. Hsu in an article entitled "The Myth of Chinese
59 Family Size" (1943). Subsequent to Hsu's article, almost
every anthropologist-sinologist includes a section in any
article about the Chinese family that echoes this discovery
about the frequency of its small size (Lang, 1946; Lee,
1949; M. Levy, 1949; Gallin, 1966). However, one still
finds many new articles on the Chinese family by others
more removed from the mainstream of the sub-discipline
which are either citing earlier literature or are citing
quotes of quotes which still describe the Chinese family
system as if the extended family were the norm. Before
Hsu's article (1943), Fei had written (1939:27) that "the
basic social group in the village is the chia, an expanded
family." However, a careful examination of his data re-
veals that in his village the large family was rare. He
calls it "curious" that "in less than ten percent of the
total number of Chia [sic] do we find more than one mar-
ried couple" (1939:28). In summary, Fei does furnish data
which support the arguments for the high frequency of the
small family size although he concludes the opposite.

121 For another illustration, consider the only re-
602 cently realized importance of the role of affinal rela-
tives in the Chinese kinship system first recognized by
Gallin (1960). Gallin's report stressed their importance
at the level of the peasant sector of the society as well
as the elite. Affinal relatives in China, in spite of a

12] supposed overwhelming emphasis on patrilineality, have
602 been "discovered" to be important in economic and political spheres as well as in such other spheres as marriage, funerals, education, certain birthdays, childbirth, etc. Subsequent reports take Gallin's discovery into account. For example, A. P. Wolf (1968) stressed the importance of the need to establish a network of affinal relations as one factor promoting traditional marriage forms in a Taiwanese peasant village.

As suggested previously, the re-examination of earlier reports also reveals clues to the importance of affinal relatives. The partnership which dominates Lin Yueh-hwa's study of Chinese familism (1947) consisted of a pair of affinal relatives. Although Fei placed great emphasis on agnates, he does indicate some significance for affinal extensions (1939:86-7). Finally, Freedman concludes (1957:225-31) that the kinship system in Singapore does not place an emphasis "on the groupings of people into agnatic groups" which is found in Fukien and Kwangtung. The importance of affinal relatives is one of
12] the factors negating this expected emphasis. Because his conclusions which were based on observation are different than his expectations which were based on the literature, he considers Singapore to be deviant (1957:225). In the terms of the concept previously delineated, it may well be the case that if he were to make observations in Fukien and Kwangtung, he might also conclude that they too were

- 12] deviant from the model he furnishes for them, a model which he derived from the traditional literature.

I wish to strongly emphasize that careful analysis of earlier reports usually reveals support for each of these new discoveries in spite of the fact they were contrary to conventional literature and the "Great Tradition." It is discovered that the old data lends itself to a fresh interpretation in light of the new discovery. The original interpretation was incorrect or perhaps, neglected certain key aspects.

The above kinds of errors are now less likely to eventuate. Probably to a greater degree than ever before in the history of anthropology, there is an emphasis on science and a scientific approach. It is my belief that observations today include a greater amount of factual detail such as enumeration of examples than previously. Moreover, extended case studies provide detailed data previously available only to the original observer. There is correspondingly less emphasis on impressions. It is felt that this newer approach will help overcome the errors in previous ethnographies.

Attention is also being focused on research methodology. In a recent introduction to a work on methods, Epstein remarked on the "curious dearth of publications devoted specifically to the problems of fieldwork" (1967: vii). Malinowski has been held up as an excellent observer

12| worthy of emulation by most of my generation of anthropologists and those of one generation earlier. Yet, there are now second thoughts with regard to his reports. He was a romantic, reporting on what the society was like in the past and not on what he really observed. Where were the western soldiers, traders, trading posts, etc.? Mair (1969:135) claims that although Malinowski taught us "to look at society 'as a going concern,' what he described in the Trobriand Islands was 'the going concern' as it must have been just before a Colonial ruler began to interfere with it." A romantic ideal and glorification of the past has often been a part of anthropology. An indication of this previous emphasis may be found in the frequent use of the term the "ethnographic present" rather than the "past."

In this dissertation I plan to explore one of the kinds of error previously described. Given the current state of awareness about the small size of the Chinese family, it is time for a detailed re-examination of consequent differences in its internal roles and role relationships. By means of a community case study, I focus on the role of women in rural Chinese society and how the role differs from that reported in the traditional accounts. In addition to the particular case study, traditional literature will be re-examined for supporting evidence in spite of the original author's own abstractions and conclusions.

- 121 Finally, implications for anthropological research in great civilizations will be considered.

Discovery and Evolution of the Specific Problem

Before going to the field, I had no plan to focus on the role of women. I intended a standard descriptive ethnography with problem interests in culture change and the computer simulation of decision-making behavior. Since the specific concern with female roles appears to represent a radical change, I shall briefly discuss the development of my interest.

- 122 My preparations for field work were typical for anthropology students of Chinese society. They included an appropriate mastery of anthropological theory and methods plus a good background in anthropological sources pertaining to China. Additionally, I gained a basic familiarity with materials on China from other disciplines such as history, philosophy, literature, religion, and art. Although I attempted to approach the field in an open-minded manner, I had internalized a set of expectancies for behavior against which my observations could be compared. The observed behavior of women deviated most strikingly from what I expected.

- 121 The status of women in China is traditionally pre-
562 sented as structurally inferior to the status of men. The differences in status are not minor. In order to strengthen the case for the lowly position of women in China,

12] several sources (Lang, 1946:42; Bloodworth, 1966:71) echo
562 the words of the third century B.C. poet Fu Hsuan (Waley,
1941:72), "How sad it is to be a woman! Nothing on earth
is held so cheap." Parsons argues that female subordina-
tion is an adaptive structure, necessary for maintaining
continuity in Chinese society (1951:196). In one of the
most complete accounts of the position of women, based
both on interviews and a thorough review of the litera-
ture, Olga Lang concludes "man's supremacy in society and
family became complete" (1946:42). She further describes
the expected virtues of women as "obedience, timidity,
reticence, and adaptability" (1946:43). Fairbank adds
that women were dominated by men and greatly inferior.
A behavior pattern of obedience and passivity was expected
of women. He further claims that although there were
forceful women, they controlled by indirection, not by
fiat (1948:28-42). Although greater detail is provided
in the last chapter of my account, the sources are in
overwhelming agreement with this brief description.

My early observations of female behavior were not
consistent with impressions deriving from this literature.

[12] The first few weeks in Taiwan were devoted to locating a
research site, advanced language training, acquiring and
furnishing a house, and hiring and training assistants and
an amah. We traveled in the big cities of Taipei and
Taichung, their suburban towns, and the surrounding country-
side. We often found women to be domineering and verbally

12) abusive or authoritarian in their relations with men. It
562 is nearly impossible to spend more than five minutes in
a busy market without hearing a woman arguing with a man
and even berating him loudly. My wife was taught certain
curses, to be addressed only to males such as a salesman
or taxi driver. If the curses would not make a taxi
driver operate his vehicle at a slower rate, she was told
to hit him. We observed women hitting men with their um-
brellas on at least five occasions although in only two
of these cases did we collect data other than the obser-
vation. In one, a woman hit her husband because he had
spent too much money drinking in the afternoon, apparently
a frequent occurrence. In the other, a woman hit a pedi-
cab driver whom she had not seen prior to that day in a
dispute over a fare. When asked if she feared physical
retaliation, she said that men seldom returned women's
blows.

As we established intimate friendships in the
cities and became intensively involved in the villages we
studied, we continued to find that the behavior of women
was consistent with our initial observations rather than
the literature. For example, women were the most out-
spoken--men seldom raised their voices or verbally abused
women; women frequently screamed at men, relatives and
strangers alike. In the homes, women often controlled the
family budget. I never saw a woman locked out of her

121 house overnight for misbehavior but on five occasions in
562 the village during our residence, men slept all night on
the ground because their wives had locked them out after
they had come home too late or had spent too much money at
a drinking party. One cold wet night I wanted to let a
locked-out man sleep on my kitchen floor. My assistant,
an educated Taiwanese, argued that it would not be best
because the wife would get very angry and make trouble
for us in the village. Our discussion was academic for
the man was too afraid not to stay out. He said that his
wife wanted him to stay out; he had done wrong, and if he
came into our house for the night, his wife would not be
satisfied and would only cause him more trouble.

[437] Almost everyone agreed that women could bargain
better than men and obtain lower prices. For example, the
[494] fare from town to my village was \$24.00 to \$26.00 on the
[435] taxi meter. It was extremely easy to negotiate a flat
price of \$20.00 and men who bargained hard could lower
this to \$18.00. However, women could get the price down
to \$16.00. No man could get the price this low and if a
man began to get into a cab after a woman had negotiated
a \$16.00 price, the driver would refuse to transport him.
Most village men attributed their family's ability to save
to the dominance and thriftiness of women.

The longer we stayed in the village, the greater
the accumulation of data which supported the discrepancy

121 between observed and expected female behavior. After my
562 return to Michigan State University, I carefully reviewed
the traditional literature in the light of this apparent
discovery. There were many clues suggesting that the
previous case had been overstated. There were a few exam-
ples of others who had already made the identical discov-
ery, the earliest in the report of Yosaburo Takekoshi
which was based on an extensive tour of Taiwan early in
the period of the Japanese occupation. He illustrates
this contrast between preparation and observation sug-
gested previously in a single sentence:

I had heard that the women of China were
previously [sic] oppressed, and I expected to
find it the same in Formosa, but, after carefully
investigating the facts, I have come to the con-
clusion that Formosan women enjoy more freedom
in many respects than is allowed to their sisters
in China (1907:310).

121 My discussion and interpretation of female behavior
183 are disturbing to some educated Chinese for they too are
562 enculturated in terms of their own "Great Tradition."

Chinese friends who have read some of the following chap-
ters argue that too much emphasis has been placed on the
exceptions instead of on the actual traditional patterns.
At a party one night, nine Chinese student friends stated
that men usually controlled all the money in a Chinese
household. However, in answer to my direct question about
their own households, only two stated that their fathers
controlled the money and the other seven, their mothers.

121 After a few minutes of discussion, eight of the nine stu-
183 dents agreed that the fathers were proper and standard and
562 the seven female examples in their respective homes were
all exceptions. One student felt he needed further data.
The facts in the example support my argument; the stu-
dents' beliefs do not. The contrast between the facts
and beliefs suggests the strong influence of the "Great
Tradition" on individual members of a society. The nine
students were actually surprised by the extent of female
influence in their collective homes. Those in homes where
mother was in control were somewhat surprised to find so
many others in like positions. A. P. Wolf reports a
similar kind of discrepancy between the "case enumeration
summary" and the "villager's general summary" with regard
to the frequency of marriage types in a Taiwanese village
(1968).

[2] A mechanism for the causes of incomplete obser-
vations and conclusions has been suggested, the previous
internalization of a "Great Tradition." Cognitive dis-
sonance theory (Festinger, 1957) helps explain the persis-
tence of the belief in the face of contrary evidence. Cog-
nitive dissonance theory states that when we obtain infor-
mation which is inconsistent with our current beliefs, we
are in a conflict situation. The conflict may be resolved
by "denying" the new information or by changing the belief
(Heiss, 1968:10). The examples previously listed

H
12/ illustrate both of these possibilities. It appears that the normal tendency is to "deny" the conflicting interpretation. When one individual does make a breakthrough and changes his belief, it is easy for others to follow suit, assuming the new belief is supported by the evidence. It is much easier to join at least one partner in opposition to the opinion of a group than to stand alone (Asch, 1955:35).

Taiwan as a Research Site

T
H
12/ Most sinologists are extremely frustrated by the fact that they are not permitted to conduct research in Mainland China, primarily because of their inability to obtain the permission of the Communist government. This problem is particularly acute for anthropologists because of their research orientation which favors an intensive study of a single community by means of participant observation. A number of approaches have been employed in an attempt to overcome the frustration.

There have been studies of Chinese culture by means of documents at a distance (Freedman, 1958; 1966). There have been a few community studies in Mainland China but these are of questionable reliability due to the lack of the professional qualifications of the investigator (J. T. Myrdal, 1965), the personal ideologies of the investigators (Crook and Crook, 1959; 1966), or the extremely

T
H
121

short period allowed for the investigation (Geddes, 1963).

The most common approach has been to study a Chinese community outside of mainland China. Sometimes the communities function as sub-cultures in very different societies such as Indonesia (Tan, 1963) or Thailand (Coughlin, 1960; Skinner, 1957). In other cases, the communities are in areas of mixed political history and domination but which appear to have significant Chinese characteristics: Singapore (Freedman, 1957; Elliott, 1955), Hong Kong (Ward, 1954; Potter, 1968; Baker, 1968), or especially Taiwan (Gallin, 1966; Cohen, 1969; Wolf, 1968; Pasternak, 1969; Diamond, 1969).

All of the above communities have been strongly affected by foreign influences. This does not imply that mainland China has not been influenced; rather, extreme caution must be exercised in any attempt to generalize from the research site to mainland China for the extent of foreign influences are significantly different, both in quantity and quality.

T
H
121
T
[197]
[81]

There are good reasons why Taiwan is the most popular of these research locations. It is inhabited by Chinese people living in a Chinese cultural context under a Chinese government. The only official language is Mandarin Chinese. Six years of education are compulsory, nine years since 1968, and only in officially accredited government schools.

T
H
121 However, Taiwan has serious drawbacks. Fried be-
T
648 lieves the relatively shallow period of Chinese residence
17 is the most serious of these (1966:285). Also, Taiwan
was occupied by the Japanese for a fifty year period, a
situation not dissimilar to the American occupation of the
Philippines. Although Japanese immigration never reached
high levels, contacts with mainland China during this
period were nearly as restricted as they have been during
the last twenty years. For the most part, there were only
minor efforts expended to Japanize the island and these
occurred primarily in the last portion of the period of
occupation, since the nineteen-thirties, as part of the
war effort. However, the degree of Japanization was quite
unevenly applied, strongest in the urban and suburban
areas of large cities. A successful individual had to
become quite Japanese for education was in the Japanese
language in a Japanese school system. During the fifty
years, officialdom was Japanese or at the very least,
Japanese-oriented.

T
648 Aside from the short period between the restoration
[175] in 1945 and the Communist conquest of the mainland in
1949, contact with the mainstream of Chinese culture has
T
162 been almost completely curtailed. There were large num-
[167] bers of people who migrated permanently from the mainland
to Taiwan during that short period of four years. These
migrants and their descendants are known as "Mainlanders"

T
162 and are contrasted with the "Taiwanese," those Chinese who were residents or descendants of residents before establishment of the Japanese suzerainty.

T
162 In 1945, the population of Taiwan was about
563 6,560,000 (Hsieh, 1964:212). During the next four years
T about 400,000 Japanese returned home and 100,000 Taiwan-
167 ese came back from Japan (Hsieh, 1964:185). The net loss was offset by the migrants from the mainland which included 600,000 military personnel plus civilians conservatively estimated at a half-million and perhaps twice that (Fried, 1966:288). Most estimates today state Mainlanders constitute nearly 15 per cent of the population but some estimates range as high as 25 per cent (Latour-ette, 1964:42). Instead of a random sample of mainland population, the Mainlanders consisted of two rather distinct groups: a military one, not wealthy, most without dependents, and an urbanized Westernized set of business men, government officials, and professionals with their families. In either case, they tended to settle in urban areas.

T
563 Mainlanders and Taiwanese are not yet amalgamated
T and relations between them are often strained. Fried
H states that:
648

The Nationalist government actively seeks to build an image of present-day Taiwan that features peaceful, pleasant accommodation as the mode of interaction between Taiwanese and Mainlanders. There is ample evidence . . . that the

T
563 picture thus presented falls short of the
reality--although overt antigovernment activity
is subdued to the point that casual observers
may be led to believe it nonexistent (1966:296).

T
H
648 This is a reasonable estimate of the situation. Many
Taiwanese villagers I chatted with in several places on
the island feel that they and the Mainlanders are dif-
ferent. They would generally be pleased to maintain the
present level of social distance.⁴ It appears that the
government program of indoctrination and education in a
common single language plus the effects of social inter-
action and intermarriage are reducing the extent of so-
cial distance.

T
171 Unlike Taiwan, mainland China is largely cut off
177 from the remainder of the world. Her leaders have had
648 little experience outside China. Few foreigners are per-
mitted to reside in China or visit as tourists and even
then, the movements of foreigners are greatly restricted.
In contrast, Taiwan has a large resident foreign popula-
tion, primarily American Military personnel, their depen-
dents, and supporting organizations. Moreover, Taiwan
is a major "Rest and Recreation" center for American
troops from Vietnam, 40,000 per year, and is fast becom-
ing a major tourist attraction, particularly for the
Japanese. Most foreigners live in the large cities and
T
[262] their suburbs, particularly Taipei. English language
signs abound and canned and dry Western foods are to be
found in almost every grocery store even in remote

P
171 villages. Other Western goods may be purchased in the
177 cities and towns. Movie houses all over Taiwan frequently
648 run American movies, usually with Chinese subtitles. On
262 television in rural villages, a favorite show was the
American program "Combat" with Chinese subtitles. In
these kinds of contacts and in the extent and depth of
their influences, there are significant differences be-
tween Taiwan and the Mainland.

T
171 Finally, economic conditions are significantly
T different from those found on the Mainland. Taiwan has
[511] a relatively high standard of living as compared with the
T bulk of Asia. There is more industry, better educational
[433] opportunities, better transportation systems and better
[165] health care accompanied by lower mortality rates and
longer life expectancy.

T
H
121 In spite of these problems, as previously argued,
T Taiwan remains the best site outside of the Mainland for
121 research into Chinese culture. As claimed by Freedman,
"Taiwan is China--that at least is not in dispute . . ."
(1963:4). Even if it is eventually realized that research
on Taiwan is not directly relevant to the processes of
the mainstream of Chinese history, it is an excellent re-
search site on its own terms, an example of a developing
peasant society, a former colony, rapidly undergoing
transformation and entering the mainstream of world change
towards development of a modernized industrialized nation.

121 Constraints on the Selection of a Research Site

My original goal was to prepare a standard ethnography of a Taiwanese village. Ethnographic data normally may be used in a number of ways to further achievement of a number of goals. Some of these uses are planned and explicit; others are generated out of the field experience; and still others are not realized until later, after analysis by the original investigator or others. The latter use is especially dependent on the comprehensiveness of the original data. Every ethnography is necessarily highly selective. Out of a huge mass of behavior, the ethnographer abstracts selected aspects which he believes to be relevant in terms of his theoretical orientation or which bear on the problems under investigation. Since I originally had three major problems under consideration, they will be discussed briefly below because they affected the quality and quantity of the data and were important considerations in selection of the research site.

For the first, I am cooperating with my major professor, Dr. Bernard Gallin, senior investigator in a study of rural-to-urban migration and urban influences on rural village life, especially as the city becomes a stimulus for change. This research is primarily related to Taiwan but eventually may be extended to include other peasant societies. The first village studied for this purpose

121 (Gallin, 1966) was located many miles from a large city and required several hours travel to reach by local transportation.

To contrast with the kind of location studied by Gallin, it was desired to select a village which would be within commuting distance of a large city such that village residents could travel daily to work. Yet, to control as many other relevant factors as possible, it was necessary that village residents be descendants of Hokkien families who had migrated from Fukien at least one hundred years previously, whose primary occupations were in agriculture, and who possessed a clear identity as a community. In addition to the constraints on site selection, this cooperation in a study of rural-urban factors necessitated the collection of data comparable to that acquired in the original study conducted in 1957-58 (Gallin, 1966) as well as his follow-up study in 1965-66. The latter required duplication of one questionnaire administered to a sample of the villagers and another, to a sample of villagers who had migrated to the city of Taipei.

The second problem interest was due to the stimulation of Dr. John Gullahorn. I have a major interest in the computer simulation of human social behavior with a long-term goal of the eventual use of the data to build a computer model of the village which would simulate human

[2] decision-making processes. Dr. Gullahorn's original simulation model involved a small number of people, three, who were artificial, and with considerable detail for each one (Gullahorn and Gullahorn, 1963; 1964). In complementary fashion, my intended simulation would involve more people, real rather than artificial constructions, and fewer details for each individual. This second problem interest necessitated selection of a fairly small village of manageable proportions, and the acquisition of a considerable amount of detail regarding every individual villager. Finally, to simplify the simulation, a relatively fixed structure and process would be an ideal. The fewer the changes that had occurred over the past fifty years, the better.

Finally, I and my wife, also a graduate student in anthropology, were both in the field at the same time and for the same general purpose, to conduct research on which to base our dissertations. The process required two independent community studies. However, since we were both interested in cultural and social change, it was possible to select sites which would maximize possibilities for understanding the processes of change. We decided to select two villages that represented relative extremes on a modern-to-traditional continuum. However, the two communities would be selected so that they would be nearly identical for as many other factors as possible: size,

12) age, ecological setting, etc., in order to allow for a "controlled comparison" (Eggan, 1954).

In order to meet the conditions imposed by the above three projects the object village would ideally have the following characteristics:

1. Population: 350 to 500
2. Reference Location to Large City: Daily commuting distance
3. Age: 100 to 250 years
4. Primary Occupational Structure: Agricultural
5. Primary Language: Taiwanese (Min-nan hua)
6. Place of Origin of Original Settlers: Fukien
7. Orientation: Traditional
8. Neighboring Village: Paired with one which shares a nearly identical ecological setting and as many of the other characteristics listed above as possible except that it should be relatively modern rather than traditional.

Except for the terms traditional and modern, all the above items were relatively easy to operationalize. Traditional is employed in the sense of emphasizing notions of continuity and stability (Sampson, 1964:723) and modern is its opposite, emphasizing change although no value judgment is intended. These terms are "ideal types" in a logical sense which provide limiting cases at each end of a continuum (Lockwood, 1964:312). No community fits at any one location on the continuum in every aspect, i.e., the more modern community with regard to most traits may be more traditional with regard to others, but two locations, in

121 general, may be relatively close or relatively distant to
each other on the continuum. Traditional should also not
imply stagnation for no village we visited in Taiwan was
not extensively changed during the past twenty-five years.
Easily contrasted factors distinguishing traditional from
modern included housing types, extensiveness of material
goods such as television sets, motorcycles, and sewing
machines, changes in occupational structure, average level
of formal education, and types of health practices. The
traditional village was one which had changed relatively
little in the last twenty-five years; the modern village
was one which had changed considerably. I will illus-
121 trate with one concrete example. In the traditional vil-
123 lage, mid-wives attended at births which have usually
944 been in the home; in the modern village, most women went
by bus to a Western-style clinic in town which was staffed
with doctors, mid-wives and nurses.

121 Personal factors not directly relevant to the re-
search design also influenced selection of the village:
we would have to be accepted and locate housing. These
two conditions did not prove to be problems since every
site that approached reasonable congruence with the other
above requirements would have seemingly made out entry
easy.

122 Finally, I traveled with my family which included
two school-age children. Since we planned on a residence

122 of eighteen months, it was necessary that we locate within reasonable commuting distance of an American school. This requirement restricted the locations to the countryside surrounding the large cities of Taipei and Taichung, each of which possessed an appropriate school.

Selection of the Subject Village

121 Due to the difficult terrain and state of the roads
122 and transportation facilities in the main possible locations, investigation revealed that distances should be specified in terms of travel-time rather than mileage. It was arbitrarily decided that a minimum of one-half hour travel-time probably separated village from city life. Maximally, as travel-time approached or exceeded one and one-half hours, it appeared unlikely that the village would contain any daily commuters. With the help of the J.C.R.R. (Joint Commission on Rural Reconstruction) a pair of irregular concentric lines were drawn on maps of the areas surrounding Taipei and Taichung delineating the requisite distances of one-half to one and one-half hours travel-time. Demographic and ecological characteristics of all villages bounded by the lines were analyzed in a preliminary fashion with officials of the J.C.R.R. and with Professor Chen Shao-hsing of the Sociology Department at National Taiwan University.

121 We also discussed potential sites with officials
122 in each township office and the local farmer's association
linked with villages within the specified areas although
at this period of first contact, our requirements were not
revealed to consultants in the detail listed above. We
then visited any villages within the area that remotely
approached the specifications. On all occasions, we were
accompanied by a minor official of the local farmers'
association. The latter individuals have comprehensive
knowledge of the local community and moreover, usually
have good relations with most villagers.

Some sites were discarded immediately for such obvious defects as size, too large or too small, or economy, i.e., a factory located within village limits. More promising ones received a visit with local officials, a walking tour through the village, and chats with several residents. Such investigations took from thirty minutes to an hour and a quarter with an average of about 45 minutes each. There was the inevitable cup of tea with the mayor or some other important resident. In these investigations, the farmers' association official was invaluable for almost everyone knew the representative by name and wanted to talk with him. These investigations took one to three days for each township area. After examining the data upon completing a township area, most sites were eliminated. Those villages which still seemed promising were

121 revisited for a period of three to five hours. Finally,
122 before going on to the next township, these latter sites were discussed again with senior officials who were familiar with demographic and economic details. Ten potential pairs of villages reached this level of analysis.

After completing the entire circuit surrounding Taipei and Taichung, more thorough analysis reduced the ten to a final three, one in the Taichung area and two in the Taipei area. Seven of the ten sites were eliminated solely because of the desire to minimize differences between the pairs of villages as discussed in connection with one research goal of a controlled comparison. For example, one village was considerably larger than the other; or one village was next to the river and the other was not.

We spent two full days in each of the remaining three pairs of villages. One of these was eliminated because it was too close to two communities in which many Americans resided and several of its residents were either working or had worked in American households as servants or gardeners. It was a "toss-up" between the final two. The one we selected saved a move of 100 miles and was nearest the school (1-1/2 hours) we thought best for our children.

121 All of this may falsely suggest that the community to be described in the following chapters is atypical for Taiwan. There were dozens of sites which satisfied all the specified requirements except the desire for a nearby sister village which would be identical in as many features as possible except the differences along a modern-to-traditional continuum. The presence of such a nearby village should have no effect on this current report which primarily focuses on the traditional village of the pair. Many other villages which would have served this last purpose equally well were located adjacent to even larger more sophisticated villages which contained factories and wine houses for example.

Research Methods

12 The standard methods of anthropological techniques were employed: participant-observation, mapping, census, interviews, etc. Although four key informants were developed and cultivated, at least four interviews were conducted with each adult resident of the village. Before departure, I knew and could recognize at a distance every adult and most of the children.

121 During the first nine months, we lived in the city
122 of Taipei and commuted to the village. We came at different times of the day and evening and remained for various periods of time. We often stayed overnight. I rented a room (occasionally sharing it with single young

121 men) in a village house for a month at a time, each month
122 a different house. In this room I conducted some inter-
views but primarily it was used for writing, organizing
data, rest, and sleeping. I also took most of my meals
with the household in which I had a room. This tech-
nique allowed me to become an intimate part, a boarder, in
several different households. People could be on their
best behavior for a few days, but it proved impossible to
act unnaturally for an entire month.

During the last eight months, we moved into one of
the two villages, Erhlei, in a household of our own.
Since the two villages had one common boundary, were both
located in the same li, and the village centers were sep-
arated only by the equivalent of one and a half city
blocks, the particular village location did not appear to
be important. We were quite surprised at the differences
resulting from our establishment of a residence in Talei
123 Li. We experienced a higher level of acceptance although
we felt we had already established excellent relations.
We were asked to serve in the Parent Teacher's Association
and were now taxed for school and temple affairs. Al-
though our children had visited the villages many times,
they quickly established their own network of friends and
associates and our son attended the local school one day
a week.

123 Full acceptance is never possible. An American of
609 European descent must accept the fact he will always be
considered a rich, highly educated, kao pi tsu (big nose
or Westerner). There are various clues to evaluate your
123 level of acceptance. Your relative status may be asses-
609 sed by where you are assigned to sit at a dinner in some-
584 one's house for locations at the table are ranked in order
584 of importance. At a big festival such as a wedding for
which there are many tables, relative importance is also
assigned to different tables. For example, although the
groom goes from table to table toasting the guests and
being toasted in turn, he starts with the most important
table and ends with the least. At the start of our
study, we were the most prestigious guests at every func-
tion, even ranking above the mayor of the large nearby
town of Hsin Tien. As time passed, we moved down the
tables in rank position, joining the richer villagers but
sitting below local village officials. At the last wed-
ding, my wife sat at the lowest ranking regular table in
the kitchen with the women in the immediate family since
one woman in the family was one of her closest friends in
the village and I sat at the third-ranking table with my
123 "sworn brothers." Three months before I left, I had
[573] achieved a high level of acceptance by becoming a member
of a chieh pai hauing ti⁵ (sworn brothers association).
[601] A final key may be found in the term of address which

123 changed from the inevitable Ba Syan Sheng (Mr. Barnett)
601 to a kinship term or A Wei (Intimate A plus my first name).

My wife was called A ku (FaSi) by most village children.

114 We employed a number of research assistants,
124 primarily relying on three, two male and one female. One
was well-trained and had had extensive experience with
other American scholars. The other two were young college
graduates, both with majors in agricultural economics and
rural sociology. All three were fluent in Mandarin,
Japanese, Taiwanese, and English. Additionally, each
had a warm pleasant personality and quickly became popular
with villagers. The three worked interchangeably with
myself and my wife in both villages. Sometimes they worked
alone and sometimes with one or the other of us or both.

124 In field work with an interpreter-assistant, there are
197 always problems in assuring faithful reproduction. No one
language was universal for all villagers although Taiwanese
approached it. Mandarin was a poor second. Constant re-
checking of data through repeated interviews with the same
informant and other informants with regard to the same
data is a necessary and regular part of anthropological
field research. By using different assistants for inter-
views regarding the same data with different informants,
one is also able to assess the accuracy and ability of the
122 assistant. We had studied Mandarin formally before leaving
the United States and continued formal study in Taipei.

122 Taiwanese was studied informally in the village. Our
limited command of the two languages also provided a means
of checking data.

124 Additionally, two villagers were employed, one
115 male and one female, both excellent in Taiwanese and reasonably fluent in Mandarin. The female was a young primary school graduate from Sanlei, primarily employed as household help. However, she was bright, active, sensitive, observant, privy to village gossip, the daughter of one of the informal village leaders, and proved most helpful. The boy was from Erhlei, a part-time farm laborer studying drafting nights and Saturdays in a Taipei technical high school. Villagers considered him a very good boy and he was very popular. He was first employed to make a village map of households and fields and detailed household plans. Since he had ready access to all village houses, he also made periodic inventories of possessions including the farm animals. He too became an excellent informant. Since both were bilingual in Mandarin and Taiwanese, they often proved useful as interpreters during our period of residence in the village. for only one of the regular assistants lived in the village. Our ability in Taiwanese never reached a level sufficient for serious interviews but we could use it for simple polite conversation. We both understood more than we could speak.

123 Finally, mention must be made of the fact that there were two anthropologists in the family, one male and one female. There are some situations in which a male has a significant advantage, and others, a female. For example, I had a distinct advantage with regard to men's drinking parties, dirty-story telling, sex life, etc. On the other hand, it proved exceedingly difficult for me to interview women under 30 on many subjects and with regard to sex, almost any female at an age under 70 was nearly impossible. Indeed, for an anthropological study of Chinese society, I believe a Western woman has an advantage. She is fully accepted as a woman by the women and simultaneously is almost accepted as a man by the men. Although we each studied separate villages, we inevitably participated in the affairs of both. Discussion of data and interpretations constantly stimulated and encouraged both of us for each could bring a fresh insight into the other's problems.

124 In addition to the usual techniques, there were
125 three special approaches. Because we eventually desired to compare the two villages, ten months after commencing field work, we jointly prepared an open-ended interview schedule which was independently administered to all adults in each of the two villages. An interview schedule prepared by Dr. Gallin was administered to a sample of village
124 residents. Finally, a number of interviews were conducted

124 with villagers who had migrated to the city of Taipei, about half during their visits to the village and half in their city homes.

121 Approach to the Problem

128 A key term necessarily employed frequently in this report is "role." Since the term often has been assigned a number of different meanings, I shall employ the following definition in an attempt to avoid confusion:

As an aspect of social structure, a role may be defined as a named social position characterized by a set of (a) personal qualities and (b) activities, the set being normatively evaluated to some degree both by those in the situation and others (Sweetser, 1964:609).

This definition does not maintain the distinction between status and role originated by Linton (1936:113-4) and expanded by others (Parsons, 1951:25; Radcliffe-Brown, 1952:11), i.e., status refers to the position and role to the behavior associated with it. Nadel's argument that it is pointless to separate a rule of behavior from its application is most convincing (1957:20-44) so I have combined status and role.

Roles do not exist in isolation. To identify a single role is always to identify by implication another role with which it is engaged in interaction patterns. For example, a teacher implies a student and a parent, a child. Merton proposes that role-set be used where a status entails more than one social relationship (1957:

12| 368-9). I include the concept of role-set in my defini-
128 tion of role for there would be few roles which would not
involve several social positions. A public school teacher
in American society necessarily relates to such positions
as student, colleague, and principal. She also probably
relates on a secondary level to parents, board members,
union officials, etc.

Since this study is of a small rural village, most
relationships are inclusive and serial, termed by Gluckman
"multiplex" (1964). By this he means that when two people
interact in a multiplex relationship, it is likely that a
large number of role relationships are involved. Although
roles are not synonymous with people, each person may be
examined analytically as if he were a bundle of roles.
The characteristics of the bundle effect role behavior as
does the personality of the individual. Part of the con-
cept of role includes the idea of a script for acting.
Some scripts are very explicit and others, quite general.
Each individual follows his script somewhat differently.
The major role I examine in the study is that of adult fe-
male. This role can be divided analytically into narrower
roles such as wife, mother, aunt, girl-friend, customer,
etc. The major relationship studied is between the adult
female and the adult male, the latter similarly suscep-
tible to finer distinctions. Abstraction at the highest
level, i.e., male-female relationships, is attempted

121 although detailed data at lower levels are provided.

128

The next eight chapters contain an ethnographic description of Sanlei, a village in Taiwan, with particular emphasis on the role of women. The last chapter presents the general abstraction discussed in the above paragraph and contrasts it with an abstraction from the traditional literature. Possible reasons for the discrepancy between the two abstractions are considered and rejected in favor of the theoretical position advanced at the beginning of this chapter, i.e., the presence of a "Great Tradition" and its effects on the anthropological field worker. Implications for future research are then considered and a series of suggestions for reducing future errors are advanced.

CHAPTER II

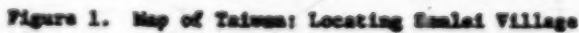
THE SETTING

Location and Physiography

131 The island of Taiwan (or Formosa) lies on an arc which is convex to the Asiatic mainland and is bisected by the Tropic of Cancer. At its closest point, Taiwan is 90 miles from the province of Fukien on the Chinese mainland and nearly equidistant between Shanghai and Hong Kong, each 400 miles distant (Cressey, 1964:174). Six hundred miles up the arc to the northeast through Okinawa is the Japanese island of Kyushu. Down the arc in the other direction is Luzon in the Philippines a distance of only 200 miles (Cressey, 1955:234). Taiwan is shaped roughly like a tobacco leaf, about 245 miles long and 90 miles wide at its widest point. Its coastline of 700 miles is exceptionally smooth and unindented (Tregear, 1965:304). With a total area of 13,800 square miles, it is about the size of Holland or Massachusetts (See Figure 1).

133 The island, for the most part, is very mountainous. There are thirty peaks exceeding 10,000 feet in elevation

[TEXT CONTINUED ON PAGE 42]



- 133 and land which is relatively flat totals only about fif-
134 teen per cent of the island (Crassey, 1964:177). The
soils are similar to those of south China, mature, leached,
acid, and in need of constant applications of lime and
fertiliser (Tregear, 1965:306). Because of the terrain,
scarcely more than one third of the land area is arable.
- 135 The mountains are forested with some minerals, chiefly
coal, found in the northern end of the island (Hsieh,
1964:109).
- 131 The village of Sanlei lies in the northern third of
Taiwan, about four miles south of Taipei, Taiwan's capital
and largest city with a 1965 population exceeding one and
494 a quarter million people. To travel to the village, one
first takes a highway bus to Hsin Tien, a town of over
10,000 people, 2-1/2 miles south of Taipei (See Figure 1).
- 632 The township office with hegemony over Sanlei is located
369 in Hsin Tien and the town has traditionally served as the
major market and political center for the nearby villages.
- 369 Because of the mountainous terrain, the extent of the
area is irregular but probably does not exceed a radius
of two miles at a maximum. In the direction of Taipei,
its influence extends less than half the distance between
[484] town and city. Hsin Tien is also a famous tourist mecca,
located next to Green Lake where boats may be rented.
- 491 Prior to the construction of a modern four-lane highway
496 in 1959, there was also a train from Taipei to Hsin Tien.

133 The Hsin Tien river runs through Hsin Tien on its way
past Taipei to its mouth at the northern end of the island.

491 From Hsin Tien to Sanlei, one must travel on a
494 small rickety local bus a distance of another 2-1/2 miles
on a road which meanders, generally in a southwest direc-
tion. About half way to the village the blacktop two-lane
road narrows to one lane. When two vehicles meet, there
is usually an argument about which one will back up to
one of the various wider places in the road to let the
153 other pass. There is a small creek which parallels the
road for most of the distance to Hsin Tien. About half-way
to the village, two lines of foothills can be seen in the
distance slowly converging on the road until they meet
491 rather abruptly at Wulei, two villages beyond Sanlei. In
494 Wulei, the road ends with a "turn around" where the bus
153 starts its trip back to Hsin Tien. In Sanlei, the foot-
hills are only about 200 yards apart but even then, the
narrow valley is terraced. At its lowest point, next to
the river, the village elevation is about forty feet with
the foothills rapidly rising to peaks with an elevation
of over 800 feet.

361 Settlements in the area are primarily nucleated, a
compact collection of houses surrounded by their fields
with only a few scattered individual households. The nu-
cleated settlements range in size from 8 or 10 houses to
large villages with over 200. The larger villages are all

- 44

361 near the road and stream while the smallest units are up
361 in the mountains. The bus stops at each village and also
494 at several places on the road where narrow paths lead to
other villages not on the road. The village centers are
not far apart, for the most part ranging from 200 to 350
yards.

Upon reaching Sanlei the bus stops just beyond the
center of the village in front of the temple (see Figure
2). It had stopped in the previous village of Erhlei
about 250 yards back and also at a spot about half way
between the two villages where a path leads up the moun-
tain to a small village. After leaving Sanlei, it is 300
yards to Szulei and another 250 yards to Wulei, the end of
the bus line.

494 The bus does not keep its schedule of nine trips
per day due to frequent breakdowns. Since it takes about
twelve minutes to go from Sanlei to the end of the line
and back, villagers rarely prepare to go to town until the
bus has passed. The twelve minutes between the time the
bus passes on its way to Wulei and its return in the direc-
tion of town are often witness to much confusion and
scrambling in the village by prospective passengers for
the bus driver rarely stops unless the passenger is at
the labeled bus stop.

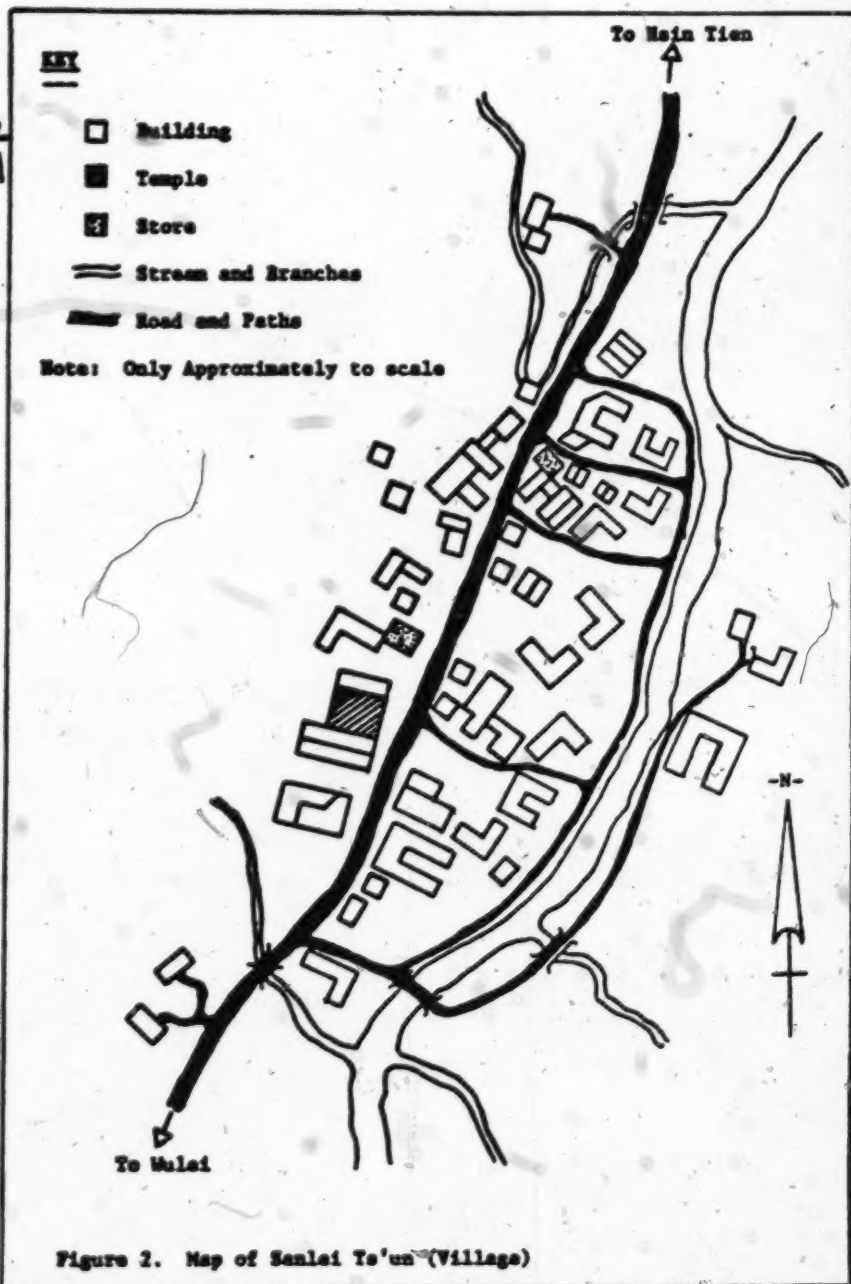
162 Sixty-six households containing 409 people comprise
[161] Sanlei village. Talei, the 11 of which Sanlei is a part,

[621]

(TEXT CONTINUED ON PAGE 46)

contains 248 households, about 1550 people.

102
361



000 contains 248 households, about 1550 people.¹ Sanlei vil-
361 lage is long and narrow. To the right is a single line of
houses following the road with the first and last two separated from the remaining houses which are very close together. On the left, the distance from the road to the creek ranges from 50 to 125 feet. The majority of village buildings are in this area, many fronting on the road, others on one of the five paths from road to creek, and the rest on the courtyard in front of the temple. Three buildings are located across the creek (see Figure 2).

Weather

132 Taiwan lies off the east coast of Asia athwart the Tropic of Cancer and is surrounded by warm ocean currents. The northern and summer monsoons influence the weather although all weather is conspicuously modified by Taiwan's rugged topography (Cressey, 1955:238). The north is subtropical and the south, tropical. In the north, winters are cold but rarely does the temperature extend below 40° F. Summers are long and hot, but the temperature reaches 95° F infrequently in the village. Most nights are cool due to the ever present winds. Humidity is nearly always high. Taiwan is in the prime typhoon belt and about three typhoons a year usually pass directly over some part of the island and many others pass nearby. Typhoons dump copious quantities of rain and the winds often cause extensive damages.

132 Village men agree that about once every three years, one crop is seriously reduced by typhoon damage.

Temperature and rainfall in the village are not too unlike those in Taipei although the village and Taipei are separated by the chain of foothills (see Table 1 for official Taipei records). Rain is fairly constant in the northern part of Taiwan. During the last twelve months of our stay, there was rain on 191 different days. Although the yearly mean for rain is 72.4 inches, the year with the least amount totaled only slightly less, 65.3 inches.

Table 1. Taipei Climatic Averages for 56 Years
(Taken from Huttonson, 1963:128)

<u>Month</u>	<u>Temperature High (Mean)</u>	<u>Inches of Rain</u>	<u>Per Cent Humidity</u>
January	59.3	3.1	83
February	58.9	5.2	85
March	62.8	7.0	84
April	69.2	6.8	83
May	75.9	8.7	82
June	79.9	11.2	82
July	82.6	7.5	79
August	82.4	9.3	79
September	79.8	6.4	80
October	73.9	3.1	80
November	68.5	1.9	80
December	62.4	2.3	82
Year	71.3	72.4	82

During the heaviest year, one with three typhoons in the northern area, rainfall reached 124.9 inches. Except when typhoons are nearby, rain is usually in the form of a drizzle. The average number of days with precipitation

132 is about 184.4 (Nuttanson, 1963:130). In the winter, it rains more frequently, a little nearly every day and we often experienced two or three consecutive weeks without seeing the sun. Although the total quantity of rain is highest during the summer months, much of the summer rain falls during heavier rainstorms.

Historical Setting--Taiwan

101

The prehistory of Taiwan extends several centuries into the past. The base of origin and the cultural backgrounds of the various groups which migrated to Taiwan are matters of some dispute (Farrell, 1964; K. C. Chang, 1956). The remaining descendants of the early settlers now number about 200,000 and still live in the mountains where they are classified as aborigines (Cressey, 1964:174-5). The aborigines are usually classified into seven tribes or three language families. The languages are related to various Southeast Asian languages and aboriginal languages in Okinawa and the Philippines (Farrell, 1964).

175

The existence of Taiwan appears and disappears in the historical record of the Chinese empire. Meaningful settlement did not begin until the 12th century and large numbers emigrated only after the start of the 17th century (Hsieh, 1964:149). During the 15th and 16th century, Taiwan was the home base for Chinese and Japanese pirates who attacked shipping in the South China Sea. The Dutch, Portuguese, and Spaniards vied for control of the island

175 in the 17th century but have left little long term effects.

A Ming general, Cheng Ch'eng-kung (Koxinga), fleeing the Manchus with his army wrested control from the Dutch and established an independent kingdom in 1661. The Chinese population of 100,000 grew rapidly during the next 200 years for Taiwan served both as a refuge and as a frontier area with undeveloped land attracting people from Fukien and Kwangtung. The island was incorporated as a fu (district) of Fukien in 1683 and as an independent province of China in 1886 (Davidson, 1903).

Its provincial status was short-lived for Taiwan was ceded to the Japanese at the conclusion of the Sino-Japanese war in 1895. Japan restricted further immigration into Taiwan from the Chinese Mainland and controlled the island until Restoration² to the Republic of China on October 25, 1945 (Hsieh, 1964:662-83). Under Japanese control there were great improvements in health, agriculture, transportation, and later, industrialization. In spite of many promotional efforts, Japanese immigration never reached high levels. After the Restoration, there was a short period of economic decline and subsequently, rapid advances in all the areas listed above. For example, between 1960 and 1966, the annual growth of the G.N.P. was at a rate of 9.7% while the cost of living remained relatively stable (Emery and Lee, 1967:808).

175 It is important to realize that Taiwan did not consist of vacant land to be settled by Chinese immigrants. It was occupied by the aforementioned aborigines who were hunters, gatherers, and swidden agriculturalists. As the Chinese settlers arrived they faced constant warfare as the aborigines were gradually pushed back into the mountains. The early history of many Chinese settlements on Taiwan is not unlike that of the American West with forts and raids and war parties while some bandits and renegades made accommodations with the aborigines. Pacification was still not complete as late as World War II.

Historical Setting--Sanlei Ts'un

127 The local history of the village naturally meshes
175 with the brief general picture described above.³ It is based on family history books and the memories of elders. At points, it is confirmed by local gazetteers but much is uncertain and the dates which are listed must be considered approximations.⁴

175 Village history begins about 135 years ago (1830)
167 in a village in Fukien. Three family record books give the following address: Wu K'eng, Ch'i Pa Liu, San Chieh, Erh Tu, Chao An Hsien, Chang Chou Fu, Fukien. Three men were sent from this village to Taiwan to locate land for a large migration. There is no reason suggested for the move other than economic opportunity. We do know that

175 there had been a great deal of migration from the Chang
167 Chou region of Fukien to Taiwan over an extended period of
time. The three men first came to the Wan Hua region of
Taipei City and stayed with relatives while looking for
land. They felt that most of the best and convenient land
was already occupied for by the middle of the nineteenth
century, migration had been heavy for a long period of
time. How they discovered the Sanlei area is unknown.
In any case, they wrote back to the village for people to
[551] come. Counting the three men, eighteen families settled
in Sanlei, all but one surnamed Liao. The lone Yu was a
ch'in ch'i (affinal relative) who died without progeny.
The economic condition of all eighteen was equal, quite
poor. It appears that this was the second village to be
settled in Talei Li, but all five villages were apparently
established within a five year period. Moreover, the
entire li was settled by people from the same area in
[726] Fukien. The early years were very hard for land had to
be cleared and crops established while under the constant
threat of attack by the aborigines living in the surround-
[712] ing mountains. Remnants of the bamboo-walled forts which
surrounded each village can still be found slightly below
ground level. The last villager was killed by aborigines
as recently as 1920.

776 The migrants brought with them a statue of the god
778 Shih Fu Yang from their village in Fukien and he was

776 installed in a small temple. They also brought an earth
778 god statue (T'u Ti Kung) which was established in another
very small temple. Both temples have remained important
in the village through to the present. About 30 years
after the settlement was established, a large temple was
built. It was destroyed in a 1943 typhoon and rebuilt
after World War II.

621 The original settlers constituted a corporate
[423] group who cleared and cultivated the land in shares.
Some years passed before the jointly-owned land was divided
among the 18 share holders. In essence, the community
constituted a single surname village, not unlike the de-
scription furnished for many communities in Southeast
China where it may be considered to have originated
(Freedman, 1958). No other village in the li was a single
surname village. Moreover, it appears that the settlers
in other T'ai villages came from a variety of villages
in Mainland China rather than one. Sanlei has always
maintained a higher level of integration and cooperation
than surrounding villages. Although almost all early
settlers were surnamed Liao, they were not all able to
specify their degree or details of relationship. The
story of the eighteen shareholders and the problems they
encountered are widely known to villagers although there
is some dispute over minor details. Anyone who has lived
in the village a year or two will be able to repeat the

62) general story.

Other families continued to migrate to Sanlei and to the other villages in the area. By no later than 1880, the village reached a population of slightly over forty families and it seemed to remain about that size until 579 after the Restoration. In the nearby mountains, some li families took up banditry which continued into the twentieth century. A favorite crime was kidnapping for ransom. The bandits were able to make temporary liaisons with the aborigines. Some current villagers are descendants of bandits and still possess the consequent stigma. [582] Several people told me that one of the reasons for preferring to bring in brides from the south was they were less likely to have descended from bandits. One powerful and influential man in the li is the son of the last bandit chief.

648 The arrival of the Japanese at first had little
579 effect on the village for the area was remote and there was only one narrow foot path from the village in the direction of Hsin Tien. The continuing activities of the bandits were not tolerated by the Japanese. In 1905, a punitive expedition was sent into the mountains. This force greatly frightened villagers and many fled and hid in the mountains. Unfortunately, it was difficult to distinguish between bandit and farmer and about 15 or 16 Sanlei villagers were killed and about one third of the

648 village homes were destroyed. Similar results obtained
579 in the other villages in Talei Li. This event was within
the memory of older informants who were quite incensed
about the destruction of innocents. On other occasions,
there were no doubts that the villagers had cooperated
with the bandits, supplied recruits, and benefited finan-
cially from their activities.

648 Soon after the above punitive expedition, a police
177 station was established in the village temple and it was
[625] periodically staffed for irregular periods until the late
thirties with a detachment of two or three men. It was
a branch of a more important and permanent station in
Pouti which, in turn, was a branch of that in Hsin Tien
(see Figure 1 for relative locations).

 The destruction of village homes did not mark an
auspicious beginning for the occupation. The Japanese
[778] employed other oppressive measures as well. As part of
[776] a Japanization process, they destroyed ancestral tablets
and forced villagers to worship Japanese Shinto gods. It
became necessary to learn Japanese in order to conduct
business with the government. The policemen carried long
[466] sticks and beat transgressors on the spot. They also
[653] pressed village men into labor battalions for road and
sanitation work. There was great resentment over corvee
work at locations not in the immediate village area.
[829] Nevertheless, these activities did not destroy positive

648 sentiment towards the Japanese. Most villagers now claim
177 a man was beaten only when it was deserved and labor work
[829] was shared equally except during the war when some men
were conscripted into labor battalions and sent to other
countries.

648 The Japanese ruled Taiwan somewhat after the pat-
631 tern of the British in India, i.e., they worked through
632 the local system and local officials.⁵ Talei was divided
into two parts, two separate pao as part of the pao chia
system.⁶ T'oulei and Erhlei were combined in one pao and
the remaining three villages into another. All five were
not reunited into a single administrative unit until
after the Restoration. The two pao represented a cleavage
along traditional factional lines. (Details of this fac-
tionalism are discussed more fully in Chapter IV.) The
factions seemingly are based on a regional factor, one
end of the li against the other, but there are also dif-
ferences in ecological conditions and the respective value
systems, T'oulei and Erhlei have less land and are more
progressive. Although the five villages have always coop-
erated in maintenance of the li temple located in Erhlei
and the li has but one school, the two factions are an
uneasy combination. At present, each faction is represen-
ted in all administrative bodies, i.e., if the li chang
(mayor) is from one faction, then the representative is

648 from the other; or if the farmers' association small unit
[631] head is from one faction, the vice head is from the other.
[632]
[191]

Many of the men but only a few women learned some
871 Japanese and several became quite fluent. A Japanese
648 school was established in Pouti near the police station
and a small percentage of the villagers, primarily male,
were permitted to attend. It appears that although there
were increases as time passed, total attendance never
exceeded fifty per cent of those in the requisite age
groups. Secretly and illegally, a Chinese school was
operated in the village but seldom did more than 15 stu-
dents attend regularly.

648 Economically, there were many improvements. The
177 narrow path to Hsin Tien soon became a one lane dirt road.
[49] Coal mines were started in the immediate area and a very
[316] narrow gauge railroad was built from the mines into Hsin
[496] Tien just before World War I. Both road and railroad
[245] improved communication with Hsin Tien. Tea plantations,
common in Northern Taiwan, were introduced to Talei about
[245] the time the railroad was built. Citrus orchards started
[242] to replace tea during World War II. Improved seed varie-
[474] ties, fertiliser, insecticide, and farming techniques in-
creased agricultural income a great deal. The Japanese
introduced farming cooperatives in the nineteen twenties
which increased the flow of information to the village.

648
177
[466] Efforts towards Japanization were maximized during World War II. Men were conscripted into labor battalions, some for short periods nearby and others were sent to conquered territories such as the Philippines. A small acid factory was built near the village during the war and just before the war ended, American planes strafed the factory and killed three water buffalo and two people. (It is [816] interesting that the story of the attack was always repeated with the deaths of water buffalo listed first and the two children, a girl from Erhlei and a boy from Sanlei, listed last.) [761]

175 When control was returned to the Chinese (referred to as the Restoration), villagers were excited and pleased. Unfortunately, a particularly harsh Governor, General Chen Yi, was appointed and his measures were extremely abusive. He was executed on June 16, 1950 for his "abuse of the Formosan people in 1946 and 1947" among a list of other reasons according to the government announcement (Kerr, 1965:396). The initial good will was soon dissipated. In 175
648 spite of the arguments of the official government, the Taiwanese, those who were residents before the establishment of Japanese suzerainty, carefully distinguish themselves from those who came later, the "Mainlanders," as the latter distinguish themselves from the Taiwanese. The identification is permanent, i.e., the children of Mainlanders are Mainlanders even when born on Taiwan.

186 The Taiwanese seemingly equate some Mainlanders
648 with villagers in Fukien, although as previously suggested,
the Mainlanders were not representative of rural Fukien.
This mistaken identity helps support the villagers' belief
that the Taiwanese are now significantly different from
the Fukienese still in China. It would seem that the
real differences are probably not great. That is, the
differences in cultural behavior of the people of Taiwan
as compared with those from Fukien was probably no greater
than the differences between the latter and the people
from Kansu or Hunan. The differences between urban and
rural types are probably considerable in any location.
However, for predicting behavior, particularly motivated
behavior, subjective reality may be more important than
objective reality. Taiwanese and Mainlander are self-
identified as different groups. Each is an "in group"
and treats the other as an "out group." The Taiwanese gen-
erally feel that the present government is controlled by
"outsiders."

621 Sanlei village as well as the entire li has prospered during the last twenty years subsequent to the return of control to the Chinese. Agricultural techniques have continued to progress, and production is at its
[433] highest levels in history. The farmers' association has
[474] been most active in introducing improved techniques and
[242] providing supplies such as insecticides, new seeds, and fertilizer.

621 fertilizer. The expansion of production in the coal mines
[433] and industrial growth have meant more non-agricultural
[464] economic opportunities for villagers. The extent of demo-
[571] cratic participation in decision-making processes has in-
[871] creased. The li now has its own school with attendance
reaching nearly 100%.

632 As part of a war dispersal process, the government
648 established a branch of the Communication Bureau in Wulei,
the last village in Talei Li (see Figure 2). Most of the
Bureau's employees live in company housing. Since they
are nearly all Mainlanders, the former Taiwanese residents
had to move out. Although Wulei is still officially part
of Talei Li, its Mainlander residents do not participate
in li politics or li religious affairs. The children do
not even attend the li school. Instead, they travel daily
to a school in Hsin Tien which has a much higher academic
reputation. The attitudes of the Mainlanders in Wulei
towards the Taiwanese are characterized by a high level
of ethnocentrism. They frequently curse the Taiwanese
and berate them.

494 To facilitate transportation to the Communication
648 Bureau, the government blacktopped the road all the way
[499] from Hsin Tien to Wulei. A small bus company maintains a
[653] route from Hsin Tien to Wulei and back nine times each
day. Mainlanders seldom travel on the bus however, pos-
sessing a private bus on which only Bureau employees and

- 494 their families are permitted to ride. The narrow-gauge railroad was eliminated and coal is now hauled by trucks.
- 655 The government Wine and Tobacco Monopoly was establishing a branch tobacco processing factory half way between Talei
- [464] Li and Hsin Tien just as we were leaving Taiwan. This was expected to open additional employment opportunities in the immediate area.
- 511 Sanlei village is now enjoying its greatest economic prosperity according to all objective indicators. Moreover, health care is better than ever before in history and the death rate is at its lowest point (see next section). Educational opportunities too have reached a
- 648 peak. Nevertheless, the period of the Japanese occupation
- 829 has been greatly romanticized. Men over 35 are proud of
- [191] their ability to speak Japanese and a few long for the
- [186] return of the Japanese. Middle-aged villagers argue that they have been ruled by "outsiders" for a long period of
- 648 time, first the Japanese and then the Mainlanders. More-
- 829 over, many agree that the Japanese did a better job for
- 511 they claim under Japanese control, prices were more stable, officials were more honest, and one did not fear robbers. One fifty-year old man in a group once said that when the Japanese were here, one day's labor paid for three day's basic living but that now it took two day's labor to pay for three day's basic living. The group all nodded in agreement. Since this statement failed to accord with the

511 other kinds of physical evidence, we contrasted the average
648 day's wage and the average cost of rice and pork under the
829 Japanese and under the current conditions and by computation proved that a day's labor now bought more pork or more rice than it had under the Japanese. The men felt that there was either something wrong with their memory of rates or prices or that our figuring now was incorrect. They knew they earned more under the Japanese in real income. It is plain that the facts and beliefs are not in accord. Probably adding to the romanticization of the period is the fact that the Japanese were few in number when compared with the Mainlanders. In a typical week for instance, only about a dozen or so Japanese appeared in Talei Li. Today, with the Communication Bureau, the school, the police, and various salesmen, several hundred Mainlanders may be observed in a single week.

171 Government propagandists, the schools, and the army
186 are all engaged in an attempt to overcome the antagonisms
648 on both sides. The incidence of inter-marriages between groups is increasing. The eventual goal of the government is a united Taiwan but success is not certain. Chinese history provides many examples of two culturally different groups, racially near identical, living side by side in the same area for hundreds of years while preserving distinct identities. For example, a minority group of Hakka have maintained and still maintain a separate ethnic and

171 linguistic identity after a residence of several hundred
186 years in Fukien from whence the majority of Taiwanese mi-
648 grated. This separate identity has extended into Taiwan-
[871] ese and Hakka settlements on Taiwan. Currently, the en-
[701] forced use of a single language, Mandarin, in the schools
and the army (both of which are compulsory for males
while schools are compulsory for females) should aid in
breaking down the communication barriers and help lead to
amalgamation between Mainlanders and Taiwanese.

The Population

000 The total population of Taiwan in 1966 was 13,383,357
(United Nations Statistical Yearbook, 1968:808). There has
been a tremendous expansion in recent years. The 1940
Japanese census listed 6,077,478 which grew to 6,560,000
by 1946 at the time of the Restoration (Hsieh, 1964:206).
There was a great influx of Mainlanders following the loss
of mainland China to the communists, undoubtedly exceeding
a million people.

Taiwan's population can be divided into a number
of categories as is done regularly in the official records.
With approximate official percentages listed for 1963,
the categories are foreigners (negligible), aborigines (1),
Taiwanese (86), and Mainlanders (13) (Hsieh, 1964:206).
The Taiwanese may be further divided into Hakka, Hokkien,
and minor numbers of others.

162
[161] Sanlei's population in 1966 was 409 which could be divided into 66 households. Talei Li's population was approximately 1550, divided into 248 households. Except for Ssulei which is somewhat smaller, the five villages in Talei Li are nearly the same size. The distribution of the population in Sanlei village does not appear similar to the distribution presented above for all of Taiwan for Sanlei is essentially a Hokkien village. There are three Mainlanders, all retired soldiers, living in Sanlei; one is merely renting a village hut and the other two are adopted-in husbands. There is an aborigine woman (perhaps part aborigine), 45, married to a village man. None of these four have gained full acceptance.

[582] During our study, a village boy brought back a Hakka wife when he completed military service. She does not speak Taiwanese and is sure to have a difficult time if they remain in the village. The general appraisal of [829] Hakka women is that they are domineering, hard workers, and sexually demanding.

162
829 Another man who is an adopted-in husband has a mixed identity. He migrated from Fukien to Taiwan as a miner during the war between Japan and China. (The Japanese brought many Chinese miners to Taiwan to work in the mines as part of the war effort.) Although he was classified as a Mainlander by the Japanese, he is nearly accepted as a Taiwanese by the villagers. At least, in answer to the

162 question about how many Mainlanders are living in the area,
829 he is rarely cited.

186 The ethnic identity of the Taiwanese is very strong.

582 The villagers uniformly claim that the ethnic or sub-
cultural distinctions cited above are very important.

Marriage between such groups is considered very bad and undoubtedly a cause of problems. The barber in my village who was seeking a wife once asked if I knew of any eligible girls. Since I suggested an attractive conductress on the local bus, my quality rating as a matchmaker immediately dropped very low for the girl was a Hakka. Not only would marriage to a Hakka be against the dictates of common sense, it might be very bad for his business as he could easily lose many customers. The story of my suggestion was repeated several times, always causing amusement. It was interesting that it never proved necessary to specify the girl's ethnic identity. As soon as she was identified as the young bus conductress, everyone knew she was Hakka. I was often amazed at the ability of people to distinguish at a distance Mainlanders, Taiwanese, and Hakka.

162 The distribution of the village population by age and sex is indicated in Figure 3. This pyramid is a fairly normal example of a population with a high birth rate and a rapidly falling death rate with only one serious deviancy from what might be expected: the age bracket from 20 to 29

162

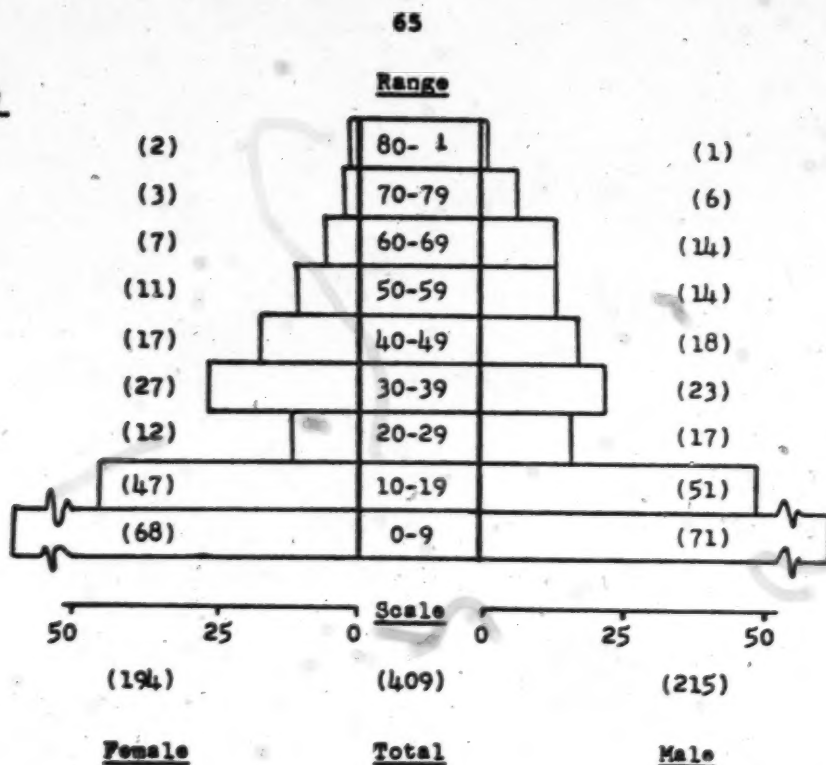


Figure 3. Population Pyramid, Sanlei Village, 1966

171 is seriously under-represented. In comparison with figures
162 for all of Taiwan at the end of 1966 (United Nations Demo-
graphic Yearbook, 1967:172-3), the percentage distribution
is nearly identical for most categories although there is
a slightly higher percentage of people under 10 and also
of people over 60 in the village as compared with the na-
tion. However, in the 20 to 29 age bracket, the village
percentage is 7.1% as opposed to Taiwan's 13.2%. Since
the immediately preceding category, ages 10-19, is nearly

171 identical (23.8% to 23.5%) as is the immediately succeed-
162 ing one, ages 30-39 (12.6% to 12.3), the deviancy is sig-
nificant and must be explained.

561 People in the 20 to 29 age bracket are the most
mobile. They are the oldest group who have received their
464 entire education in the Chinese schools. Due to indus-
trial development, opportunities for employment increased
rapidly. For Taiwan as a whole, non-agricultural employ-
ment increased from 38% of the labor force in 1952 to 49%
in 1966 (United National Statistical Yearbook, 1969:109).

561 Young people, particularly girls, are living near the
166 factories or in factory dormitories. At any given moment
in time, a half dozen boys are away in the army and two
or three are away serving apprenticeships. It does appear
that many boys are likely to return and the girls will
probably marry out while their replacements in a kind of
equivalence exchange will marry in from other villages.
This hope for the return of the young people to the vil-
lage is based on many examples of urban dwellers who have
[874] returned. The village barber served an apprenticeship
and worked in town for seven years, returning to the vil-
[463] lage at the age of 25. Both of the sons of Liao Tu, the
temple caretaker, worked at a factory in town where they
were registered. The oldest got married and returned to
the village at age 27 when his first child was due. The
younger son is now back and plans to get married soon and

56|live with his bride in the village. Another young couple,
466 working and living in Peitou, returned to Sanlai when
their child was eighteen months old because the boy's
[582] father became ill and required help with farming. Since
it is felt best not to marry until after satisfying the
military obligation, many boys marry soon after returning
home, often drawing brides from the pool of factory girls.
Because few married girls continue working in the factory
after marriage or after the first child is born at the
latest, the age when they return to the village helps ex-
plain why the 30-39 age bracket is fairly standard while
the 20-29 bracket is under-represented.

162 The sex ratio of 110.8 is higher in the village
than the 105.7 over-all ratio for Taiwan (United Nations
Demographic Yearbook, 1967:172-3). This difference is
partially due to the influx of Mainlanders since the four
residents were males only and also to the greater shortage
of girls than boys in the 20-29 age bracket discussed
above. For example, eleven girls and only three boys were
living in factory dormitories. This surplus of males is
significantly different than the sex ratio of 94.2 found
by Gallin for his village on the west central plain

162 (1966:33). Women are more mobile than men for factory
369 work in Sanlai and moreover, it is possible for men to
562 continue living in the village while working in the city.

Factories often provide supervised dormitory accommodations
(room and board) for girls but seldom for boys.

162 (room and board) for girls but seldom for boys. An identical pattern of high sex ratios in the rural area is found in the United States in spite of the country's overall sex ratio of less than one hundred. This difference in the two areas of Taiwan might be a key to assessing the levels of modernization. It appears that Sanlei is more like rural America than for example, Gallin's Hsin Hsing, for it has the same high sex ratio and the identical practice of a higher percentage of girls than boys migrating to the city to work.

The average age of the Taiwanese population is seventeen years and four months (United Nations Demographic Yearbook, 1967:718). The average age of the Sanlei villager was just under 13. This difference too is partly due to the missing group in the 20 to 29 bracket explained above. It is also due to the fact that rural farmers are more fertile than urban dwellers and therefore, more young children are included in overall figures, lowering the average age.

An examination of the population within prime working ages, those between 15 and 64 as conventionally defined (Barclay, 1954:98), exposes a major village problem.

162 Only 44.2% of the Sanlei villagers are in this primary
464 work-force category and 55.8% are dependent. For Taiwan as a whole, 52.9% are in the prime work force (United Nations Demographic Yearbook, 1967:172-3) while in the

162 United States, as in other highly industrialized coun-
464 tries, the percentage of the population in the prime work
categories often exceeds 65% (Barclay, 1954:99). One of
the problems of underdeveloped countries is the fact that
such a large percentage of the population is dependent on
others for sustenance. One could argue that individuals
outside the conventional age range (15 to 64) are economic
contributors and this is true for Sanlei village. Of
course, it is also true for industrialized countries as
well. Partially reducing the problem is the fact that
entrance into the permanent labor force is at a younger
age in Taiwan than in major industrialized nations
(Barclay, 1954:98-100), and that the lack of a well-
developed retirement system requires meaningful employ-
ment during the later ages beyond 65. Since education
for villagers rarely extends beyond primary school, most
villagers enter the regular work force permanently by age
fourteen.

163 Taiwan has been undergoing a rapid population ex-
165 plosion. This is primarily due to a rapidly falling
death rate which has reached an extremely low figure com-
bined with a high birth rate which has more recently
begun to fall. The figures in Table 2 indicate changes
in demographic rates in Taiwan during the past sixty
years. The death rates started to fall after 1920 and
have reached a figure currently much lower than those

Table 2. Historical Demographic Rates for Taiwan
(Prior to 1950 from United Nations Demographic Yearbook, 1955; remaining from United Nations Statistical Yearbook, 1969)

<u>Years</u>	<u>Birth Rate</u>	<u>Death Rate</u>	<u>Natural Increase</u>
1906-10	41.7	33.4	8.3
1916-20	40.4	31.0	9.4
1926-30	45.0	22.1	22.9
1936-40	45.4	20.6	24.8
1948-50	41.5	12.9	28.6
1955	39.3	6.9	32.6
1960	34.5	5.7	28.8
1965	28.5	5.3	23.0

recorded for Western industrialized nations.⁷ No corresponding change occurred in the birth rate until the most recent period. Surveys now indicate a growing desire for smaller families (M. Yang, 1962:69-71) and modern birth control practices are gaining in popularity, particularly the use of "Intra-uterine Devices" (I.U.D.).

163 The natural increase is still very high but the situation seems to be coming under control. An annual growth rate of 30.0 (3%) means a doubling of a population in just over 25 years. W. Thompson extended current growth rates in 1958 to suggest that the population of Taiwan in 1980 would likely number about 18 million (1959:363) provided the necessities of life could be supplied in about the existing amounts per capita. He further added that [43N] as an isolated economic unit, even with a modest population increase of one per cent per year, it was unlikely that Taiwan would be able to maintain her present per

163 capita income which has been higher than the average for
[434] Asia (1959:367). At an increase near three per cent, it
would be highly probable that the positive checks envis-
ioned by Malthus (war, famine, disease) would assume domi-
nance and result in a spiraling death rate simply because
of the shortage of sufficient food to support healthy
[842] life. There are strong indications however, that the
[582] negative checks Malthus envisioned (birth control and de-
layed marriage) are becoming operative. The birth rate
has begun to decline rapidly (see Table 2) and the average
age at marriage is higher than ever before.

168 Even as late as the early nineteen-sixties, the
government had approached birth control with mixed emo-
tions. On the one hand, there was recognition of the man-
land relationship and the necessity for enforcing a bal-
ance; on the other hand, there was a felt need for a
sizeable birth rate to produce soldiers to eventually
retake the mainland. Official birth control programs
started slowly but currently, clinics are widely avail-
able. A government-subsidized clinic in Hsin Tien will
insert an Intrauterine Device for Sanlei residents at a
cost of \$30.00, about one-fourth the charge of a private
doctor.

163 Thompson's other assumption of Taiwan as an iso-
434 lated unit is also not supported. Foreign trade is in-
439 creasing and the rate of increase in Per Capita Income is

163

434 greater than the increase in population (K. T. Chen, 1967:
439 98).

163

165 Sanlei demographic records for 1966 during our study indicate that the village does not deviate much from the total island figures indicated in Table 2. Thirteen births yield a rate of 31.8 and seven deaths, a rate of 11.9, for a combined natural increase of 19.9. This increase, lower than the total island figure of 23.0, is partly due to the larger numbers of old people in the village and also due to the missing people in prime child-bearing ages. However, the mid-year population of 409, a very small "n," does not really allow for meaningful contrasts, i.e., one more birth would have meant nearly identical increase rates. Many village women are now practicing birth control and the average age at marriage is also creeping upwards, both factors contributing to the trend to a smaller rate of natural increase.

[161]

[842]

[582]

Social Organization

128

Chapters IV through VI are devoted to selected aspects of social organization: formal organization and social control, kinship, and voluntary organization. A brief summary of the three chapters is presented below in order to set the stage in a general way both for this overview and to make each chapter fit into the context of the whole.

621 Individual villagers are combined into chia
592 (families) and hu (households). Although the two terms
are not necessarily synonymous, in Sanlei they are effectively identical for each hu consists of a single chia. Although there is a range from one to nineteen, the average size of the chia is 6.2 members in Sanlei, and 6.25 members for all of T'ai Li including Sanlei. These household averages are significantly larger than the 5.8 listed for Taiwan as a whole (United Nations Statistical Yearbook, 1969:712-3).

621 Although not listed in the official government
602 records, a number of chia in the village are combined into
613 several distinct agnatic corporate groups (see Chapter V). Historically, Sanlei was a single surname village but not all the agnatic groups in the village could specify the kinds of relationships they had to each other in detail. However, "all people bearing one surname were by that fact, agnates; for they were considered to be descendants of a common ancestor in the male line" (Freedman, 1958:4). Villagers with the same surname considered themselves to be kinsmen and surname exogamy was absolute. In the last forty years, families with other surnames have been locating in the village. However, the major surname, Liao, is possessed by over fifty per cent of the residents at present.

621 There are no wealthy families in Sanlei Ts'un al-
556 though there are substantial differences in life style
between the poorest and the richest. There is a direct
relationship between family size and relative economic
position. Moreover, wealthy individuals are believed to
be the most competent and usually, the most virtuous.
Most of the formal and informal community leaders are
drawn from the wealthier families.

621 Liao-surnamed families dominate the upper class
613 group in the village. Only two families surnamed Chiu
(sharing the same great grandfather) have joined this
group. One is a tea processor and the other owns one of
the two village stores. Some Chiu female descendants
have married Liao men in the village. However, almost
every village leader, formal or informal, is surnamed
Liao. The only two major exceptions are a Huang who is
the stepson of a Liao and who gave up one of his sons to
his Liao-surnamed step-brother and a Chien who is an
adopted husband in a Liao family.

621 Every ten or twelve contiguous hu are officially
624 combined into lin (neighborhoods). Each lin has a lin
chang (lin head or neighborhood leader) who is selected
632 by consensus. The next larger significant government
[666] unit is the li. There is a regular one-man one-vote elec-
tion for the li chang (mayor) and for a representative to
the township council, the next higher level administrative

632 unit. The various lin chang assist the li chang in carry-
631 ing out government policy. Connected through this struc-
ture are the superordinate government levels such as town-
ship, county, province, and ultimately, the Republic.

621 This account omits one of the most significant
units for most residents, the ts'un (village). As a unit
of the official government, it has few functions, serving
only to bound areas, as a registration unit, and as a
postal address. However, the village appears to be a
prime identification unit for the typical rural Taiwanese.
In the Sanlei area, there is a perfect agreement as to
621 who is and who is not a member of which ts'un. In Taiwan
632 as a whole, in order that li be approximately equal in
size, large villages are divided into two or more li;
medium-sized villages constitute a li; and small villages
are combined to form a single li. Talei Li is an example
of the last process, a combination of five ts'un.

66 Informal political activities vary at distinct
[632] levels. At the township level, the li is united as part
of a minority faction. Within the li, there are two
contrasting sets of factional divisions which cut across
each other, i.e., there are some overlapping memberships.
One pair of factions is regionally based, T'oulei and
Erhlei against the other three villages; the other pair
of factions is ideologically based, the young progressives
against the older traditionalists. Kinship loyalties,

66 agnatic and affinal, add another dimension to this complexity for most of the residents are members of families whose forefathers occupied the village over an extended period of time. The effects of alliances or feuds in the past often continue to be important long after the original principals have disappeared from the scene.

57! Other important governmental or quasi-governmental organizations which influence local affairs include the school and parent teacher's association, police organization, farmers' association, and fruit cooperative. Completely informal units which are important include two temple organizations, various sworn brothers and god's organizations, and several cooperative work groups.

The various kind of social groups discussed above mean that no individual is an isolated unit. He is necessarily involved intimately in a large number of social groups, some in conflict, forcing a choice between alternatives. Although the priorities are not always clear, the general agreement is that the family is usually the most important social group. Most new residents are

[643] quickly incorporated into various units. Only a few outsiders such as Mainlanders remain relatively isolated but even Mainlanders can become relatively involved if they behave in accordance with village norms over an extended period of time.

Languages

191 Sanlei is a multi-lingual community. No one lang-
197 uage is sufficient to communicate with everyone although
Taiwanese (min-nan hua) comes very close. All village
children speak Taiwanese most of the time. In casual
conversations, in village affairs, and in religious ob-
servances the utilization of Taiwanese is usual. Use of
another language is restricted to "special occasions"
such as dealing with government officials, but even here,
if villager and official are both Taiwanese, employment
of Taiwanese is likely. We started with Mandarin but as
we learned a little Taiwanese, our efforts in Taiwanese
were greatly applauded.

197 Mandarin is the official language in the schools.
872 Since attendance is compulsory, almost all children are
exposed to six years of language training. Several Main-
lander teachers in the school refuse to speak Taiwanese
at any time and a few know no more than a few polite
phrases and do not care to learn any more. Many village
women are unable to converse at all with their childrens'
teachers. In the li school, only the first grade teacher
permits use of any Taiwanese in class.

191 Several of the older men, especially the more in-
192 fluent ones, but no older women, have learned Mandarin
[562] in order to deal with the government and conduct business.
Much of the acquired facility in Mandarin will be lost

191 soon after graduation from grade school unless the grad-
197 uate works in town. Mandarin and Taiwanese are usually
misalled "Chinese dialects" even though they are not
mutually intelligible (Fairbank and Reischauer, 1958:17).
191 Because of the aforementioned Mainlander-Taiwanese antag-
197 onism, children do not employ Mandarin outside of school.
186 Mandarin is seemingly equated with Mainlanders. A few
people, otherwise quite friendly, would not speak Mandarin
with us. They understood for they answered my Mandarin
questions in Taiwanese immediately through an interpreter.
According to native Mandarin speakers, the Taiwanese have
an improper accent when speaking Mandarin. The jokes
that are often made about their accents also serve to
inhibit attempts at speaking Mandarin.

191 Japanese is the third most important language in
Talei Li. Many men, especially the more influential ones
between the ages of 35 and 60, speak Japanese as do a few
women in the same age range. One woman who speaks Japan-
ese was a teacher in the Japanese school system. She and
her husband are the only two villagers who still speak
Japanese regularly together but they are not teaching it
to any of their ten children. Men seem proud of their
ability in Japanese and were most pleased to display their
talents with our assistants.

There are other minor languages spoken in the vil-
lage. One village woman speaks in addition to Taiwanese

191 some Taiyal, an aboriginal language. Five villagers speak
191 Hakka. One Mainlander speaks Cantonese and another
197 Hainanese, although both men speak Mandarin as well. Only
the Hakka girl who arrived in the village as a bride during
our stay spoke absolutely no Taiwanese. She was bilingual
in Hakka and Mandarin and her husband, in Taiwanese and
Mandarin. Although living in an extended household, she
refused to learn any Taiwanese and was unable to converse
with her mother-in-law. It does appear that Mandarin is
becoming a significant secondary language in spite of some
resistance. At present, villagers consider both literacy
and fluency in Mandarin as requisite for political office,
even on the local level.

212 Official government figures place the illiteracy
rate at 23.1% (China Yearbook, 1967:102) but this is
probably greatly underestimated. Everyone in elementary
school, even a first grader, is classified as literate
while those under six are eliminated as usual. If just
the population over 14 is considered, illiteracy exceeds
34%. Moreover, everyone who has completed elementary
school (six years) is classified as literate. Functional
illiteracy is found in the United States among high school
graduates, particularly in the big city ghetto and remote
southern rural areas. Chinese is a much more difficult
language in which to attain and retain literacy than
English (Fairbank and Reischauer, 1958:42). I gave simple

212 sixth-grade level material to a sample of villagers beyond age twenty who were primary school graduates. Although many were unable to read even half of it, several ran through it very quickly and easily. Functional illiteracy therefore is probably much higher than official [562] figures indicate, particularly in rural areas. Illiteracy is probably also higher among women than among men. Men are more apt to work where continued reading is necessary and this helps to maintain facility. Also, although school attendance is now equal for both sexes, more males than females attended schools in the past.

Clothing

291 Today, the clothing in Sanlei tends to be predominantly Western in form. Ready-made clothes are purchased in town or from itinerant peddlers. A village seamstress makes others.

291 A small child wears a kind of jumper, split at the crotch, so that when he squats, the split widens allowing elimination without soiling his clothes. A standard uniform is worn to school: khaki trousers and shirts for boys, skirts and blouses for girls, tennis shoes for both. In warm weather, except for school, most children go barefoot. On the way home from school, children may carry their school bags on one shoulder and tennis shoes slung over the other.

291 The most common clothing for men is Western cotton
177 wash trousers and a shirt or T-shirt. In warm weather,
trousers are usually short. In colder weather, more lay-
ers are worn, trousers on trousers and shirts on shirts,
[292] to be topped with a sweater or jacket. A man probably
owns one dress-up suit which is saved for special occas-
ions and worn with a shirt and tie. The suit lasts for
years and was probably acquired for his wedding. Since
the jackets last longer than trousers, replacement of
the trousers results in unmatched dress-up outfits for
older men. Underpants are often very colorful, much like
the old flour-sack⁸ material in the United States. Under-
shirts, when worn, are either T-shirts or the jockey
[513] type. Pajamas, two piece, are usually worn to bed and
also, in the evening after dinner in the leisure period
before going to bed. Most of the time, in warm weather,
men go barefoot or wear wooden clogs. The Japanese-style
clog with the very thick soles are only for leisure in the
evening. Occasionally, men wear a high boot with the big
toe separated much like a mitten for work in the field.
With these boots which were copied from the Japanese, the
trousers are bloused. A pair of leather shoes is pur-
chased for a wedding but rarely worn thereafter. A few
old men wear a Chinese jacket but old-style Chinese trou-
sers were not observed. Some men wear modern raincoats
but most older men prefer the old-fashioned rush mat coat.

291 A few young men are quite "mod," slim tight
177 trousers, sport shirts in "psychedelic" colors, and leather
561 jackets. Two village boys who dress in this style regularly play a guitar and sing the modern songs in Japanese or Chinese. Modern Japanese songs are very popular and young people learn to sing them by copying records although speaking little Japanese. Village boys are thereby imitating the young sub-culture of urban dwellers in their early twenties.

291 Women usually wear cotton skirts and blouses.
Underneath, they seldom wear slips or brassieres but do wear underpants made of the same previously described "flour-sack" material, in a shape and form not unlike tight peddle-pushers nearly reaching the knees. There is no immodesty attached to exposing underpants. To assume a favorite working position, a woman merely hikes her skirt up to her waist and squats. For work in the fields, women often wear trousers which tuck into split-toe boots, long-sleeved tight-necked blouses, cotton gloves, all topped off with a straw hat fastened by a cloth over the top tied under the chin. This outfit offers protection from thorns, insects, and the effects of the sun. The wide straw hat which provides protection from both the
291 sun and rain is worn often by men and women alike. A few
561 older women wear the traditional Chinese jacket with pamtaloons but only very old women wear a chi pao (the

- 291 traditional high-necked slit-side dress) of dark coarse
561 material for work. Younger women do have chi pao of fine
[292] material which they wear for important affairs. However,
in the recent period, a chi pao is usually first acquired
[177] for an engagement or wedding. Younger girls usually wear
293 Western-style outfits for trips to town. Women usually
carry umbrellas to protect against rain and sun alike.
- 291 At night, women too wear pajamas but less often than men
[513] wear them out on the street in the evening. Footwear is
[177] not unlike that for men except that young women more of-
[562] ten wear Western-style cheap shoes. Women also are more
likely to wear traditional cloth slippers in the home.
- 302 Special identifying haircuts are required of stu-
305 dents. Men go to the barber about once every two weeks
and usually have a shampoo and a shave as well as a hair-
cut. Women in Sanlei very seldom go to a beauty shop al-
though there is a beautician in the Ehlei barber shop.
- 302 Young women wear makeup now for trips to town although
teased by villagers, "You look like a prostitute" (see
593 Glossary C). Parents attempt to control their daughter's
dress and behavior but do not have much success. The
girls are now earning money and are economic assets. If
they are treated too harshly, they can easily move to the
city or to a factory dormitory.
- 296 Clothing in the village is worn until it falls
apart. There are many patches and even patches on patches.

291 However, when a young woman dresses for town, it would be
369 difficult to distinguish her from her big city sister.

Everyone agrees that people are no longer thrifty regarding clothes. Now people "dare to spend money" (see Glossary C).

Dwellings and Community Buildings

346 There is only one real community building in Sanlei village; the temple which is described more fully in

347 Chapter VII. There are two public stores but these can be little distinguished from the main room in a standard dwelling. The barber shop is merely one room in the barber's house.

342 The materials used to construct dwelling units are an indication of historical sequence. The original buildings were constructed of bamboo stakes, pounded in the ground, with mud daubed on both sides, and roofs of thatch. Two one-room rude huts in the village still represent this construction method.

5 The next development was mud brick, plastered on each side, with a thatch roof. More recent has been the substitution of a tile roof. Over a third of the houses in the village are of this style construction. Since the walls are subject to weathering, the house has an economic life of only thirty years and must be replastered every ten years. Many people say these houses are coolest in

342 summer and warmest in winter. Starting in the late forties, houses have been constructed of fired brick, always with tile roofs. A brick factory is located on the main road just over half-way to Hsin Tien. Fired-brick house types now constitute a majority in the village.

The original floors in all the house types described above are pounded earth but cement floors are now being added. The first room to be floored is either the lung t'ing (main room) or kitchen. Bedrooms still are seldom other than pounded earth.

Under the stimulation of the government, a new style house is being built entirely of reinforced concrete: floor, walls, and roof. The government requires use of one of three stock plans. The houses are designed to eventually become row houses with a common wall, i.e., reinforcing rods protrude in appropriate places. Additionally, each house is designed to eventually reach three

[452] stories, each preceding roof becoming a floor. If someone builds a house as specified by the government, he can obtain a low-interest house loan. This stimulation has resulted in the construction of three recent houses in Sanlei. The advantages of the house style which include the natural cleanliness of all cement floors, long economic life, and relative resistance to typhoons must be balanced against the disadvantages of a pervasive dampness and chill

342 in winter.

351 Most of the dwellings of farmers have a pounded
[243] earth courtyard for drying rice and as a place to work.
[474] Recently, the farmers' association has provided half the
cement necessary to cover the courtyard and many villagers
have taken advantage of the offer, the first in 1961.
Borrowing the use of a cemented courtyard is now quite
343 common. Farm outbuildings such as pig pens are extremely
crude with only partial walls and a thatch roof.

342 A dwelling typically has a regular sequence of
development. The first step is a rectangle 15 feet deep
and 20 or more feet wide. The main room will be the lung
t'ing which is a combination of sitting, dining, ancestral
worship, and general main room in the house. The usual
room dimensions are a 15 foot depth and a width of 10 or
15 feet. Extended out on either side are other rooms,
each 10 or 15 feet wide. Such rooms will be added as
needed until the building is three or five rooms long with
the lung t'ing in the center accessed through a central
door. One of the rooms is a kitchen but if there are
only two rooms, the kitchen may be a temporary attached
leanto.

787 It is best to have a geomancer orient the house for
good luck (see Chapter VII). Many people skip this step
by copying the orientation of nearby houses although this
is contrary to the theory of geomancy (ti-li or feng-shui).

787 Several villagers have some knowledge of ti-li standards which are considered sufficient for houses but a professional geomancer is usually consulted to orient the stove.

787 Normally, geomancy is referred to as feng shui (literally, 192 wind and water) with respect to orienting graves. Ti-li 761 is an alternative expression which refers to the activities 354 of the same man (geomancer) when he is engaged in

activities not related to death. There is some reluctance to connect the stove, for instance, with death. Nevertheless, both terms are sometimes used for the stove or house but only feng-shui is used for graves or temples.

342 As more space is needed in the house, ten-foot wings are extended at right angles from each end of the main section on the side of the building with the kung t'ing door. Each added room is about 10' by 10'. The wings may eventually become five or six rooms long. The long-range aim is a "u-shaped" building with a courtyard in the central partially enclosed area. Several village dwelling units have reached this stage (One is illustrated in Figure 12). Others may assume the shape of an "L" before the last wing is added (A distribution of various shapes can easily be seen in Figure 2). Since the large "u-shaped" building is predicated on the basis it will be occupied by a single kinship group, many buildings never complete the full development cycle as families do not expand as expected. The most modern houses of concrete,

342 described above, do not permit this pattern of development while other village houses just deviate from the dominant pattern.

354 All but three village houses have electricity. Most houses have one outlet in each room while those with fewer outlets, maintain one in the kitchen and kung t'ing. One light is usually left burning all night in each house.

342 In order to indicate the kind and extent of house-
592 hold furnishings, a dwelling at the intermediate stage of development is indicated in Figure 4, i.e., the kung t'ing base of a planned "u" only is complete. In this household, fourteen people reside in a stem family consisting of a man and his wife, their son and his wife, and ten grandchildren. Their goal is expansion of the house into the previously described pattern as the descendants marry. Four of the grandchildren are male.

342 The house also reveals other typical patterns. Alternating rooms have an outside entrance and each room
342 may be reached from any other without going outside. Al-
514 though separate out-houses were common in the past, there
[177] is now a tendency to have a small attached room with a Japanese ceramic toilet inside. In this case, human waste is discharged into a concrete pit which can be reached through a manhole outside. A house will also have an internal bucket collection system because most people do not like to go out at night.

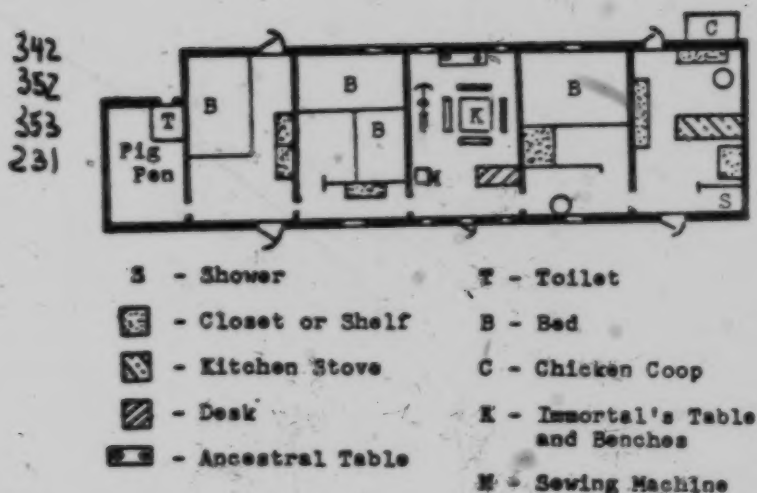


Figure 4. Typical Sanlei House Plan with Furnishings

342
515
[17] A small room with a hard surface or wooden floor for baths is often found in the kitchen although a kind of dishpan in the kitchen is also often used. Mixed bathing, Japanese style, is not uncommon but is not typical either and only occurs within a single family. Young to middle-aged husbands and wives sometimes bathe together while completely disrobed, occasionally with very small children. Older women often bathe with small children. However, there is seldom mixed bathing after age ten except for the aforementioned married couples.

356
[35] Most houses are very dirty and cluttered as a cluttered house is a sign of wealth. Chickens and ducks leave droppings as they wander in and out, sometimes accompanied by small pigs.

342
592 The plans of the above house also reveal a final pattern. A single dwelling may contain many households. As family division occurs, maximum flexibility in room assignment can be achieved because many rooms have an external entrance. Since there is no plumbing, any room can easily become a kitchen. In spite of division, internal doors will seldom be blocked off unless a portion of the building is rented out to someone who is not a relative although this is relatively rare, only two cases in Sanlei village. There will seldom be more than one lung t'ing in a single dwelling unit. Internal bearing walls, those marking the regular ten and fifteen foot dimensions, are heavy and extend from floor to ceiling. Other internal walls are plywood, about six feet high, commencing one foot off the ground. The room arrangements tend to allow little real privacy but do promote circulation of air in hot weather.

Personal Property

511 In addition to the above, it seems worthwhile to cite a few figures with reference to material possessions to indicate the economic prosperity of the village. The use of certain key items as an economic index is a normal technique in assessing prosperity. For example, the United Nations Statistical Yearbook indicates that the number of
207 radios in Taiwan increased from 77,000 in 1953 to

207 1,402,000 in 1967 (1969:782) and television sets, from
511 16,000 in 1963 to 164,000 in 1967 (1969:784). Figures
for Sanlei indicate the village has shared this growth
pattern. The number of radios increased from less than a
dozen in 1953 to 41 in 1966. Two out of every three
households now have a radio and since radios are played
loudly, the village is rarely silent during the day or
evening. Two television sets were installed in 1965.
The one at the village store faces the street so that a
group of villagers can watch the programs.

40 Other items may also indicate both the level of
412 prosperity and the kind of economic activities. Among the
493 409 people (66 households) there are 5 motorcycles, 69
511 bicycles, 30 sewing machines, 55 clocks, 37 electric fans,
and 13 electric rice steamers. Farming equipment includes
9 threshing machines, 18 plows, 7 winnowers, 39 insecti-
cide sprayers, 8 hand harrows, 7 foot harrows, and 161
hoes. Since almost everyone is a part-time farmer, there
are only about five households in the village without a
hoe although a hoe is the only piece of farm equipment
426 owned in several households. Borrowing tools from rela-
tives, friends, and sworn brothers is a regular custom.

511 Every household appears overcrowded with furniture,
352 tables, benches, chairs, cabinets, etc. Beds usually con-
513 sist of a straw mat or a tatami (hard thin straw mattress)
on a wooden platform. Some beds are quite large; occa-
sionally, a single bed may exceed 8' by 10'.

511 There is little doubt that the villages appear quite prosperous and people are not afraid to spend money.

Health and Sanitation

743 As stated previously, there has been a tremendous
744 decrease in the death rate. No small part of this decrease is due to improved health care, both personal care and public health facilities. With the help of the J.C.R.R. (Joint Commission on Rural Reconstruction), a health station serving the village has been established in Hsin Tien. This station provides assistance in pregnancy and birth control as well as some treatment of disease and
[842] injury. It will also provide and insert Intrauterine Devices (I.U.D.) at a cost of \$30.00, a day's pay for a woman. However, Sanlei village women prefer a private hospital, also in Hsin Tien, which charges \$120.00. The latter center provides more privacy and personal attention and also guarantees to refund the fee if there is rejection of the device or provide treatment without charge in the event of bleeding.

744 There are also educational programs to stimulate intensive village health and sanitation practices. However, sanitation techniques in the village are not always in accord with knowledge. For example, all village adults know that the water should be boiled for ten minutes before drinking it. However, although almost no one drinks

744 plain water, few boil it the full ten minutes. There is no question about what is proper but people just do not want to take the time or trouble and a few say that it would cost too much for the fuel to boil all drinking water a full ten minutes. Similarly, mosquito nets are not kept in good repair although infected bites are common.

356 Houses are quite messy and dirty. People will clean them as required to pass government inspection, but grudgingly. There are two values operating against cleanliness. A cluttered house is a sign of wealth or economic wellbeing. Also, a baby god is thought to hide somewhere 356 843 776 in the room of a pregnant woman during the period from conception to birth. Disturbing his resting place may have serious detrimental effects on the baby. Since a woman is not likely to know the moment she becomes pregnant, the bedrooms are often neglected in cleaning. The fastidious Japanese also worked hard in Tabei Li at promoting clean houses with little success.

262 Food handling techniques are comparatively good.
251 No raw foods other than fruits with a thick skin such as
744 citrus or bananas are consumed. Almost every family now covers left-over foods with a round wooden basket with a screened top to keep out insects in accordance with suggestions of the farmers' association and government health agents. This is a new practice instituted during the last

251 eight years. Although farmers have been relatively will-
262 ing to accept the recommendations of agricultural experts,
744 the government agents and farmers' association officials
concerned with sanitation have had more success with women
than men. Male and female agents in the farmers' associa-
tion in Hsin Tien both agree that unless the woman is per-
suaded, few changes will be made in the kitchen. The
officials and villagers alike claimed that no matter what
a man said, a woman ran the kitchen as she pleased. Most
food is eaten the day it is acquired and pork especially,
is never kept overnight. This custom requires daily mar-
keting.

164 Colds and flu are very common in winter. Almost
everyone has periodic intestinal disorders and skin infec-
tions are endemic. Foot and hand infections are occasion-
ally very severe. Working in the paddy fields with their
[241] load of human excreta in solution is particularly dangerous
with open cuts. Injuries such as broken bones are most
common among children and men who work in the local coal
mines.

759 Treatment of disease and injury may involve many
756 distinct techniques. There are a great variety of profes-
sional medical practitioners such as Western-style doctors,
traditional Chinese doctors, various folk specialties such
as acupuncture, different shamans, and temple priests who
[562] furnish charms to drink. Most professionals are males but
midwives are invariably females.

000 midwives are invariably females.

757 In addition to the professionals, there are local village amateurs. I cut my bare foot on a piece of bamboo in a rice paddy and it became badly infected. Two old villagers, an unrelated male and female, collected certain grasses in the mountain, chewed them thoroughly to make a soft wet lump which they applied to the cut as a poultice. The wound healed very quickly. Old age seems to be a prime characteristic of local medical specialists (non-professional) who are consulted regularly as experts.

757 Certain diseases and injuries are considered best
759 treated by particular kinds of practitioners. There is considerable agreement on diagnosing and recommended treatment in the village. For example, a Chinese herb doctor is Hsin Tien is best for a broken bone and a Western doctor, for eye infections.

[177]
755 In addition to technical treatment, religious worship and sacrifices are regularly added. If one practitioner of a certain type is not immediately successful, transfer to a different type is quickly effected. On many occasions, people will go to two or three different types at once for it is felt best not to take chances.

757 Self diagnosis and treatment is common. Although several older people in Tabei Li are considered to have special medical abilities, most adults are amateur health practitioners. Itinerant salesmen leave bags containing

- 757 a variety of different traditional and modern medicines hanging on the walls in houses. People use what they desire and when the salesman returns he replaces missing items and charges for them although there is no charge if none have been used. Different salesmen provide different combinations of drugs. There are 134 such medicine bags distributed among 39 of the 66 village households.
- 758 Health care has greatly improved in recent years. People go to a doctor much more often than previously. A contributing stimulus is the care received by miners and their families under health insurance programs. A Western-style doctor, a Mainland army officer, started a part-time practice in a rented room in Erhlei two months before we left Taiwan. Sanlei has a mid-wife responsible for most 758
844 births. However, in the past five years, a few women in the village have traveled to the hospital in Hsin Tien after the onset of labor, usually returning about four hours after birth. Births in a hospital are common among the women living in Erhlei. The half-hour ride on the bouncing bus with a laboring woman is sometimes most exciting, especially if she has already given birth to several children. On more than one occasion, a woman in labor has gotten on the bus and had the baby during the one hour round trip without ever getting off.
- 262 The final factor contributing to improved health and longer life is diet. Fish and pork consumption is at

262 the highest level in history. Low-priced powdered milk
[855] is available in the village stores but only given to small
children. The citrus orchards allow a large consumption
of fruits in season, particularly rejects, i.e., bruised
and undersized fruit. The appearance and taste may be
[178] poor but nourishment remains the same. Previously, fresh
fruits were consumed only on special occasions. The vil-
lage stores now sell many eggs although eggs too once were
only for rare special occasions. Probably the biggest
change is in the quantity and variety of fresh vegetables.

[178] The diet is greatly improved and information about vita-
mins and a balanced diet is filtering into the community.

Food and Diet

146 No villager goes hungry, starvation is non-existent.
Even in the large cities, the people appear well fed and
beggars are rarely encountered. In Sanlei, the daily
calorie intake seemed adequate for healthy life. In spite
of the villagers' opinions which were expressed above, it
does appear that there is an imbalance in the distribution
of needed items. According to the Western-style doctor
at the public health station in Hsin Tien, the rural vil-
lagers in the Hsin Tien area probably have serious short-
ages of protein, riboflavin, calcium, and thiamin. As an
investigator from America, I was most struck by the lack
of milk and milk products plus the comparatively small

146 portions of meat, fish and eggs. The doctor also stated that there were probably insufficient quantities of niacin, vitamin A, and iron although not as serious as the first listed items. Finally, outside of the citrus season, there were shortages of ascorbic acid.

125 The daily pattern of eating was checked in a num-
262 ber of different ways. I had five cooperating households (a stratified sample) keep records of food for a month which we checked each evening. Food was richer the first few days, probably indicating a "face saving" process. A second method was to check all 66 households on a single evening for that day's consumption. Alternatively, houses were checked following a single meal. Finally, random interviews on any subject periodically noted the food being prepared or recently consumed.

262 Polished rice was the main item of the diet in about 45% of the households; a combination of rice and sweet potatoes in about 52%; and primarily sweet potatoes only in about 3%. All households eat sweet potatoes, as a kind of fried pancake, steamed, or as a type of mush.

[178] According to villagers, the trend over time has been towards a greater emphasis on rice and a lesser emphasis on sweet potatoes. Rice, if available, is eaten at every meal, hot, cold, or as hsi-fan (a thin gruel). All vil-
261
855 lagers agree that gruel should not be eaten in the morning by any man who must do hard work in the fields as it

261 is not sufficiently nourishing; also, it should be denied
855 to small children along with other liquids in the evening
252 in order to prevent bed wetting. Rice was usually steamed
or boiled; it was only fried for a dish at a banquet or
when mixed with left-overs for lunch.

262 Almost every meal also included liberal quantities
of vegetables which were lightly cooked and were usually
placed on top of the rice to eat. The particular vege-
tables were drawn from those that were in season. Although
many of them were grown in the village, others were pur-
chased in Hsin Tien. Men were asked to shop on the way
262 home from work or a trip to town. If a woman went to
443 town, she usually shopped for herself and several others.
462

[493] One village man drove his three-wheeled bicycle cart into
the Taipei market each morning about 3:30 a.m. and bought
a load of vegetables and pedaled home. After he left Hsin
Tien, he stopped in each small village or group of houses
other than the two villages with vegetable markets and
sold produce from the cart. As he got closer to Sanlei,
he lowered his prices. He almost always was able to com-
pletely sell out the last of his load in Sanlei. Villag-
262 ers generally felt that there had not been significant
178 changes in the absolute quantity of vegetables consumed,
but there had been great changes in the variety used and
that people now ate more out-of-season and fresh vegeta-
262 bles. This was probably true but it seemed to us that

262 there was an emphasis on seasonal foods to the point of
monotony. For example, during the six-week period when
cauliflower was lowest in price, it seemed to be part of
two meals each day in almost every household in Talei Li.

443 A young man on his bicycle cart came through each
262 evening selling a great variety of pickled and spicy
264 vegetables which were usually served on cold rice for
breakfast. On a typical evening, about half of the house-
holds in Sanlei made purchases from this traveling deli-
catessen. The boy said his business had more than tripled
in the past six or seven years over the same territory
which extended from Hsin Tien to Wulei.

443 The chu jen (pig man) as he was nicknamed, came
262 through on a motorized cart three times each week, Tuesday,
231 Thursday, and Friday. He sold to fu (soy bean curd) for
human consumption and soy bean cakes for pigs. He was a
commercial pig farmer with a herd of over fifty pigs near
Hsin Tien. He had another route out a different road from
Hsin Tien on the other three days each week. With his
large orders for soy bean, he could get a large discount,
reducing his own farming expenses. It was also possible
to order a piglet from him at a price lower than the Hsin
Tien market. He sold about 2 pig cakes and 10 pounds of
to fu each trip into Sanlei. The prices of both were a
little higher than the market but he offered convenience.
To fu is rich in protein and a reasonable substitute for

443 meat but the quantity eaten was not sufficient to meet the
262 protein shortages previously described. However, consump-
231 tion of to fu was higher than it would have been without
his route because many purchases were made on impulse.
Further, he often advised farmers with regard to the tech-
niques of raising pigs as he was an acknowledged expert.

441
[203] The many other different kinds of salesmen that
came through the village were all tapped for gossip and
information and they played an important part in the com-
munication network. The salesmen who included Sanlei on
a regular route usually lived in Hsin Tien or Taipei. Some
called on the two village stores and others on villagers.
[438] They sold groceries, medicine bags, agricultural imple-
ments, cloth, etc. A more marginal group came through on
a one-time basis. The latter were high-pressure types and
villagers seldom had any further contact with them. Many
of the salesmen were retired Mainland soldiers.

262 As an island, seafood is an important dietary item
in Taiwan. Various kinds of seafood and fish soups are
common items in Fukienese culinary arts. Fish, shrimp,
sea slugs, octopus, and squid are all used, both fresh and
dried. Yet, these items are not a daily part of any
household's diet, appearing on the table about five or
six times each month on the average.

Fork is the typical meat. However, even counting
banquet meals, the average consumption of meat was less

262 than one-quarter of a pound per man per day. It is a rare
village household that would have two meatless days in a
178 row. Some older villagers claimed that in their youth,
262 meat appeared on the table only once each week but others
claimed it was more often. Any question about economic
conditions in the past almost always produced mild argu-
252 ments and disagreements. Pork is cut in very small pieces
and mixed with vegetables in cooking and most often, seems
262 to be used primarily for flavoring and for the fat. Vil-
826 lagers agreed that a person needed meat regularly in order
to provide grease for the joints in order to prevent sore
262 muscles. It was said that beef (water buffalo or yellow
[231] oxen) was eaten in the city. However, the water buffalo
was so important to the villagers that no village man
could bring himself to eat it. However, when one was
killed in an accident, it would be sold to a meat store.
Small boys occasionally snared mountain rats which were
eaten but the house rat was considered too dirty to eat.
[751] Dog meat was quite expensive and rarely eaten although
everyone said that a bit of dog meat in the fall would
help prevent colds all winter. No village dog could be
eaten however. Fowl were also significant but only on the
special occasions averaging about three to five times per
month.

261 According to most Chinese, eating is one of the
252 joys of life and cooking is a well-developed art form.

- 252 Most village women are proud of their abilities as cooks.
- 462 Several village men are also extremely skilled, hiring out
[463] as cooks on special occasions and almost every village man
can prepare an adequate meal. Some men cook quite often
in their homes although their wives were considered the
regular cooks. When a woman is working for wages on a job
while the man is home early, he will often prepare dinner.
Also, if a wife is sick, a man will substitute in the kit-
chen if there is no other adult female kinsman in the
household. There are only a few men who have never sub-
stituted as cooks for their wives. Nevertheless, when a
man cooks for either special occasions or as a substitute,
women will almost always clean the kitchen and wash the
dishes.
- 263 Peanut oil, ginger, soy sauce, red sauce, and
252 monosodium glutamate are important items in cooking. Most
dishes are combinations of various ingredients and spices.
It is often jokingly stated that no Chinese dish is com-
posed of less than ten items. Cooking techniques include
sauteing, deep frying, and steaming. Of course, boiling
is important for soups.
- 271 Water can not be consumed without boiling it first.
- 272 Since Sanlei was a tea processing village, tea usually
replaces plain boiled water. However, the tea is usually
very weak and of poorer grades; a single set of tea leaves
273 was reused several times. Wine or beer is for special
occasions only although there are a couple of men in the

273 area who drink often. Spirits were never supposed to be
272 consumed without simultaneously eating. The village
273 stores also stock soft drinks but these too tend to be
264 reserved for special occasions. Soft drinks and spirits
are provided at all banquets.

262 There were two kinds of days, sharply contrasted in
264 the kinds and quantities of food: regular days and special
524 days. The special days were the religious holidays and
special life crises events, i.e., marriage, engagement,
funeral, certain birthdays, etc. One set of religious
holidays occurred twice each month on the lunar calendar
(see Chapter VIII). The other holidays were on regular
dates, rarely less than at least one each month. On spec-
ial days the food was rich, dinner usually including pork,
fish, and fowl, whereas the diet previously described was
for regular days.

264 On special days, there was a tendency for people to
eat dinner together at a table. Often, eating had to be
in shifts for few households had more than one table while
some families were quite large (see Chapter V). Most of
the time, eating is during a single time period but in a
haphazard fashion. Each person gets food in the kitchen
from the cook and eats at the table or perhaps, out in the
[562] courtyard. Men are supposed to eat first, but it appears
[855] that small children are usually first. While most meals
are eaten at home, lunch is occasionally eaten in the

264 fields, especially if the field is quite distant or the activity is a particularly demanding one such as harvesting or transplanting. The food may be carried in a tin or may be brought to the workers by a woman or a child.

178 Everyone agrees that the diet now is the best and
262 richest in village history, both daily and especially for
511 the Pai Pai (religious festivals, see Chapter VIII) on special days. It is often remarked by villagers and professional economist alike that one of the first things a Chinese peasant will do with increased income is improve his diet. "Engel's Law" states that in a subsistence economy, over half of the income will be spent on food. It does seem that Sanlei figures are still close to this

262 percentage of income spent on food. It also appears that
511 the non-agricultural workers have a better and richer diet
[463] than the farmers, although their net worth is much less.

The poorest diets are in households which do not include a vigorous young to middle-aged man. The only exception
262 is the rich tea processor who farms by hiring labor. The
514 poorer householders do obtain better food than their financial
556 condition might warrant by the village custom of inviting guests on special days. There is no expectation that a poor man will invite a rich man to dinner. Conversely, a rich man should invite a poor man to eat. The poorer households benefit by the fact that one way a rich man earns prestige is in accordance with the number of guests he serves at a banquet.

CHAPTER III

THE ECONOMIC BASE

434 Economically, Sanlei Village is first of all a
621 farming community. Although there are other significant
sources contributing to community income, a vast majority
of the households earn all or a significant segment of
their income from agricultural activities. Only five of
the sixty-six households have no direct involvement in
agriculture.

433 There are four commercially significant agricul-
438 tural products in the Sanlei area: rice, tea, oranges,
and wood. Although a large portion of the rice and wood
production is for family consumption within the village,
the major share of the four products is produced for the
market. The market is a primary external force impinging
[628] on village activities. To participate effectively in the
market, villagers are forced to establish and maintain
extra-village social relationships.

Land and Land Tenure

423 All the land within the village boundaries of San-
lei has been classified and graded by the government. The

The

423 amount of annual taxes varies considerably according to
651 the classification and grade and various government land
reform acts affected only certain categories of land.
The most important and valuable kind of land is that
classified as paddy field, most of it grade 12 or 13. The
grade number assigned reflects productivity and conse-
quently taxes, the higher the number, the lower the value.

[435] The current market price is \$180,000.00 per chia, nearly
\$1,900.00 U.S. per acre.

311 As pointed out in the section on topography, San-
243 lei is in a narrow valley between two small mountain
chains. The only paddy land is on the terraced steps
which comprise the valley floor between the sharply rising
foothills. Paddy land totals only 13.2920 chia (see Table
3), less than 32 acres. This is divided into 200 plots
ranging in size from .0002 chia to .4716 chia. The mean
size is .0665 chia (.16 acres), but this figure does not
faithfully portray the real situation for the mean has
been increased by a few larger plots. The median figure
of .0350 (.08 acres) indicates that fifty per cent of the
plots are less than half the mean. This extreme case of
land fragmentation is partially due to a historical acci-
dent and partially due to the normal Chinese inheritance
pattern.

75
423 As previously stated, Sanlei was founded around
311 1830 by 18 hu (households) from the same community in

311 Table 3. Sanlei Land Types and Distribution
*In chia (One chia equals 2.39 acres)

<u>Land Category</u>	<u>Number of Plots</u>	<u>Median Size*</u>	<u>Mean Size*</u>	<u>Area Total*</u>
Paddy	200	.0350	.0665	13.2920
Dry	124	.0435	.1698	21.0568
Woods	103	.1440	.2936	30.2435
House	61	.0185	.0228	1.5066
Burial	17	.0230	.1629	2.7685
Other	34	.0238	.0564	1.9188
TOTAL				70.7862

175 Fukien. According to informants and confirmed by family
423 histories, the original land was improved and brought into
311 cultivation by the 18 hu acting as a corporate group. The
423 earliest settlement was a walled fort, frequently under
attack by the aborigines who inhabited the nearby moun-
tains. While some men worked in the fields, others were
detailed as lookouts and guards. The lands were owned
jointly and produce was shared communally. After a few
short years (the exact date is uncertain), a decision was
made to divide the land. There are suggestions that this
was the original plan but there are also strong hints that
the division process was one that caused considerable dis-
cord and may have been the outgrowth of a previous con-
flict. In any case, each large piece of land, by type and
location, was divided into 18 equal plots, one for each
household. The matching of household to plot was accom-
plished by withdrawing a slip of paper from a hat with
chopsticks. Since there were several original large plots,

423 each household received a number of one-eighteenth sections. Subsequent to the division, some households continued developing land, creating additional plots more remote from the village center. Additional households migrated in and others died off. Some plots were purchased and others were developed. This historical pattern meant the villagers had started with smaller than average plot sizes.

428 The traditional Chinese pattern of equal inheritance by all the sons compounded the problem. In practice, equal inheritance often meant that if a man had four sons and four plots of land, each son obtained one-fourth of each plot. Conceivably, each son could have received one of the four plots, but plots regularly vary in quality and convenience to the village center and it usually proved impossible to find four that were equal.

423 There were counter-trends to the fragmentation. An individual might inherit two neighboring pieces from father and uncle or he might buy a piece neighboring his own. There was some consolidation by trading. Men who owned two small adjacent plots in two different locations could trade one plot in order to own two in only one location. This occurred but was infrequent because of the necessity for establishing equality. The only such consolidation that took place during our stay in the village, involved a trade of a slightly more valuable .008 chia

423 piece for a .009 chia piece plus a sum of cash, and was
the culmination of a two-year negotiation process.

311 The registered plot sizes are not directly related
243 to the size of the paddy fields. Larger plots may be
divided into two or more fields and some smaller plots are
combined into one field. Both the extreme fragmentation
and the narrowness of the terraces contribute to the small
size of paddies. Correlated with the small size is the
complete absence of gasoline-powered cultivators which
have become so popular on the plains. This degree of frag-
mentation does not permit the most efficient use of the
311 land. The government has begun a program of land consoli-
423 dation in other parts of the island (Department of Infor-
659 mation, Taiwan Provincial Government, 1962:78-83). Al-
though villagers are aware of the program and believe it
would be a valuable step for the village, everyone fears
he would not get a reasonable share in a government-
ordered consolidation, i.e., he would give up pieces more
valuable than he would receive. Although theoretically
the process should be seen as a zero-sum game, no vil-
lager can be found who thinks he would be a winner or
even break even.

423 Prior to the above-discussed land consolidation,
427 Taiwan underwent an extensive land reform program which
656 proceeded through three steps. The first step was rent
reduction, enforced in April of 1949, which limited farm

423 rent to a maximum of 37.5 per cent of the total main crop
427 yield (C. Chen, 1961). Since the usual rent in the Sanlei
656 areas averaged about fifty per cent of the main crop, this
reduction immediately affected the economic situation of
village tenants. It had a secondary effect of reducing
the land value of tenanted land because the rental income
was lowered and flexibility was lost due to the require-
ments for a minimum lease of six years, binding on heirs,
successors, and assigns.

423 The second step involved the sale of public land
in a series of six successive sales between 1948 and 1958
(Koo, 1968:36) with most plots sold after 1951 (Koo, 1968:
35). There was no paddy land affected by these sales in
Sanlei although some villagers did acquire mountain land
in the various sales. According to villagers and by nota-
tion on land records, the sale of mountain land to tenants
in Sanlei had actually begun under the Japanese.

The third step was the Land-to-the-Tiller Act of
1953 which was designed to accomplish three basic objec-
tives:

(1) to help tenants acquire landownership without
increasing financial burden; (2) to protect the
interests of landlords; and (3) to convert land-
holdings into industrial holdings (Koo, 1968:37).

In essence, land was compulsorily purchased from certain
landlords and sold on easy terms to their tenants. The

423 property subject to forced sale included a landlord's excess over 3.0 chia, land owned jointly, and land owned [427] by a lineage or temple (C. Chen, 1961). This too had little effect in Sanlei because the village never had high rates of tenancy. It is estimated that 75% of the paddy land was owner-cultivated before the land reform program. As described above, much of Sanlei land is not of high quality. Traditionally, there has been a higher percentage of owner-operated fields where most land is low quality (Kirby, 1960:70). In the Land-to-the-Tiller program, only 15 Sanlei paddy plots totaling 1.0175 chia, less than 8% of the paddy land, changed hands. Three of these plots were part of one man's excess holdings over 3.0 chia and one was owned by a temple. The remaining plots were lost because a tenant was renting land held by joint owners.

There were no large land-holdings in the area immediately around Sanlei but large holdings were common closer to Hsin Tien where land grades of 6 or 7 are common. One landlord who owned 30 chia of paddy fields lived in T'oulei but only a small portion of his holdings were located in Talei Li.

A typical case to illustrate a transfer (forced sale) was that of Liao Mou-tu and Liao Mou-ti, two of the wealthier villagers (Liao Mou-tu's chia is diagramed in Figure 5). These two men were brothers whose household had divided but subsequently, had jointly purchased .05

423 chia of paddy land two years prior to the Land-to-the-Tiller act. Due to its location, they let it out to a tenant and, in turn, rented as tenants an equivalent piece adjacent to their respective main holdings. They lost the purchased piece to the tenant but were unable to claim the rented equivalent piece since it was owned by a small landlord, one with less than 3.0 chia. There were several [60] similar cases in the li. Often there was bitterness generated in the exchanges for the landlord-tenants were sometimes ch'in t'ang (agnatic relatives by virtue of possessing the same surname) and even ch'in tsu (agnatic relatives with demonstrated descent).

311 The second most important category was dry land which was quite fragmented but less so than paddy land. The total of 21.0568 chia is divided into 124 plots for a mean size of .1698 chia. The range is from .0003 chia to 2.5435 chia. The medium of .0435 chia once again indicates most plots are considerably smaller than the mean. 244 This land is devoted primarily to tea, oranges, sweet po- 245 311 tatoes and miscellaneous vegetables. The biggest plot, 2.5435 chia, is a single tea farm cultivated by hired labor but owned by a Sanlei villager. Dry land typically is grade 19, less valuable than paddy fields.

311 The third and largest category is mountain or wooded land, 30.2435 chia. Some of this has been left in

311 natural vegetation and forestation but much is being devel-
[423]oped. A considerable quantity of the mountain land in
Sanlei and also outside village boundaries is owned by the
government. Some has been purchased by villagers for the
427 government is encouraging its development. Prior to 1962,
435 it was leased by the government for 25% of the main crop
but now, rent is fixed and reasonable, on long-term leases
435 at \$380.00 per chia per year. The current price of moun-
tain land is about \$20,000.00 per chia if undeveloped and
ranging up to \$100,000.00 per chia if planted with excel-
lent crops such as mature fruit trees.

361 The remaining categories are important but not
311 economically significant. Houseland land is that on which
the house is built but also includes the very small vege-
table gardens adjacent to the houses. Vegetable gardens
are located near the house so as to be convenient for the
deposit of night soil. Burial land takes up a considerable
part of the community. As previously stated, this area has
many good feng shui locations, most of them on steep
slopes. Other types of land categories include temple,
roads, and worthless plots.

423 The vast majority of the land in Sanlei remains
either owner-cultivated or leased from the government.
Moreover, the owner-cultivators tend to live in Sanlei or
427 an adjacent village. Some tenants are renting from a
fellow villager as illustrated by the neighbor who leases

427 .17 chia of paddy field from the barber. The absentee landlord is relatively rare, often a former villager who migrated to the city.

123 Sanlei villagers also own land outside the village
423 but we were only permitted to check official records inside the village boundaries of Sanlei and Erhlei. It is difficult to obtain accurate figures through interviews since there is a fear of tax increases. As a result, the disparity between villagers' reports and official holdings was striking. Records of outside holdings kept being refined all during the study by following men to work in the fields. People would reveal more about their neighbors' holdings than their own.

423 Some of the categories and grades are inaccurately
127 recorded on official records. No piece is overgraded because the township land official is contacted to report losses, i.e., caused by erosion, in order to have the taxes reduced. On the other hand, improved land is not called to the attention of officials. Some of the dry land is really paddy land and some of the mountain land is now dry
651 land with orange orchards or tea fields. Over a four year period there was a Joint Commission for Rural Reconstruction (J.C.R.R.) and farmers' association sponsored soil conservation program for mountain land. When a farmer constructed proper terracing, he was rewarded with United
[654]
[651] States surplus flour. Only about 60% of the mountain-land

423 owners participated because of a fear the improved land
[65] would be given a higher grade resulting in increased
taxes. Although reassessment has still not occurred, non-
participants keep saying it soon will.

Irrigation

132 Rainfall in northern Taiwan is reasonably adequate
133 every month of the year. There are small mountains run-
ning parallel to the village on each side with a small
312 stream down the middle. The mountains produce a consider-
able water run-off which is channeled to the paddy fields
where needed. Only about once every seven or eight years
is there a serious shortage of water but there are slight
shortages yearly in June and July. There are no water
irrigation associations because there is so much surplus
water and so many places that it can be tapped, that the
small short channels are maintained informally by farmers
in the few fields using each source. Only once in fifteen
months did we observe a conflict over water levels in
spite of these extremely informal arrangements. However,
children get in trouble when they play in the fields and
break down the barriers and let water fall below requisite
levels.

Rice

243 Paddy fields are considered to be the most valuable
311 kind of agricultural land. From the earliest inception of

243 the village, the flat land has been largely devoted to
311 irrigated fields for the cultivation of rice. As specified
above, the available water from the mountainsides has al-
243 ways permitted irrigation with a minimum of effort. Sanlei
433 is a double-cropping area, most paddy fields having two
crops of rice each year with the occasional substitution
of sweet potatoes for rice. In the last ten to fifteen
years, there has been the inauguration of a third crop
of vegetables in the paddy fields for about half of the
fields while the other half stands idle.

242 There are two major varieties of rice, the native
243 tsai lai and the p'eng lai¹ which was introduced by the
[197] Japanese. P'eng lai has a much higher yield, brings a
better market price, and especially important today, is
much more responsive in yield increase to applications of
fertilizer. However, it is somewhat less resistant to
weather, insects, and disease, the latter two especially
significant for the second crop. According to local in-
[134] formants, p'eng lai requires rich and deep soil. Since
the good soil in Sanlei is about four to six inches deep,
insufficient for p'eng lai, experiments with p'eng lai
have often proved disastrous and today, only two or three
farmers plant it and only in fields closest to the bottom
of the valley, next to the river. As a result, tsai lai
is the major form grown in Talei Li.

243 In the middle of December (Solar Calendar),² after three days soaking, rice seeds for the first crop are scattered thickly on a well-prepared fertilized field. They take forty to fifty days to grow to a sufficient size for transplanting. In the latter part of January, the field is prepared. It takes one man with a water buffalo [23] about six or seven days to prepare a one chia field. While there are only two water buffalo in Sanlei village, a [435] nearby village specializes in water buffalo. A man with equipment and buffalo can be hired for \$20.00 per day or the buffalo alone may be rented for \$60.00 to \$70.00 per day. If human fertilizer (night soil) is used, a liberal quantity should now be applied.

243 Transplanting is a hard job, rated as work primar-
462 ily but not exclusively for men as is the other most difficult job of harvesting. All extremely hard work is considered proper for men only but there is no corresponding notion that light work should be reserved for females. At times, men are doing light work while females are doing medium heavy work. There is a bonus of five meals per day for male or female workers alike when engaged in transplanting or harvesting rice, the two jobs rated as the hardest in the community. It would take a seven to eight man crew to transplant a single chia of paddy field. However, given the small size of the fields, most work groups rarely exceed three or four adult males. The planting by

243 hand is in bunches of 4 to 7 rice seedlings, 6 to 7 inches
462 apart with one large bunch placed in a corner of the field
for use in a second transplanting to replace thinned-out
spots in the field. Men are expected to be able to main-
tain the rows and spacing without the wooden guides needed
by women. A woman occasionally transplants rice in her
[463] own family fields but it is comparatively rare for women
[465] to be hired for transplanting. When a woman is hired for
transplanting or harvesting, she earns a regular women's
wage (discussed later) but does receive the previously
[857] mentioned five-meal bonus. A young boy is a normal part
of each transplanting crew with the responsibility of
running errands, bringing food and water, and supplying
the men with seedlings.

243 There are normally two weedings and occasionally
a third; the first is 20-25 days after transplanting and
the second and third, 10-15 days after a previous weeding.

242 Chemical fertilizer is applied before weeding. Weeding is
243 performed on hands and knees. Once more, women seldom
[462] participate in rice-field activities outside their own
[474] family fields and that too is infrequent. There may be an
occasional second application of fertilizer which is
available from the farmers' association for cash or for
rice. It is slightly cheaper in town for cash but no
credit facilities are available. The fields will be
sprayed with insecticide once or twice.

243 Under the best conditions, it is 110 days from transplanting to harvest although this period may range up to 130 days dependent on weather and the particular sub-variety of tsai lai rice used. Harvesting activities cover the latter part of the May through the early part of June. The usual work crew of five or six men take nearly four days to harvest a chia of land. The rice is threshed in a rotary foot-pedal machine, several of which are owned in the area, and then carried in baskets to the house court-yard where it takes three or four days in the sun to dry. The mounds of rice must be regularly turned so that all parts will be exposed to the sun. Women and children usually do the necessary raking but invariably, a man makes the decision when the crop is sufficiently dry. One chia of land produces about 6,000 chin (8,000 pounds) for the first crop. The rice straw is bundled and used for compost or sometimes sold to brokers from the city. For the first crop, due to the shortage of labor and great press. of time, much of it is plowed under to enrich the soil.

In the meantime, the second crop activities start long before the first crop is harvested. The seeds are cast in the second seedbed in a manner similar to the first at the end of April or early in May. However, given the warmer weather, they only take about 30 to 40 days to be ready for transplanting and only about half as much seed

243 is needed, about 50 chin per chia.

The period commencing with the harvest of the first crop and ending with completion of transplanting the second is the busiest of the year. It takes a considerable number of people to harvest. By design, not all land is ready for harvesting at once, because the first crop transplanting is somewhat staggered; sub-varieties mature at different rates; and finally, the land closest to the river and road gets more heat and matures quicker than that closest to the mountains. Contributing to the shortage of labor during this period is the need to prepare the field for the second crop and transplanting. It is desired to complete transplanting in a field within ten days after it is harvested but this is difficult to accomplish. The modal time is 15 days with anything beyond 20 days considered a small disaster.

243 It is during the above one month period that women
462 are most often to be observed working in the rice fields.

In spite of strong sentiment to restrict work on rice to men only, the shortage of labor requires letting women share activities but only as a last resort. Some men who have commuting jobs in the city are able to obtain time off at this period to help with the harvest and part-time coal miners remain home from the mines and help. As far as I could tell, most of the women would just as soon avoid work in the rice field as they claim it is very hard

243 on the back. However, two features of the job are attrac-
462 tive to women if they are hired. That evening, they are
entertained with dinner and do not have to help prepare
dinner or clean up afterwards. Second, some women seem-
ingly enjoy the discomfort to be observed in men watching
women doing a man's job. The women who claimed this senti-
ment were all over forty, but younger ones smiled and gig-
gled when this was repeated to a group.

243 Procedures after transplanting are similar to those
described for the first crop: weeding, fertilizer, and
insecticide but due to warmer weather seldom does it take
more than 110 days from transplanting to harvest. More
insecticide is needed because of the warmer weather. When
the top of rice starts to bend with weight, the field is
dried out in preparation for the next crop of vegetables.
The second rice crop in Sanlei produces about as much as
the first crop, occasionally more. This is rather unusual
for Taiwan as a whole and is due to the fortunate abundance
of water in Talei Li. Both crops are much larger than
[433] earlier in history due to improved strains and technology
but the total production is less in Talei Li than the gen-
eral average for Taiwanese paddy fields because of the
poor and shallow soil.

824 Rice straw from the second crop is bundled and sold
412 to brokers from Taipei who come out with carts although
438 women gather and save some of the rice straw to make

824 brooms. There are no permanent relations established with
412 the city brokers; it is strictly a "price" sale.
438

437 The rice is used to pay land taxes, to exchange
[824] for fertilizer, and for home consumption. Because of the
size of the population and the limited area of paddy land,
surprisingly little makes its way to the market for cash.
Some is exchanged for farm labor at a discount over the
rate it can be purchased in town to the benefit of the
laborer who feels he gets more for his labor and of the
farmer who saves by cutting out the middle man and avoid-
ing transportation expenses. (Labor work groups and ex-
change labor are discussed more fully in Chapter VI.)

Tea

245 Approximately ten years after the Japanese assumed
[177] control, tea was introduced into the Talei area from other
parts of Northern Taiwan where it was previously well
developed. By 1915, there were large harvests in Talei Li.
[433] From its inception, tea has been a major cash crop pro-
duced for a national and international market. Tea can be
grown on the rather steep slope land surrounding the vil-
lage. All but the shallower slopes are improved by creat-
ing a series of steps for the tea plants. Rows of tea
plants must be a yard apart, but because of the steepness
of the slopes, most steps are only one or two yards wide
and therefore, contain only one or two rows per terrace.

245 Tea was extremely important and valuable in the
433 area during the nineteen twenties and thirties. During
458 World War II, because of the disruption of transportation
facilities and Japan's war position, there was serious
curtailment of the market causing great losses in the li.
There was another spurt following the war for a few years
245 but again, the area is in a serious tea decline. The vil-
433 lagers believe that Taiwan is not getting its fair share
439 of the world market because the Chinese (Mainlander) qual-
ity control system is not as good as that of the Japanese,
i.e., they ship inferior products which are labeled super-
ior. There does appear to be some truth in this belief.

[662] An official at the farmers' association in Hsin Tien ex-
plained that some government inspectors were recently
fined for accepting bribes from tea brokers for falsely
placing tea in higher grades to obtain better prices.
Maintenance of proper quality control is a common problem
in Taiwan. Every few months, the newspapers headlined a
Japanese rejection of a boatload of bananas from Taiwan
because of poor quality.

In spite of quality control problems, the major
part of the decline in tea marketing is due to the fact
that tea farming requires much labor and Taiwan, with its
rapidly growing standard of living and increasing labor
costs, is likely to be priced out of the international
market as compared with India and Ceylon. Moreover,

245 according to the government, many of the tea plantations
433 are old and degenerate with only a few containing the
439 newest and best varieties of tea. Since a tea plant may
242 remain productive and commercially valuable for 20 to 30
years, tea farming is unresponsive to rapid changes in the
world market and requires a considerable investment to
substitute improved varieties. Comparatively, if the
market drops in asparagus, the farmer simply does not plant
it the next year but when a tea plant is set out, it is
expected to yield for at least twenty years. Although
the government experimental station in Ping Chen (not far
from Sanlei) with the help of the J.C.R.R. is promoting
an improved type of Assam tea, the variety is not likely
to be adopted in Sanlei because of the current replacement
of exhausted tea plants with newly developing fruit cultivation to be discussed in the next section.

245 Tea seeds are sown within ten days of the winter
solstice, about the middle of December. In about one year,
they are one foot high and may be transplanted to the
mountain fields, 9000 plants per chia, during the cold
weather in December or January. One year later, harvesting
may begin but reasonable levels of production will
not be realized until the tree is three or four years old.
The tea plant has an average economic life of about 25
years but there is a tendency to extend it too far. There
are four kinds of leaves to be harvested in a single year.

245 According to percentage of yield, they are spring leaves
433 (50%), summer leaves (25%), autumn leaves (20%), and winter leaves (5%). The bulk of the harvesting commences in early April and ends in September. The 9000 trees (one chia) will produce about 1200 chin (1600 pounds) of green leaves in a year and these will be reduced to 300 chin of dry leaves.

245 Maintenance of the tea field features heavy cultivation of the soil around each plant in January and light weeding in March, June, August, and November. Sometimes plants are fertilized but this may be omitted for several years. It is felt that most insecticides would spoil the tea so they are rarely applied. The flowers necessary to produce the highest grade tea (Jasmine) are interplanted between the tea bushes.
[242]

245 In contrast with rice production which is primarily
462 a man's task with the occasional help of women, tea production is primarily a woman's task with the occasional help of men on the basis of total man hours committed. Men do the heavy cultivation and the planting and transplanting. The first task is male because of the previous standard based on how heavy a task is rated and the latter two because tasks which require high levels of technical skill and knowledge are always male. Work which can be learned with little effort and requires few important decisions is assigned to women. Women do most of the weeding

245 although occasionally men may help. Only women harvest
462 tea and a man who harvested would be a source of much
amusement. Even boys, although they do some work normally
465 performed by women, never harvest tea. Harvesting is
245 compensated on a piece-work basis, \$5.00 for each 4 chin
of tea leaves. The best girl could pick close to 30 chin
in a day but this would be a day of hard work from early
[562] morning to late evening. Since a man's normal wage for
weeding is \$50.00 and a woman's is \$30.00, any man picking
tea on a piece-work basis would earn closer to \$30.00
than \$50.00 and would thusly, be considered to be working
for woman's wages.

465 There now seems to be something sacrosanct about
562 the \$50.00 wage for an experienced man. Good and poor
workers both get the same \$50.00 for a day's labor, but
the best workers are able to obtain work more frequently.
Women, for other than piecework, get \$30.00 per day but
this rate is subject to some bargaining. A couple of
skilled village women earn as much as \$35.00 or \$40.00 per
465 day for some tasks. Boys earn less than women receiving
561 little increments of increase as they mature until reach-
ing women's wages and slightly beyond. There are seldom
any increments between \$35.00 and \$50.00, the latter step
achieved in a sudden single jump when a boy becomes a
[284] fully-fledged man. There is no clear-cut life cycle event
to mark this stage which is not directly related to

465 chronological age and varies with the physiological matur-
561 ity of the individual and his ability to demand this level
[884] of respect from village men. However, it is hard for a
young man to get much work for although he must be paid an
experienced man's wage, he lacks both experience and
reputation.

245 After tea leaves are picked, they are spread out in
463 large shallow round bamboo baskets to dry and then sold
to one of the five tea processors in Talei Li, seldom to
outsiders. Three processors operate in Sanlei and two in
Ehlei although one of the Sanlei processors is now quite
inactive, only processing tea grown in his own fields.

[477] Competition between processors is quite fierce but not on
a price basis. Relations are built up between processor
and farmer and tend to last a long time (see Chapter VI).

245 Tea processing is primarily a man's task. Different kinds
[462] of tea are produced dependent on the amount or lack of
fermentation, the types of leaves, and the additives:

green, red (black), and jasmine and in two or three grades
each. The hard part of the work is maintaining the fires
as the leaves are roasted in large metal tins. After

[462] roasting, the leaves are placed back in the drying baskets
[887] for sorting, another task for women, but in this case, old
women. The work is tedious but not hard and can be learned
with a half-hour's instruction. On a piece-work basis, an
- [465] old woman can easily earn \$20.00 to \$25.00 per day.

442 The tea processor sells his completed product to
439 wholesalers and retailers in Hsin Tien and Taipei travel-
ing into the city once every two or three days during the
[443] busy season. Although there is a big wholesale market,
each processor tries to build a network of regular retail
or packaging customers to even out price fluctuations.
These price changes may be quite large, leaving him in a
precarious position. The tea processors and some of the
larger tea growers become quite familiar with market
conditions all over the world. One man from Erhlei was
formerly part of a big wholesale firm in Hsin Tien and
once traveled to mainland China and Japan on tea business.
Some of the village tea recently went into a shipment of
100 cases to the United States and several different vil-
lagers told us about it when asking our help in encourag-
ing the United States to buy more Talei Li tea. Taiwan's
[462] best market for tea at present is Morocco. Tea marketing
demonstrates another facet of the division of labor in
that relations with wholesale buyers and sellers are for
men as is the management of a business.

462 The tea business and its development has undoubt-
463 edly improved the status of women. No reason can be found
for the abundant use of women in growing tea, but early
histories of Taiwan all stress the use of large numbers of
girls to pick tea (Takekoshi, 1907:240; Davidson, 1903:
381-5). As tea growing technology diffused, the custom of

462 involving females spread with it. When it first came to
463 Talei Li, village women began to be employed in tea activi-
ties but for the busiest harvesting season, girls were
brought to the area in work teams, some from as far as
Mainland China. There were many tales told by village men
about their sexual exploits with the tea girls who usually
stayed in crude huts in the mountains during the busy har-
vesting season. In the late nineteen-thirties, the outside
girls began to be slowly replaced by village women to the
point that no outside teams have been used since 1949.
This change keeps the wages in the village and also helps
allow village women to be economic assets.

Oranges

245 The third major cash crop in the area is citrus
433 fruit, primarily oranges, but with a minor emphasis on
pomelo. The potential income has not yet been realized in
spite of heavy investments. As additional mountain land
is developed or as old tea plants have expired, orange
trees are planted. In the early nineteen-forties, tea
profits were poor and tea farmers were searching for a new
product with the help of the government. A Sanlei villager
acquired knowledge of the techniques of growing oranges by
working five years in an orchard 50 miles south of Taipei.
When he returned to Sanlei, he wanted to try raising
[1m] oranges himself. The Japanese aided introduction of oran-
ges by renting him a piece of mountain land at a very low

245
433
[177] rate and by paying half the cost of his first transplant-
ing of 50 seedlings (trees about 25" high) in 1943. Be-
cause there is a long period between the planting of a
seedling and first sale of oranges, it took a very long
period before other villagers followed his example and
as late as 1966, only a minority of the orchards were in
full mature production although many others are rapidly
approaching maturity.

New products are rarely adopted until farmers can
observe the financial returns and since it takes a heavy
investment in cash and labor over a long period of time
before any reasonable return is achieved with orange or-
chards, the diffusion process has been slow.

245 In January of the first year, seeds are cast in
seedling beds which have been well prepared by intermixing
earth and night soil. Weeding is continued monthly during
the first year with careful light applications of fertili-
zer in March and June and insecticide when needed. In
November, a second bed is prepared for the seedlings which
are transplanted in December when about 14" high. During
the second year, they are fertilized four times, sprayed
with insecticide once every two months, and weeded once
every two months, the latter two in alternate months. In
January of the third year when seedlings are about 30 to
36 inches high, the upper part is cut off and a branch
from a good mature tree is grafted in its place. Ten days

245 later, all but the main bud are trimmed off. Activities during the balance of the year include monthly applications of fertilizer and insecticide and bimonthly weeding. In November, the beds are prepared with the holes four to six yards apart and the final transplanting is accomplished within ten days of the winter solstice. Aside from extra watering the first few weeks after transplanting to supplement the rain, the routine of care remains the same throughout the life of the tree. The ground is cultivated once per year and both weeded and fertilized twice each year in February and August. Insect control is monthly in the warm weather as needed but rarely less than three times a year.

Trees start bearing fruit the seventh year. The major harvesting months are in November, December, and January, starting when tea harvesting slackens and ending about the time when the paddy fields should be prepared.

245 The 7th year the 60 trees which fill one chia of land will
433 produce about 500 chin of oranges and the 8th, 2000 chin.

Full mature production commences the ninth or tenth year and dependent on insects, disease, and weather, production

245 will range from 8,000 to 12,000 chin per chia. Diseases

242 and insects have only become problems since the increased

[474] amounts of land have been devoted to oranges. The farmers' association provides expert advice in dealing with problems as they arise, but officials in the Hsin Tien office

245
242
474 are not sure that they can control all potential problems.

442
474 Almost all the oranges not used in home consumption are sold through the Fruit Cooperative Association in Pan Chiao. They may be delivered to a warehouse there or to one in Taipei. All orange growers belong to the cooperative and the li has three representatives on its board of control. The price received is dependent on grade (size) and quality and ranges from \$2.50 to \$4.00 per chin with an average of \$3.00.

245
433 As can be seen by the above time sequence, it takes a considerable investment before any return is achieved. Land must be purchased and taxes paid each year for eight years or rent must be paid for the same period without income. At the same time, substantial labor inputs are required for transplanting, weeding, fertilizing, and insect control and cost of insecticide and fertilizer is not inconsequential. Much of the savings from the increased yields for other crops and from non-farm employment is being devoted to orchard development with high returns expected, just around the corner.

245
462 Orange orchards are reasonably new and a firm tradition with regard to the division of labor has not yet crystallized as it has for most other village tasks. Transplanting and fertilizing is strictly a male operation as is all skilled farming. Although males and females alike weed and pick oranges, females are beginning to

245
462 perform a majority of the weeding. For a day's weeding,
245 a man earns \$50.00 and a woman, \$30.00 but a man does not
465 appear to pull two-thirds more weeds in a day than a woman
462 although that is the wage differential. Both men and
women work on their own fields, but if someone is hired
to weed, it is now likely to be a female or a boy who
245 earns wages equal to the women's level. Harvesting is
462 neither heavy nor hard, and because it is compensated at
piece-work rates, neither sex yet seems to be favored.
Once again, marketing and dealing with the cooperative
[464] is strictly for men. Harvesting oranges takes place when
the tea harvesting is at its slackest period and therefore,
introduction of citrus orchards has made it possible for
Talei women to earn income during the entire year.

Miscellaneous Cash Crops

433 There are currently no other important commercial
245 food crops grown in Sanlei Ts'un. During our study, two
of the most progressive farmers in the village, brothers
in a divided household previously introduced in connection
with the plot of land which was lost during the land
reform program, made their first try with 600 banana
trees. Returns have been good for two other villages
about three miles away. The younger brother's son was
sent to observe methods in one of the two villages at the
farm of a ch'in ch'i (affinal relative) and the family

243 consulted with extension agents and the farmers' association. Other villagers are watching closely.

244 The village is close to Taipei and seemingly could
242 share in the truck garden market, but no village in the
474 immediate area other than one village, about two miles distant, participates. The latter was chosen by the farmers' association in Hsin Tien as a model village for vegetable production. After seeds, assistance, and guidance were provided by three technological experts who were assigned nearly full-time, the returns have been very high. The experts have withdrawn except for one who returns periodically for consultation as the innovated system is now self-generating. That is, it appears the village will continue to raise vegetables for the market without further stimulation.

Other villages have observed the techniques of growing and marketing vegetables but there has yet been little diffusion. The techniques are considered complex, the dangers of market fluctuation high, and the experience regarding potential damages by insect and weather nonexistent. There is interest however and the passage of time is likely to result in copying.

241 As can be seen in the detailed descriptions provided
463 for growing other crops, farm technology is highly complex and villagers regard a skilled farmer as a master of a trade. Although anyone can do some farming tasks,

241 the necessary skill to make correct decisions takes con-
463 siderable time to acquire. One of the reasons for this is
the fact that some problems appear rarely. The infrequency
does not imply a lack of seriousness for the loss of a full
crop only once every fifteen or twenty years is still a
disaster. The infrequency of some kinds of problems does
244 delay the introduction of new crops. Moreover, this belief
463 that farming is a highly skilled trade inhibits the full
562 use of women. It is believed that women do not have suf-
ficient time to learn all the skills because of their
household responsibilities. Additionally, there are re-
strictions on male-female interaction and since an indi-
vidual learns part of his farming skills by talking at
length to other farmers, women are handicapped by the re-
strictions on communication with skilled farmers who are
presently all males.

244 Sweet potatoes are important in the village, but
[231] were never grown for sale until recently. A small nearby
dairy, one year old, keeps its cows inside a building and
feeds them by hand. Sweet potato leaves are purchased
from Sanlei villagers to supplement the hand-picked grass
[438] and commercial fodder. Four older men cultivate bamboo
shoots, minor amounts of which go to the market in Hsin
443 Tien. Vegetables of various kinds are grown in the village
although only a few are sold and those only through the

443 local stores (20% discount) or to the nearby mine dormi-
tories (10% less than town prices with free delivery).

Subsistence Crops

243 By this category, I refer to those items grown for
244 home consumption. A major item is sweet potatoes which
can be grown on dry land in small scattered locations.
Occasionally, they are planted at the end of the second
crop in a paddy field but in this case, it is not possible
to plant the first rice crop the following year. However,
the yield is high and part of the field can be used for
262 the rice seedlings. Sweet potatoes are an important part
252 of the local diet, particularly in the form of a fried
231 sweet-potato pancake, steamed, or as a kind of mush. Al-
so, both the leaves and potatoes are excellent for animal
251 fodder. Sliced in chips and dried in the sun, sweet po-
tatoes can be readily preserved for future consumption.
244 When sweet potatoes, which take six months to mature, are
planted after the second rice crop, raddish is inter-
[251] planted in a multiple cropping technique. Raddishes,
which only take 60 days to mature, are dried and preserved
with salt or pickled.

244 Almost every house, even those with no other agri-
cultural activities, will have a small nearby vegetable
garden. Several of the very small plots of land away from
the households are also devoted to vegetables, but not any

244 great distance due to the necessity for liberal application of excrement, human and animal. Although night soil is rated higher than chemical fertilizers, farmers find [462] using it distasteful. Application of excrement is usually by men, although women do most of the tending of vegetable gardens including planting. With rare exceptions, only sweet potatoes and bamboo shoots are ever grown far from the household.

The kinds of vegetables vary with the season, i.e., [443] certain weather is best for certain items. Currently, most vegetables are available in the Hsin Tien market [262] year around. However, village menus stress the vegetables which are maturing in the village. Even if a household is out of a certain vegetable in its own plot, if it is now in season, it will still be purchased because the price in Hsin Tien is probably very low. Important vegetables include bamboo shoots, cucumbers, green pumpkin, squash, beans, ginger, leafy vegetables, onions, leeks, [263] and cauliflower. Soy beans are raised and many households prepare the soy sauce without which few meals are possible.

Animal Husbandry

231 Important animals for food in the village are pigs, [235] chickens, and ducks. As previously stated, there are only three water buffalo in the village. A count of animals made on November 4, 1966 is used as a basis for the discussion of animal husbandry but variance would not be great

231 for any other period. Although detailed breakdowns vary, the total number of animals in the village was always about the same. Six of the sixty-six households have a dog and eight have cats. Cats and dogs were rarely kept in the village prior to the last ten years for villagers believe pets are a sign of affluence. Three households own a total of 13 turkeys, and two others, six geese, both considered to be luxury items.

[262] Chickens are the most popular item. Fifty-seven of the sixty-six households were raising (for meat rather than eggs) a total of 421 chickens, an average of over [443] seven each. Instead of hatching eggs, chicks are purchased from the peddler who comes through about once a month or are carried in from Hsin Tien. Chickens are 262 rarely consumed as part of the regular diet. Instead, they 574 are eaten as part of the periodic religious feasts (see Chapter IX) or on special occasions such as weddings or funerals. Since chickens eat scraps and largely fend for themselves, they cost little to raise and add significant quantities of protein to the diet for the festivals during which chickens are eaten are not infrequent or sporadic. A typical household would normally plan on having chicken 235 or duck about three or four times each month. The raising of ducks is similar to chickens but less common, 16 households owning 74 ducks. Every duck-owning household also owns chickens.

23| The biggest investment is in pigs which are expensive animals. Forty-four households own 113 pigs, one household with fourteen, one six, one five, and the rest, three or less. Typically, a farm household raises one or two at a time in pens with a thatched roof attached to the house or in a nearby open building with a thatched
[435] roof. Pigs are fed rice chaf, scraps, sweet potatoes including leaves, and compressed soy bean curd cakes (\$195.00 each) which are purchased from the peddler who comes through the village three times a week.

There is a butchering place for pigs in Pouti, about half way down the road to Hsin Tien which serves an area including about 900 families, nearly all rural (see Figure 1). About eight or nine pigs are slaughtered daily. On the first and fifteenth of the month, twice as many are slaughtered (see Chapter IX) and on festival occasions,
23| there may be many more. Before a pig can be slaughtered,
65| it is necessary to purchase a permit the previous day from the township office in Hsin Tien at a cost of \$340.00, reduced \$5.00 if the pig is for home consumption rather than sale. For a very big festival, the township office will send a clerk to the village to collect the tax. The pig is taken on a hand-hauled cart to Pouti early in the morning for slaughtering. A policeman is available there to
[625] take the permit and officially stamp the pig. The best weight for slaughtering is 180 chin although 200 chin is

231 considered acceptable by rural people. It is said that.
[368] city people prefer a pig of 160 chin or less because they
[261] prefer less fat.

231 Two years ago the slaughtering tax was only
433 \$280.00. Under the Japanese, a similar slaughtering permit
651 was required but the tax then represented less than 10% of
648 the pig's value whereas now it is close to 20%. In any
case, the high tax plus the high cost of the bean cakes
has created the belief that no one can make a profit rais-
ing pigs although the government, through the farmers'
231 association, is encouraging farmers to raise pigs. The
433 village Small Unit Head and Vice Unit Head of the asso-
474 ciation have attended several meetings concerned with en-
couraging hog production. Although they have passed out
much literature, they have had little success in promoting
pig production. No small part of their failure is because
they too believe that there is little profit in pigs al-
though in order to set an example, both are raising more
231 pigs than the average villager. Pigs seem more valuable
241 for their manure in making compost than for meat. Only
farmers who have ready sources of pig feed and a need for
231 fertilizer raise pigs. There is one major exception, a
[583] family planning a wedding may raise a pig for the feast.
Although the amount saved is not much, the cost goes out
a little at a time rather than a big cash expenditure at
the time of the wedding. Only one Sanlei man presently
is trying to raise pigs for a profit.

000 is trying to raise pigs for a profit.

262 One slaughtered pig is returned daily to Erhlei
443 for local consumption. Both stores in Erhlei but neither
of the stores in Sanlei sell pork although Sanlei stores
do sell dried fish and canned fish or canned meat. Ig-
noring the few people who bring meat home from the city,
one pig is sufficient daily for about 150 families. The
daily consumption for a family of six (average) would
rarely exceed one or one and a half chín (less than two
pounds) except on special occasions.

Wood

245 Wood is another agricultural profit-making product
313 that grossly falls under the rubric of agriculture because
the trees are cultivated rather than natural. Tree seed-
lings are transplanted in December or January and then
cultivated each August and weeded each January during the
first five years. They then require little subsequent
care. They are cut when about one or two inches in diam-
eter for firewood for cooking. Some wood is used right
after cutting although most is left to dry out first.
314 About thirty per cent is converted into charcoal by spec-
ialists in another village just down the road on the way
313 to Hsin Tien. There are two lumber yards there which
443 regularly buy wood at a standard set price if it is trans-
ported to the door. The piles in the two yards can be
seen from the bus window so that everyone knows when they

143

313 are so low a yard is ready to buy more wood.

[443]
[311] A great deal of the mountain land is devoted to
[435] wood, especially many of the steeper slopes. The con-
tiguosness of the village to the city of Taipei helps
make the wood valuable for its relatively low price per
unit of volume would soon consume any long-distance trans-
portation cost.

313 Wood bundles are heavy and usually, given the long
[482] distance to the forests, must be carried by hand down the
mountains to the roadside or village. Wood for sale is
[462] usually carried by men on a piece-work basis with the rate
[465] adjusted according to the distance to be traveled. The
rate is such that it is difficult to earn the \$50.00 level
of men's regular wages without a dawn to dusk effort but
\$40.00 to \$45.00 can usually be achieved in the regular
8-1/2 hour day and this is higher than regular women's
wages.

462 In agreement with the principle that females are
responsible for the kitchen, a woman carried most of the
wood used for cooking in her own home. Men may carry
wood for their wives on the way home from some other task,
but if a special trip must be made for wood to be used
in the kitchen, it is expected that a woman will make it.

316 Non-Agricultural Employment

The major means by which Talei Li men earn a living
outside farming is in the coal mines which have been

316 commercially important in the area for over fifty years.

316 Prior to World War II, the mines employed only full-time
178 miners but due to the labor shortage during the war, some
433 villagers were added on a part and/or full-time basis.

[464] The most recent period is witness to a rapid expansion of industrialization on Taiwan and a consequent increased demand for Taiwan's coal. Coal production in 1965 was 5,054,463 metric tons, the highest in the history of Taiwan (China Yearbook, 1966-7:302). Satisfying the demand for coal has created serious labor shortages which are being overcome by retired Mainland soldiers, migrants from labor-surplus areas, and villagers on a full-time or part-time basis.

316 Some miners live in dormitories near the mines, but others, including all villagers, commute daily. Most mine work is compensated on a piece-work basis. Mines usually operate on shifts for a six-day week. Men may work individually but most often, unite into small permanent work
316 teams which share output equally. Income varies according
465 to the skill, energy, and the richness of a particular vein but the latter factor levels out over time. The average wage is about \$80.00 per day with some men consistently earning \$100.00. Few men earn less than \$70.00 on a regular basis, a rate which is considerably higher than farming wages.

316
416
164
[163] There are serious drawbacks however, for health and
safety standards are almost non-existent. Men frequently
die in mine cave-ins, one during our study. Sanlei had
only a few regular miners, yet three women residents were
widowed as a result of mine cave-ins although two of them
subsequently remarried. Many of the miners are seriously
injured and it is almost assumed that a man with a missing
arm or a leg lost it in a mine accident. One man in San-
lei lost his right hand the year before we started the
study.

Finally, there is the lung disease of miners, sili-
cosis or the black death. The latter probably also con-
tributes to the higher than average incidence of tuber-
culosis in men who are miners although tuberculosis is a
disease with a high morbidity rate in Taiwan in general.
No old man in the area has been a miner in his youth and
one of the oldest former miners, now age 58, has tubercu-
losis. Everyone agrees that it is extremely dangerous to
be a miner and many men simply refuse to work in the mines
because of the fear of injury or death.

316
464 Yet, because the wages are about the highest for
labor and a man is able to work when he might otherwise
have idle time and still get off as often as he wants for
as long as he wants (thus making it possible to work on
his farm during the busy seasons), employment levels remain
high. There is no other job which allows a man so much.

316 income after only about two weeks training. Only seven
464 Sanlei villagers are full-time miners and one of these is
a dynamiter who earns a salary of \$100.00 per day. A man
is usually introduced to a mining job by a relative or
friend who takes responsibility for his on-the-job training.

463 In addition to the miners, there are many other
kinds of occupational specialists in the Talei Li area
such as the barber, carpenter, mason, bicycle repairman,
463 roofer, etc. It is a misconception to consider the Chinese
121 household as a semi-isolated self-sufficient unit. In addition
to the penetrations of the government and the market, the high
incidence of labor specialization restricts freedom of action
for the typical householder. Throughout history, the village
and its nearby market town constituted a clear example of the
organic solidarity conceived by Durkheim. That is, there is a
high level of labor specialization and interdependency. Each
individual contributes his own special task activities, the sum
total of which fulfill the needs of the collectivity as will be
demonstrated.

The various kinds of occupational specialties for
463 which wages may be paid can be placed on a continuum. At
171 one end, the activity can only be performed by an expert;
at the other, by anyone. For purposes of illustration, in
America, only a doctor can perform operations or a lawyer,

463 give legal advice but anyone can wash the car or cut the
171 grass. Not as well known perhaps are the restrictions
on plumbing, electrical work, and the like. The force
necessary to restrict such work to specialists in the
United States largely depends on the law, police, and the
courts. Although some of the enforcement of the division
of labor in China is through the legal system as in the
case of medicine, there is considerably less dependence
on the government. Rather, there is a set of cultural
values specifying which tasks are appropriate for experts
468 and which are not. The community members exert social
829 pressure on an individual who does a task customarily re-
626 served for a specialist. He is said to be "breaking some-
one's rice bowl" (see Glossary C). The statement illus-
trates a basic understanding of the total system. A man
earns his rice⁴ by exchanging an activity and if someone
else performs that activity in his place, he will go
hungry. If too many people did not hire specialists, the
specialists could not purchase food, and the whole system
would break down. This was about the manner that several
village men were able to extend the meaning of the quoted
phrase.

463 I learned the extent of social pressure on trans-
626 gressors the week we moved into the village. I nailed
123 some screening over five windows in our house and this
shocked many villagers. Very politely, at least a dozen

148

463 men (not in a group) told me that Kao Mu-li in the next
626 village was very good at that kind of work, if he was em-
123 ployed the job would last longer, and right now he was
not busy. I immediately hired him to build my screen door
and paid above standard rates for the job to make up for
my inadvertent error. This price soon became common know-
ledge throughout the area.

463 Other similar examples were witnessed. The village
626 barber, Liao An-peí, was seeking a wife and during our
stay, built a new house with one of its rooms designated
for his shop. As the building neared completion, he be-
lieved he had spent too much money. Although he had hired
a painter to put one coat of paint on the woodwork, he con-
sidered doing the second coat himself to save money.
Since he had never painted before, he picked up a brush
while the painter was putting on the first coat and painted
a window sill. Everyone in the shop laughed at him and
called others to come and see Liao An-peí painting. For
days afterwards, although I could detect no difference in
the comparative quality of the workmanship, visitors were
shown the window-sill that Liao An-peí painted. This al-
ways brought a smile and often, an additional comical re-
mark. Liao An-peí decided to omit the second coat until
after he saved more money. He explained that business men
had to be extra careful. Since almost every man in the
village was his customer, if they got angry, he would lose

149

463 business. He also explained that every villager had his
626 haircuts in a barber shop and not at home. If a man was
[305] poor, he just got haircuts less often. Although Liao
An-pai had a standard price, he did cut the hair of some
village indigents at a discount or even free and no one
seemingly abused the privilege. This kind of contribu-
tion was common in the village for the community was in
some ways like a kinship group who took care of its own
members when they needed help.

463 The occupations in Taiwan which are restricted to
171 specialists are equivalent to those termed professions or
trades in America. The trades include repairmen and the
various building occupations such as painter, carpenter,
mason, roofer, or plumber. In America, even when these
are restricted, many householders will perform these tasks
in their own homes. Government agencies have even insti-
tutionalized the practice by issuing "Homeowner's Permits"
which allow an individual to do restricted work on his own
home although it requires a registered tradesman such as
a journeyman or master plumber to do the same job in any
other home than his own. The typical American does more
of these "do-it-yourself" activities in his own home than
the typical Sanlei villager. There is one regular excep-
tion: the householder may help his hired specialist. For
many tasks, I could detect no difference in the quality of
the work of the expert in contrast to that of the homeowner.

463 I never observed any major job without at least one hired
171 expert although on two occasions, there were more house-
holders than experts on a single job: when the mayor and
his son helped one expert replaster a mudbrick house; and
when Liao Chin-ping (one of the village miners), his
younger brother, and his son helped two roofers put a new
tile roof on his house.

The job of laborer in construction was open to
everyone, even women, although in the United States, la-
borers are also unionized and restricted in the building
trades. The most common kind of "do-it-yourself" activity
seen in the village was for the householder to act as a
laborer for his hired craftsman. Other jobs which were
open to everyone included farming and work in the factory
or a commercial establishment. Almost every family in
the village was engaged in some farming and most women,
at least, grew vegetables. Even when a man had a full-
time job, he usually farmed part-time, sometimes as a la-
borer, but more often as an owner-operator or tenant.

There were four men with trades who regularly lived
[322] in Sanlei village. Two were carpenters, one full-time and
[465] the other part-time. In the village area, a carpenter
earns \$65.00 per day, higher than the skilled farm-worker
wage of \$50.00 although not as high as carpenter wages in
[435] the city of Taipei. The third man with a trade was the
[305] barber who charged \$5.00 for a haircut, shampoo, and shave.

305 He was born in Sanlei, served a three-year apprenticeship
in Taipei, worked in Taipei an additional four years and
then returned to the village to establish his own shop.
He claims that he earns less in the village but that his
expenses are also less and that it is much more interesting
to live in the village where he has many friends and rela-
463 tives. Finally, one man is a mason who performs most of
333 his work building elaborate tombs for a geomancer from
Taipei.

463 The mid-wife is the only village woman who has a
759 position the equivalent of a trade or profession. She is
teaching a younger woman as her future replacement in the
same manner in which she learned her skills but she has
recently been required to attend an in-service training
program at the clinic in Hsin Tien.

464 Another possible way to earn money is to work in
369 the city and live in the village by commuting daily. Five
[465] men are regular commuters although four of the five are
also part-time farmers: two work in a metal plating fac-
tory near Taipei earning over \$2,000.00 per month; one is
a part owner of a bicycle sales and service shop in Hsin
Tien; one works as a janitor at National Taiwan University
in Taipei; and the last drives a truck for a Taipei fac-
493 tory. Men with the higher-paying jobs ride the bus and
494 with the lower-paying jobs, their bicycles, but because
the bus service between the village and Hsin Tien is so

493 infrequent, the bicycle adds little time to commuting.

494 The longest ride by bicycle taken regularly for work is about seventy minutes.

874 Two young men are serving apprenticeships by commuting daily to Taipei. In the past, apprentices usually lived with the master who fed and clothed them and provided a very small allowance as they learned a trade. The [465] current approach is towards treating the apprenticeship as a regular job with regular hours but low pay of only \$300.00 per month so that the situation is, in effect, one in which the apprentice is giving up part of his normal wages as a tuition fee. Three Sanlei village boys are "living in" apprentices and since they are registered in the city and sleeping there regularly, they were not counted in the Sanlei population. However, they do return to the village regularly for festivals and merely to visit relatives and friends.

464
5p2 There are more opportunities for females than males to commute because of the current operating policies of the many clothing factories in the area around Taipei which require large amounts of relatively unskilled light labor. Young women easily fill the jobs and can find employment much more easily than boys. The factories regularly send recruiting teams to the village, announcing the date by posting red handbills all over the area two weeks previously. All the factory girls in Taipei who commute work

464 for one of three factories but many girls go off to work
562 in other factories which provide supervised dormitory
accommodations including food.

464 At one factory which is within a 45 minute bicycle
466 ride distance, a group of girls from Talei Li work by com-
muting daily. In the morning, two girls start out from
Ssulei, pick up two more girls in Sanlei and several in
both Ehlei and T'oulei and then go on together in a group
of li girls only. The other two factories each send a
truck to the village in the morning to pick up a total
of five Sanlei girls and bring them home each night.

The other way to work in the clothing factories is
to live in factory-provided dormitories. These live-in
girls also do not fit the definition of village resident
employed in this paper but nevertheless, eleven former
Sanlei village girls are living in factory dormitories.
On the average, a girl usually commutes for a period of
time before moving from the village to a factory dormi-
tory.

464 The availability of factory work has had a signifi-
562 cant impact on the status of females in the village for
562 girls are thereby, direct economic assets. The starting
465 wage of \$300.00 per month (\$13.00 per day) can be increased
with experience to over \$1,200.00 per month for a skilled
girl in six or seven years, but most experienced girls
earn about \$800.00 after five years. Young girls can

562 easily earn more by working in the fields. In spite of
465 the fact that, on the average, the total amount earned
between the age of 15 and marriage at 22 would be higher
in the fields than in the factory, most girls prefer work
in the factory.

562 Villagers view the phenomena of females working in
831 factories with mixed emotion. They like the cash the girl
829 earns and have even exerted some pressure to delay mar-
882 riage in order to retain the economic advantage. Yet,
[582] there are fears that the girls will learn improper behavior
[369] in the factory such as city ways and will surely have freer
relationships with boys that may lead to sexual intercourse
as demonstrated by a couple of girls who got pregnant and,
for example, by the fact that the only single girls who
562 wear make-up, all work in the factories. There is also
581 recognition of the basic lack of opportunity for sufficient
829 socialization into the role of village wife. Is the former
882 factory girl going to adjust when she marries or more im-
562 portant, will she even want to? Tea farmers see that few
829 younger girls are being trained to replace the older fe-
882 males whose work is so important.

562 Finally, the family loses some control over a girl
882 who works in a factory because she can easily move to one
593 of the dormitories if her home life is unsatisfactory.
Thus, some of her wages must be expended on her personal
expenses and clothes as well as some saved for her dowry.

562 In the past, a village woman who was deeply dissatisfied
882 may have remained at home because there were few reasonable
369 alternatives whereas now she can go to the city and work
in a factory. Knowledge of this opportunity undoubtedly
is a threat enforcing better treatment of younger women.

294 There are other minor sources of income. One vil-
463 lage woman has become a seamstress recently in competition
[434] with women in the town of Hsin Tien and Pouti as well as
some in the nearby villages of Erhlei and T'oulei. Her
business has been so good that within six months, she
purchased another sewing machine and hired a young girl
to train as an assistant.

464 Occasionally, one of the tomb builders will hire a
number of villagers to clear a piece of land or help dig
a tomb. During certain seasons, people will be employed
temporarily in a variety of jobs. For example, during the
winter, there are occasional opportunities to get a day's
labor as an aide on a coal delivery truck. In the summer
a village girl sells shaved ice in front of the temple.

444 Not minor in terms of income but minor in terms of
numbers are the two village stores, each a family enter-
prise. The one which presently enjoys the greatest share
of the business is run by an older influential leader sur-
named Liao who is chairman of the permanent temple commit-
tee. The newer store which is run by a Chiu family who
have only lived in the village forty years has a smaller

444 share of the business but is growing most rapidly because of progressive policies, i.e., it has the only freezer and recently added a television set for customer enjoyment (it faces the street).

464
369
166
[161] There have been migrants from the village to the city, usually Taipei, over an extended period of time. Although the village population is about 50% larger than it was 25 years previously, the growth has not encompassed the high rate of natural increase. All three village residents who went beyond elementary school are working in offices and living in the city. The daughter and son of the man with the large tea farm graduated from junior high and senior high respectively and both now work in a bank. The remaining boy graduated from junior high and a business school and works as a bookkeeper and biller in a Hsin Tien store. Two village men started a Taipei meat canning business in the early nineteen-thirties and enjoyed considerable financial success and although living in Taipei, they continue to participate in village affairs and help support the village temple and moreover, they have hired many people with Talei Li origins in their meat factory.

City residents return often to the village both for the special occasions and on their off days merely to walk around, visit, and chat. Their homes and contacts in the city help to make the transition to the city easier for a

464 new migrant and they are an asset to the village in other
166 ways for the continue to contribute to village and temple
369 affairs. By informal means only, I was able to locate 27
families in Taipei which were headed by individuals who
had formerly lived in Sanlei.

434 The above description indicates how Sanlei villagers
draw means for their sustenance locally and from the
surrounding area. Food is grown for home consumption and
cash is earned by selling surplus food and other agricultural
products. It is implied that some of the cash is
443 used for items not available from fellow villagers. Not
only are there regular trips to town for purchases, many
different kinds of peddlers regularly appear in the village
as previously discussed, in an average day about
three to five. About once every month or two a traveling
sales show comes through and stays one night in either
Sanlei or Erhlei, entertaining with songs and chatter as
long as people keep buying medicine.

621 The village is not remotely self-sufficient. For
example, all farm implements and all cloth among other
items must be purchased. For some goods and services,
the purchase is on a price or impulse basis but for
463 others, there are regular established relationships. For
621 example, T'oulei has an electrician but no carpenter
628 while Sanlei has several carpenters but no electrician.
The custom has developed such that Sanlei carpenters get

463 most of the T'oulei business and vice versa for the
621 T'oulei electrician. Although it is now not considered a
628 direct exchange on a one-for-one basis as in barter, it
is almost as if the two villages were trading services
for there are felt obligations on each side. For most of
the different kinds of technical services required in San-
lei there are regular known sources to be utilized with
only a few alternatives. Going outside the boundaries,
i.e., hiring an electrician from Hsin Tien instead of
T'oulei for instance, will cause more comment and pressure
than to do the job yourself. In a sense, Sanlei village
may be perceived as a unit in a large system of units
with which it engages in economic transactions. Although
no single unit is self-sufficient, the larger collectivity
could easily exist as a closed system in spite of the fact
it is currently a part of a larger world market.

A Case of Technological Obsolescence

178 About 1935, a Mainlander who injured his foot in a
291 mine accident moved into Sanlei village to earn a living
472 since he could no longer work in the mines. As a boy in
Fukien, he had learned to make the wooden clogs that were
so popular in Taiwan. They were constructed of wood and
saisal bands, both of which were available in the moun-
tains near Sanlei. Since it was difficult for the Main-
lander to travel to the mountains for the raw material
and to town to sell the finished products, he brought two

178 neighbors into the business as partners. The business
291 seemingly filled a necessary niche and one man taught
472 another and before long, over 30 of the 40 families in
Sanlai were engaged full-time or part-time in the clog
business for a man often could earn more making clogs than
he could as a farm laborer.

[458] Business dropped off slightly during the war be-
[177] cause of a shortage of labor although two villagers
branched into the production of the thick Japanese clogs
and installed a special machine in the village. After
the war, there was another spurt in production but the
plastic industry (replacing saisal bands) and mass pro-
duction techniques came to Taiwan and as a result, the
village clog business was totally wiped out within six
months.

Both the inauguration of the clog business and its
eventual demise were factors affecting village life. The
inauguration was especially important for women's roles as
will be illustrated.

178 The literature which deals with underdeveloped
423 countries often calls attention to the shortage of land.
In Sanlai village there is a felt need for more land,
particularly paddy fields which is openly expressed and
reflected in the artificially high price of the land.
That is, the rate of return from a rented piece of paddy
land is currently not as much as can be earned by selling

178
423 the land and putting the money in many other kinds of
investment.

621 It is not profitable to discuss land values without
461 reference to the kind of crops and the technological sys-
464 tem employed in the community. A village can be viewed
121 on one level as a potential labor pool. That is, all its
members are capable of contributing increments of labor
which vary in accordance with age and physical condition.
There are few societies (if any) which maximize utility
or achievement of this potential for there are always per-
iods set aside for rest and recreation and certain indi-
viduals, particularly children, the aged, and often women,
are not assigned responsibilities commensurate with their
physical potential. A community seems to aim at some
reasonable level of satisfaction although the target may
be raised or lowered over time.

178 At the time the clog business was introduced, San-
621 lei was an agricultural village surrounded by fields oper-
461 ating in terms of a technological system which required
464 certain inputs of man hours to manage its crops. Over
182 time, a system had developed for assigning certain indi-
241 viduals requisite portions of the necessary labor inputs
and as expected, women, children, and old people were es-
pecially underemployed.

182 The clog industry required adult male labor inputs
241 which tended to be drawn out of the agricultural labor
462
464

182 pool. As might be expected in a Chinese village, mature
241 but not aged males had constituted the majority of the
462 labor pool in agriculture. There were several potential
464 ways in which this reduction in the current labor force
could be overcome such as by an increase in population,
making more use of formerly underemployed, change to
crops which required less labor, or a reduction in agri-
cultural activities. In Sanlei, not only was the latter
course not followed, there was an increase in agricultural
activities resulting from the continuing development of
mountain land and moreover, there was no significant
change in the kinds of crops grown on the old land nor
in the technological system. The first two alternatives
were adopted. There was some growth in population and
some use of surplus adult males from surrounding villages.
But the second potential solution is the most important
for the problem considered in this paper, the use of
under-employed, particularly women. Women replaced men
to a greater degree than ever in large segments of the
agricultural activities.

While the clog business flourished, the employment
of women in additional agricultural work became routine.
When the market for hand-made clogs burst, there was an
immediate surplus of male labor. It was possible for
women to be replaced by men in agriculture but this did
not occur. Instead, some men started to go to the city

182 for work and some men became coal miners. There has been
241 some withdrawal of women from agricultural activities re-
462 sulting from the fact that as women died or retired, they
464 were not replaced by the young women who, as previously
[562] stated, are going into the factories. The ultimate effect
of the clog business on the village was to increase the
importance of female labor and consequently, raise women's
status.

462 Division of Labor

The division of labor based on age and sex is a
cultural universal (Linton, 1936; Murdock, 1957). It has
been portrayed in previous sections that Santai village is
no exception to this general principle for some jobs are
solely for men, mining, driving, and plowing, and others,
heavy work, harvesting rice, transplanting, and construc-
tion are primarily for men; some jobs are solely for women,
tea picking, midwifery, clothes washing, and others, cook-
ing, tending children, and tea sorting, are primarily for
women. There are many blurred areas with overlapping
assignments and other areas where one sex is favored but
[465] the other competes. For performing the same task, women
[562] usually earn less money than men. Over time, it appears
that women have assumed many responsibilities and positions
formerly enjoyed only by men.

562 There is yet a goodly distance between the status
562 of men and the status of women. For example, only men are
276 permitted to smoke, a practice which is enjoyed by almost
all adult males in the village. When a boy is able to
[757] earn a man's wage, he too usually starts to smoke. Women
however, are not supposed to smoke and the two Sanlei
women who do smoke regularly are not from high status
families and both justify smoking in terms of its medicinal
qualities, i.e., it is said to relieve a tickle in
the nose. Other adults also say the two have to smoke
but the statement is often quite "tongue in cheek" as
when one village woman about age twenty-five said that
when she was forty or so, she was also going to develop
[183] nose trouble and take up smoking. The justification is
another instance of the mechanism of avoiding conflict and
refusing to recognize violations of village norms in order
to promote harmony (see Chapter IV).

857 Small children have considerable play time but soon
[231] assume minor responsibilities. Older children care for
younger children regardless of sex and most children make
some economic contribution to their households through
such tasks as gathering grass for buffalo and pigs. Young
girls help mother and boys help father but it appears that
girls have more responsibilities than boys.

562 Given the differential values listed above regard-
882 ing adult males and adult females, adolescent boys face a

562 serious status inconsistency problem. After graduation
882 from grade school, girls can immediately find jobs with
[464] good pay in the factory while there are few equivalent
opportunities for boys. Villagers sometimes claim that
today, perhaps girls are worth more than boys.

Household Money Management

511 We had several households³ keep detailed budgets
125 for us and periodically discussed budgets with all vil-
lagers. Among farmers, it is quite difficult to accur-
ately discover the standard of living for they consume
part of their crops without any purchase records and bar-
ter other items. The families with wage incomes are
easier to evaluate and I have extrapolated from them to
determine reasonable standards for the village.

592 Given the values usually associated with Chinese
households, i.e., patrilocality, patriarchy, and a pat-
rilineality, it might be logically predicted that a
senior male would usually assume major responsibility for
financial management of the budget but Sanlei data would
refute the prediction as indicated in Table 4.

592 In 39.7% of the households, a man was primarily
593 responsible for managing the budget. In some cases, he
gave his wife a periodic allowance for groceries and in
others, he did most of the purchasing himself. In either
case, he doled out money as requested for special

592 purposes. Women in these kind of households were seldom
593 fully aware of the monthly budget or family financial
condition overall.

Table 4. Sex of Budget Manager by Household Type

<u>Household Type</u>	<u>Number*</u>	<u>Male</u>	<u>Joint</u>	<u>Female</u>
Extended	8	62.5%	25.0%	12.5%
Stem	25	40.0%	36.0%	24.0%
Nuclear	30	33.3%	26.7%	30.2%
Total	63	39.7%	30.2%	30.2%

*Omits three men living alone

In 30.2% of the households, the woman managed the budget and handled most of the money although men did participate in decisions regarding major acquisitions. These households are not really the mirror image of the male-managed households for although men (the non-managing sex) might be unaware of the breakdown of monthly expenditures, they usually knew the monthly total and were always quite familiar with the overall financial condition. Additionally, a man always had a personal allowance for which there was no accounting which he could spend on cigarettes, or whatever he liked, but it was often a very small amount. As implied in the previous paragraph, in the male-managed household, women did not know the financial condition nor did they receive a regular allowance.

592 The third category, 30.2%, is listed as joint and
593 includes those households which were really jointly managed
or those which had a regular division of responsibility
plus a few households which I could not accurately place
in either category listed previously because of conflicting
evidence. A joint management system is not unlike the
practices connected with the management of an American
joint checking account except that in Taiwan, especially
in the rural areas, almost everything is on a cash basis.
Therefore, all money coming into the house goes into a
cash box and all disbursements are paid out of the box
(leaving the receipt in its place). Instead of a monthly
bank statement to balance, there are periodic conversa-
tions about who spent how much for what. Although there
was a tendency to state that the male had the major re-
sponsibility in these households, it appeared to me that
women were usually in effective control for they could
rattle off the details of the expenditures with greater
facility than men and both sexes also agreed that it was
usually the female who initiated the conversation required
to balance the accounts.

Most young men and women who earned wages turned
their full pay over to their families to manage. However,
each retained a regular small allowance (or turned over
the money and got back an allowance) and were furnished
extra money for expensive items such as clothing as needed.

592 It was not felt to be filial to ask directly for money
593 but rather, one should hint about what is needed with the
expectation that the parents would eventually suggest
[562] the item should be purchased. Women were considered to
be more perceptive than men at perceiving children's needs
but, to maintain the value system which favors males, particularly the sub-role of the male head dispensing largess, it was not at all uncommon for a woman who managed the budget in a household to "sneak" money to her husband so he could give it to a son to purchase trousers or a watch. Everyone was aware of the practice but it was not discussed openly. Young people often said that it was best to let mother know if you wanted something for she was more likely to see the wish granted. Even in a household managed by a very dominant male, women used their superior powers of perceptiveness to inform their husbands indirectly about children's needs.

The figures in Table 4 further suggest that differences in the sex of the manager are related to the household type. An extended family is the highly valued traditional form and is most likely to have a male manager. Extended households also tend to be larger, more traditional, and are almost always economically based on agriculture. The latter factor probably explains why the extended households have male managers for all three family types, even the nuclear, which are engaged in farming tend

592 to have a male manager. This is probably related to the
[516] uncertainty and irregularity of income and the planning
needed for the investments in seed, fertilizer, and in-
secticide before returns are achieved.

592 Although not displayed in Table 4, there is no
[591] relationship between the sex of the manager and a resi-
dence pattern of matrilocal as opposed to patrilocal.⁶
I felt that matrilocal households would probably have a
higher incidence of female managers than patrilocal
households but this was not supported (see Chapter V).

592 All money earned by household members is considered
to belong to the family pool which is managed for the
overall good of the household. The male head, whether or
not he is the manager of the pool, is expected to have a
regular personal allowance and any unmarried son or daugh-
ter who has a job and is contributing to the pool should
also have a regular allowance and money should be set aside
for their weddings (bride price or dowry as the case may
be). Only women and children who do not work have no regu-
lar allowance.

592 There is one regular exception: married women
593 make brooms and straw hats in their spare time and the
[824] money they earn for these activities does not go into
[412] the family pool nor is anyone in the family supposed to
[291] question what the woman does with this personal money.
[262] She may spend it for family treats like flavored shaved

[426]
[454]
[888]

592 ice, she may spend it on herself by buying a luxury item
593 like a piece of jewelry, or she may just put it aside for
[262] security in her old age and also invest it in money lend-
[426] ing clubs (see Chapter VI) or the post office. Several
[454] women have accumulated quite large sums of personal money.
[888]

Although some village men have evening part-time activities that produce income, the money earned thereby is expected to go into the regular family pool. Thus, although men can more easily tap the family pool for their own wishes, only women have a source of money and retain savings which is exclusive.

Household Budgets

511 The following section contains a discussion of the
yearly income and expenditures of the Liao Mou-tu family
which was previously introduced as one of the wealthiest
[592] in the village. Members include Liao Mou-tu, his three
sons, their respective wives, and the four children of
each son for a total of 19 people (see Figure 5). The
figures in Table 3 are rounded for convenience and in-
clude a profit and loss statement and statement of net
worth. Currently, the family has no meaningful debts.

511 The family netted about \$6,500.00 for the year as
592 indicated in Table 3. Since there were four adult males,
462 the money they expended hiring farm laborers about equaled
the money they earned by hiring out. The three wives in

511 Table 3. Financial Statement, Liao Mou-tu Chia
435 Net Worth

\$ 110,000	.8 chia self-owned paddy field
36,000	.3 chia self-owned dry field, vegetables
162,000	1.8 chia self-owned improved slope land
50,000	improvements on 2.1 chia leased slope land
5,000	self-owned house and garden land
30,000	building, pig pen, share of kung t'ing
15,000	furniture and household contents
5,000	farm equipment
1,500	current worth of livestock
6,200	credits at farmers' association and cooperative
2,000	cash on hand
\$ 422,700	Net Worth (Omits value of crops in field)

Yearly Income

\$ 30,000	Oranges
5,000	Hogs
8,000	Tea
3,500	Bamboo Shoots
10,000	Wood
2,000	Vegetables
\$ 58,500	Yearly Cash Income

511 Yearly Expenses

\$ 21,000	Food purchased to supplement own crops
6,400	Food and drinks for special celebrations
1,200	Educational Fees (six children in school)
2,500	Medical expenses (one son was quite ill)
6,000	Fertilizer
2,000	Insecticide
400	Farm tools
3,000	Weddings, funerals, sworn brothers, etc.
1,500	Taxes not in kind
500	Rent for water buffalo
800	Rent on land
1,200	Transportation of oranges to market
1,000	Electricity
1,200	Cigarettes, wine, tea
1,500	Contributions to temple, school, civic works
1,800	Clothing
\$ 52,000	Net Expenses

Yearly Net Profit (Income less Expenses)

\$ 6,500

511 the household are also important contributors to income by
592 means of a rotating division of labor. One is responsible
462 for the children and cleaning for five days; one is re-
sponsible for cooking and washing; and one is free to work
in the fields. Every five days they switch jobs although
all three prefer the relative freedom of the work in the
fields. There are five other such rotating work teams in
the village and many other pairs who share some rotating
responsibilities.

511 Although the Liao Mou-tu family does not appear to
have earned a meaningful surplus, the figures are deceiv-
ing for the family has invested very heavily in the orange
trees (requiring much labor) which have not yet reached
full production. Also, this past year, they jointly with
Liao Mou-tu's brother, cleared and prepared land and plant-
[454] ed 600 banana trees although none have yet matured. The
family will soon move into a much higher income bracket
but has firm plans to continue investing any surplus in
land and land development.

The above family might be contrasted with that of
Liao Kao-mu who lives near the temple and represents the
[532] middle status level in the village. His household in-
cludes his mother, wife, and two female children. He owns
511 .3 chia of mountain field on which he has planted oranges
463 but which as yet have produced no return and he commutes
465 24 days per month to Taipei where he is employed as a

511 janitor and small repairman for a university building at
463 \$1,300.00 per month. He repairs miner's caps (lights) in
465 the evening in his spare time for two of the mines and
nets about \$200.00 per month and also works about 3 to 4
days per month as a farm laborer at a daily rate of \$50.00.
His wife works periodically picking tea or weeding and
subject to seasonal variation, earns about \$2,500.00 per
year. His mother earns another \$2,000.00 yearly as a
[434] mid-wife. The total yearly income is about \$24,600.00.
511 The family is renting a house and houseland up the
[244] hill at one end of the village which has some nearby land
on which the family raises sweet potatoes and vegetables
[262] for personal consumption. Sweet potatoes are an important
part of their daily diet but usually in conjunction with
[235] rice. They also raise several chickens (about 15 at a
time) and eat some and trade others.

Monthly expenses just about match monthly income.

[466] Liao Kao-mu's job provides an excellent health insurance
[745] plan for the entire family which eliminates medical ex-
penses. The family's future plans are to continue his job
which is reasonably secure and features periodic raises and
a yearly bonus. The mountain field mortgage is now over
80% discharged and in another year will be in full pro-
duction. As soon as it is free and clear, he plans to
purchase another piece of mountain land and has already

511 talked to the township office about its acquisition.

842 Although both Liao Kao-mu and his mother are upset,
his wife is currently employing an Intrauterine Device in
order to prevent pregnancy. Liao wants another child or
two, at least one boy, but as he says, there is not much
one can do about it. His wife says she will probably
have another child when the baby of the family is about
three or four years old.

511 A third contrast is with the family of Lin An-hwei,
[383] a Mainlander who is an adopted-in husband. In his home
[572] are his wife, her parents, and his four children. He is
511 a skilled dynamiter in the mine and earns \$100.00 per day
463 or an average of about \$2,600.00 per month which would be
465 sufficient to put the family in the middle status group
in the village if Lin were not a Mainlander. He does no
farming but does help around the house by tending the
children. His wife has a small vegetable garden (about
20 feet square) for the kitchen and also works as a la-
borer picking tea and weeding and earns about \$5,000.00
[434] per year. The family income totals over \$31,000.00 each
year.

511 However, the family is deeply in debt because the
736 two old parents are nearly blind and have recently had
heavy medical expenses. The current situation in this
family illustrates the previously discussed problem of the
high dependency ratio in the village. Four small children

511 and two nearly-helpless old people are all dependent on
736 the labor of two mature adults, one of whom must spend a
major portion of her time in nurturing activities.

511 The family diet is fairly rich and Lin An-hwei
[262] shares a bottle of beer each evening with another village
[273] Mainlander. Since the bottles are big, they take turns
[435] buying one but the cost to Lin's family still exceeds
\$250.00 per month. Before the recent medical expenses put
them so far in debt, the family was doing quite well finan-
[525] cially but was not investing in land or business. They
ate well and Lin gambled once a month with five Mainlanders
who lived in the area and he also bought many lottery
tickets. His gambling and participation in the lotteries
have ceased but he continues to drink.

[888] The expensive medical treatments have been given
up as part of the immediate plans of waiting for the old
ones to die. After paying for their burial expenses, there
are no further plans other than discharging the family
debts.

511 The final contrast is with members of the lowest
621 class group in the community in terms of economics al-
565 though the village class structure is not sharply demar-
cated. Villagers will usually claim that everyone is
nearly the same in the village but when pressed, will point
out a few families who are somewhat richer than average
and several families which are very poor but usually

511 qualify any such remarks with a statement that everyone
621 in Sanlei is poor. The families which are usually con-
565 sidered poor and most clearly set apart from the general
village population are those which do not have a vigorous
adult member.

735 There is considerable cooperation in supporting
the seven poorest families of the sixty-six families in
the village. As previously described, poor people are
often guests at the pai pai in their neighbor's homes.
There are also reductions in the prices they pay for goods
and services as illustrated by the previously discussed
case of the barber and free haircuts. Additionally, both
village stores charge less than the normal price and often
put items on a charge account with no expectation they
will ever be paid. The most important aid however is with
regard to food and wood for poor families are permitted to
grow sweet potatoes on little plots of land they do not
own but which otherwise might be left unused. If no one
in the family is capable of working the plot, farmers who
pass by will regularly contribute little increments of
[578] labor to manage the plots. The poor are also permitted to
help themselves to certain products, particularly the poor
grade vegetables and gleanings and wood although the theft
of wood and vegetables by anyone who was not poor was
probably the chief source of conflict in the village.

176

735
538

These practices are not obvious to the casual observer for much is done to preserve "face." Since anyone who begged would necessarily lose face, there must be an avoidance of either asking for items or of offering items in a manner which suggest the receiver has need of them. Clothes are given to someone for example, because they no longer fit. Someone announces in a group that some of his vegetables are going rotten in the field because there is no one available to pick them. However, careful watch is kept on those who help themselves and since everyone's financial condition is well known, few people other than the poor are permitted to take advantage of the situation. Those who benefit most from these customs are usually widows or old men who have never married.

511
621

In summary, there does not appear to be anyone in an extremely poor position economically in Sanlei village.

Although some people are much better off than others, the differences in clothing, daily diet, and style of life are

[648]
[828]

not great and no one ever appears to go hungry. There is some nostalgia for the period of the Japanese occupation when prices were said to be much lower but in fact, it appears that everyone is eating better and richer foods than ever before in history for although prices are high-

[735]
[574]

er, so is income. The system of pai pai with many invited guests helps the poor to share the prosperity as does the reduction in the cost of goods and services, all leveling

511 factors in the distribution of community resources so that
621 everyone shares in the prosperity. Finally, the continued
[735] development of land and the industrialization nearby all
[574] offer so many job opportunities that just about anyone
[464] that wants to work can earn a living.

CHAPTER IV

FORMAL ORGANIZATION AND SOCIAL CONTROL

128 The social organization of Sanlei can be broken
621 into three logical divisions: formal organization, kin-
571 ship, and voluntary associations. The first division, con-
602 cerned with governmental or quasi-governmental units, is
182 the topic of this chapter with the other two following in
turn, one chapter each. This separation into three sec-
tions is an analytical device adopted in this paper for
convenience. In village social life, all three divisions
are inter-dependent and inter-twined. It is extremely
difficult to categorize a concrete unit of behavior into
only one of the three divisions. For example, a man
votes (formal organization) for his cousin (kinship) who
is a sworn brother (voluntary association). Both formal
and informal mechanisms of social control will also be
considered in this chapter because, in the context of the
village, they are nearly impossible to analytically sepa-
rate and furthermore, both are an intimate part of formal
social organization.

National Government

648

The present government on Taiwan is broadly based on the principles advocated by Dr. Sun Yat Sen. It currently appears that elements of all three of Dr. Sun's stages are in effect simultaneously, i.e., military government, political tutelage, and constitutional government (Plummer, 1967:135). There is a written constitution which appears to provide a democratic government divided into branches: National Assembly, Legislative Yuan, Central Yuan, Examination Yuan, and Judicial Yuan. The government is a complex system of checks and balances combining elements of the cabinet and presidential systems.

Since the overthrow of the Manchus and establishment of the republic in 1911, the Republic of China has been beset with wars, internal, Japanese, and communist, and has never had full control of all of its claimed territory. These kinds of difficulties necessitated special measures such as the "Temporary Provisions" to the constitution enacted in 1948 which give the president special emergency powers during this period of national crisis. Additionally, elected government officials at the federal level are considered to represent all China. The term of office of most incumbents have been extended by special provisions until control of the Mainland is re-established making it possible to conduct elections. Since most Chinese territory is now under Communist control, the

648 majority of elected officials are not really responsible
to their constituencies. Although Taiwan is the only ter-
ritory still under Nationalist control, members represent-
ing Taiwan constitute less than three per cent of the Leg-
islative Yuan.¹

648 Even to this extent, the village does not really
829 participate in national affairs nor do villagers desire to
participate, for national government seems so distant that
it is nearly beyond comprehension. While no one in the
village thinks he could have any effect on national policy,
villagers are directly affected by national government
policies in many significant ways. Government policies
have had tremendous direct economic effects in areas such
as taxation, land reform, etc. There are indirect effects
too such as the trade agreements negotiated with Morocco
which greatly improved village tea business by opening a
[671] major new market. Government policies are increasing edu-
[702] cational opportunities. The universal military draft, in
[582] addition to providing military and language training, has
an indirect effect of delaying marriage for young men
usually do not marry until after completing their military
[204] obligations. A few villagers read the national news and
[207] most hear some news on the radio or television although a
radio station that broadcasts little news other than
weather and farm prices is most popular.

665

Although there are a number of minor political parties, Taiwan essentially has a one-party government run by the Kuomintang (Nationalist Party of China). The party maintains scattered branch offices throughout Taiwan such as the one in Hsin Tien which includes Talei Li in its area of responsibility. Several villagers have joined the party although only a few remain active.

66

Party membership is not necessary for important political offices as demonstrated by the elections conducted in the early part of 1968 when officials who were not members of the Kuomintang captured about 20% of the seats in the local elections and 10 of 71 provincial seats. Also, the mayors of two of the largest cities in Taiwan, Taipei and Kaohsiung, are not party members (Plummer, 1969: 19). Nevertheless, as revealed by these same figures, members of the Kuomintang captured a majority of the seats as usual. Moreover, successful candidates who do not belong to the Kuomintang usually run as independents rather than as members of an organized opposition party.

There are occasional arrests for political or ideological reasons and rumors of many more to such a degree that many rural people believe that to get involved in politics may be to court arrest.

Provincial Government

648

Taiwan is one province of the Republic of China with its capital near Taichung in central Taiwan. Its main

648 branches of government are the directly elected Provincial
Assembly and the Provincial Governor selected by the Execu-
648 829 tive Yuan and appointed by the President with an overall
responsibility to carry out the national policies with
particular attention to economic development. For the
village, a situation not unlike the attitude described
for the national level is evident. Villagers are not aware
of most provincial decisions and do not really participate
meaningfully in provincial politics although decisions at
the provincial level also have direct and indirect effects
on village life.

County Government

648 The province of Taiwan is divided into 16 counties
[634] and 3 cities, each with local self-government.² Sanlei
village is a part of Taipei Hsien (country) which is headed
646 by an elected magistrate. The last election for the coun-
try council members was in January of 1964 for a four-year
term. Elections at this level do generate some interest
in the village as demonstrated by the fact that nearly
eighty per cent of the eligible voters participate although
only about two thirds participate in provincial elections.

Suffrage is universal, equal, direct, and secret.
Qualifications for voting include citizenship, age of 20
or over, and six months residence; qualifications for of-
fice are the same except the minimum age is 23. There is
656 a federal law, applicable at every level of government
666
562

562 down to the township, which specifies there must be one
656 woman member for every ten representatives on all delib-
666 erative bodies. This law serves to increase the status of
women and results in a consequent higher percentage of fe-
male membership in legislative bodies in Taiwan than in
the United States.

666 At the county level, economic contributions are
662 important in winning elections. A man does not buy votes
directly, but he may offer to contribute a school room or
the like if he is elected. Although this is considered by
most villagers to be quite honorable, contributions of
money to local influentials rather than for public works
is considered to be very bad and dishonest by most village
leaders. No one in Sanlei is believed to have taken a
bribe to influence votes but Sanlei villagers often cite
one man in Erhlei and two in T'oulei as dishonest men who
have been bribed. Citation of these men may be part of
the factional differences in the li to be discussed later.
In any case, the suspected Erhlei man is still consulted
regularly for his knowledge about affairs outside the vil-
lage and he continues to influence voting behavior in the
li.

665 Hsin Tien Township is broken into two major fac-
tions which compete for political power. Talei Li belongs
to the "inside the mountain" faction, the smaller and
weaker of the two. Although the factions are more

665 important for township affairs and for such quasi-governmental units as the farmers' association or fruit cooperative, one faction may be mobilized by a county candidate who will then incur an obligation which must later be repaid. (These factions are considered more fully in a subsequent section.)

Local Government

178 Historically, self government on the local level
621 has been a significant part of the Chinese system for the federal government rarely extended below the county level.

[648] When Taiwan was controlled by the Japanese, partial local control at the community level was still a regular practice and in many respects today, there are still significant elements of traditional local control governed by a principle of consensus. Secret elections, majority vote, universal female suffrage, and voting individually rather than by families are new.

666 Some men are still seemingly not aware of the fact
562 that their wives may vote as they wish in spite of their husband's instructions. I was told by more than one man that his wife would not vote for his candidate's opponent for that would just cancel both their votes while many other men just claimed their wives did not understand politics and asked them how they should vote. On the other hand, several village men actively promoted candidates by stating reasons for their selection in the presence of

666 women. Conversely, women rarely talk politics in front
562 of men and almost never promote candidates. After my
promise of secrecy, a few women told me of voting the
opposite of their husbands. I am sure some village men
would be quite surprised to learn that their wives had
not automatically voted for the candidates they had selected.

562 The underlying principle governing the above pattern
666 of behavior, i.e., refusing to acknowledge a conflict
183 situation or refusing to acknowledge many violations of
normative standards, has appeared before in this account
of Sanlei Ts'un in such guises as a female's behavior towards
her husband's relationship with children in a female-managed
household or in the manner in which poor villagers receive aid.
It will appear again in many other forms and will be considered
in the last chapter as it undoubtedly is a contributing factor
to the various misconceptions about women's roles.

Let me illustrate the basis for this factor in another context. My wife once demonstrated that although
American husbands and wives do not become more like each
other in terms of opinionation and closed-mindedness
(Rokeach and Rothman, 1965), the happier the marriage, the
less the partners admitted implicitly they were different.
That is, a person experienced less conflict when he was
able to consciously feel that he and his spouse held

562 identical opinions. In the previous discussion of Sanlei
666 voting behavior, the ability of a man to delude himself
183 into thinking his wife voted as he did is positively related to the domestic harmony which is highly evaluated in the village.

Divisions of Local Government and Politics

621 There are three formal units of government at the local level and one unit which is important but does not fit well into the system. The smallest significant political unit is the lin or neighborhood. In the Sanlei area, each lin contains about 10 or 11 contiguous households.

624 Each lin has a lin chang (neighborhood leader) who is elected on the basis of consensus in Sanlei at an open meeting. He is responsible for communicating directives to the people and aiding the local mayor in carrying out his duties. Because a lin chang may be held responsible for what happens in his lin, there is some reluctance to assume the office. We heard many times that under the Japanese, a village lin chang once spent three days in jail after a bandit was arrested in his lin. Also people say that the office means only work with no corresponding power or money.

632 The next larger formal important political unit is the li which has three officers: the li chang (li head or mayor), the representative who serves on the township council, and the village secretary. The first two are

632 elected by li members and the last is appointed by the head of the township.

The third and highest level in formal local government is the township which also has a mayor as its chief executive officer. Sanlei is part of Talei Li which is part of Hsin Tien Township. There are 21 li in Hsin Tien Township and each is entitled to at least one representative on the township council. Since the li with larger populations are permitted two representatives, the Hsin Tien township council has 27 members, three of whom are women as required by the federal law. In each case, the woman represents one of the li which furnishes two members. The township ranks below the country and carries out such functions as civic improvements, registration, military draft, tax collections, etc.

[562] 621 The three levels described above ignore a fundamental unit which does not fit into this scheme, the ts'un (village). As a village, Sanlei Ts'un has an established geographic boundary, possesses a historic reality as a unit, and is significant for social and area affairs. Sanlei is highly integrated and is a prime unit for personal identification for there is no confusion about who is or who is not a member of each village. However, in Taiwan, a ts'un (village) may have no necessary official functions, merely serving as an address and a registration unit for
632 land. Another formal unit, the li, is directly in the
621

632 chain of command of government from citizen to lin, li,
621 township, county, province, and republic. A li and a
ts'un may cover exactly the same territory; a ts'un may
contain two or more li; or a li may contain two or more
ts'un. Since villages may vary in population from 50 to
12,000 or more, the village is not a reasonable unit for
local government given the goal that the local units
should all be nearly equal in population. Therefore,
smaller villages have been combined into a single li and
larger villages have been divided into two or more li.
The formal system does take ts'un boundaries into consid-
eration. For instance, although there are six lin in
Sanlei ts'un, no lin cuts across ts'un lines to include
members with conflicting ts'un identities.

632 Regional Factions in the Li

628 One of the two primary sets of factions in Talei
665 Li is regionally based, two villages at one end of the li,
621 T'oulei and Erhlei, opposed to the three at the other end,
Sanlei, Szulei, and Wulei (see Figure 1). Because the
Mainlanders in Wulei do not participate in li political
activities, the factions are about balanced in population.
[648] Under the Japanese, each of these two factions existed as
a pao in the Japanese system of local government for Tai-
wan.³ Since each pao had different experiences with dif-
ferent sets of leaders, there is some historical as well

632 as regional basis to the competition.

628 The ideological differences between these factions
665 may be based partly on occupational factors. Sanlei's end
621 of the li has always been essentially a farming area while
levels of non-agricultural employment were always higher
at the other end of the li. Although the amount of avail-
able farm land per village was higher at Sanlei's end of
Talei, the population of the two villages in the Erhlei
faction nearly equalled the population of the three vil-
lages at the other end. Most people employed in other than
farming pursuits tended to live in T'oulei or Erhlei. Cur-
rently, the li has one restaurant and two beauty operators.
As would be expected, they are located in Erhlei's end of
the li along with the school.

121 Sanlei and Erhlei are used as faction names because
621 the major rivalry is focused between these two villages
628 which occupy central points in the narrow valley that shapes
632 the li boundaries. Laboratory experiments with small groups
665 demonstrate that individuals occupying the most central
positions in a communication pattern are most likely to be
recognised as leaders (Bavelas, 1950). This process is
particularly acute for a communication network structured
in a straight line. Although results from laboratory ex-
periments with small groups are not directly applicable to
real, more complex situations, they do help formulate
hypotheses to be tested. Although the leadership patterns

121 in Talei Li focusing on Erhlei and Sanlei (see Figure 1)
621
628 are congruent with this communication theory, a decisive
632
665 test cannot be conducted with current data and variables.

621 The li elects a mayor and a representative to the
628 township council with the mayor having the higher rank.
632 In spite of the regional conflicts within the li which
666 were discussed above, there is basic recognition of the
need for all to cooperate. For instance, the li will have
only one mayor, one school, and one major temple. One
compromise, now clearly established, is the fact that if
one official of a political body is from one end of the
li, then the second must be from the other. At the for-
mal li level, this means that if the mayor is from one
faction, the representative must be from the other. Cam-
paigning and arguments are most vigorous but consensus is
usually reached before the election.

It is difficult to determine how the compromise was
originally established because everything was handled on
an informal basis by reaching a consensus. At the time
the two pao were combined into one li, each had an elected
head, and in the first election, one head became the mayor
and the other, the representative. In spite of the fact
that the former Sanlei pao had a numerical superiority
sufficient to elect its members to both positions, one
official, as stated, was elected from the other pao. Al-
most everyone claimed that was the reasonable thing to do.

66b The use of the term election in this account carries im-
632 plications which are misleading for in Talei, elections
themselves are rarely contests, and only serve, for the
most part, to formally confirm a decision reached by con-
sensus.

66b There is a long history in China of local control
558 and local decision-making processes, usually based on
632 finding a reasonable consensus as described above. There
was also an underlying assumption that since the winner
in a contest and the loser together with their respective
descendants would continue to live in the same community
for a long time, it was permitted to beat an opponent but
not to destroy him. If no one loses too much face, it is
possible to continue life together without great dishar-
mony. The loser should be given status to recompense his
loss and the majority should consider the desires of the
minority by finding solutions nearly everyone can accept.
Within the li, although not at higher administrative levels,
there is a practice of having the runner-up elected to a
secondary position.

The sentiment is also expressed in other ways, i.e.,
entertainment shows hired by the entire li alternate regu-
larly in location from Erhlei to Sanlei in spite of the
number of votes or amount of money contributed by either
for both regions are expected to share prestige.

Ideological Factions in the Li

665

628

121

The factions described above are based on territorial identity, i.e., competition for prestige, power, etc., between villages or combinations of villages which have persisted for an extended period of time. The use of faction in this regard is not consistent with usual anthropological analysis of local level factionalism (Nicholas, 1965:21-61; Turner, 1957; Siegal and Beals, 1960:394-417). That is, although these two units are conflicting political groups, they are corporate groups selected by residence in a community rather than by leaders relying on diverse principles (Nicholas, 1965:27-9). By analogy, each village may be viewed as a social organization like a university and the li as the Big Ten Conference in which the units cooperate in academic and athletic affairs although each is in competition with all others for prestige. The present combinations of villages are congruent with the former division into two pao which were in competition with each other for prestige. In spite of various leadership changes, it is not likely that the competition between villages will ever disappear although the combinations of villages may give way to a series of shifting alliances for the combinations based on old pao no longer have the corporate identity of the village.

665

632

However, there is another pair of factions dividing the li which more closely approach the model described in

645 traditional analysis. These two factions are related
632 respectively to two definitions of the main role of the
mayor. One faction favors an internal emphasis: the
mayor should focus on the local community and its internal
affairs and the community should be relatively isolated
from the wider society. The second faction favors an
external emphasis: the mayor should be a bridge between
the community and the wider society by serving to increase
the influence of the li in the township and other govern-
mental or quasi-governmental units.

665 As is usual, membership in each faction is recruited
121 around a leadership core and by means of a variety of ap-
peals. Nevertheless, there are a number of socio-economic
factors which help to distinguish between the respective
members. Comparatively, in the United States, income helps
distinguish between Republicans and Democrats, but income
is not an absolute criteria for such social factors as
religion, race, ethnic identity, and regionalism as well
as the personal history of the individual may modify any
factor or combination of factors. Similarly, in Talei Li,
although each faction has a general ideological basis,
there are multiple factors influencing identification.

665 I have employed the label "traditional" for the fac-
632 tion favoring an internal emphasis because the kind of
121 role it favors for the mayor seems more consistent with
traditional local leadership patterns. Its members believe

665 the mayor should promote internal harmony, push local
632 affairs, be a good advisor, and be chief mediator in dis-
121 putes. It is felt that this requires an older landowner
and farmer who will be respected and heeded. The members
of this faction tend to be older and engaged in agricul-
ture. The leadership is nearly identical with those who
are most active in temple affairs and draws a larger share
of its membership from the Sanlei end of the li.

I have employed the label "progressive" for the
faction favoring an external emphasis because the kind of
role it favors for the mayor seems more modern. Its mem-
bers believe the mayor should establish and maintain good
relationships in town, at the farmers' association, and
with various other government units. Since the leaders
in most of these outside units tend to be educated, worldly,
and young (under 45), a mayor with similar characteristics
would be facilitated in the establishment of good relation-
ships. As might be expected, the general membership of
this faction is younger and a significant percentage are
engaged in non-agricultural activities although most lead-
ers own land.⁴ Also, most leaders and a larger share of
the members are from Erhlei and T'oulei.

665 At the time of the study, the mayor (li chang) was
632 from Sanlei, a sixty-two year old member of the "tradi-
tional" faction which had a slight numerical advantage in
the li. The former mayor lived in Erhlei and was a member

665
632 of the "progressive" faction. In the last election, each
665 faction had entered a candidate for mayor and one for
632 representative to the township council while a third mayor-
666 al candidate ran as an independent. In the weeks before
the election, after much discussion and campaigning, it
appeared the "traditional" candidate for mayor would win.
Therefore, it was decided by the process of consensus pre-
viously discussed, that everyone should cooperate in his
election and also, in accordance with the principle of
shared prestige previously enunciated, elect the "pro-
gressive" candidate for representative who lived in
T'oulei.

All candidates slated to lose save one attempted
to withdraw, but only one, the independent, actually did
withdraw. Both the government and the Kuomintang are en-
couraging free elections rather than consensus as a basis
for selecting officials. Since an election which has only
one candidate as a choice fails to give even an appearance
of free elections, these outside units make it difficult
for any candidate to withdraw once his name is up for an
election. The former mayor who was then the "progressive"
candidate for re-election did not cooperate in the compro-
mise and continued to campaign but was badly defeated.
Many villagers said the defeat was so bad because he was
an unreasonable man who refused to cooperate. Although he

665 campaigned a year later for a farmers' association office,
666 he won neither the regular job nor the runner-up job. He
632 will likely be elected to some office again when he gets a
little older; in villager terms, when he has had more ex-
perience.

665 The basic ingredients then for membership in a fac-
632 tion are occupation, age, and to a lesser degree, residence
571 in one end of the li or the other. However, leaders also
tap kinship loyalties, business relationships, friendships
and sworn brother associations in collecting adherents.
Many people cannot be identified as members of either fac-
tion because the less affluent who are so dependent on
others might be in a precarious position if a faction with
which they were strongly identified lost an election.

665 Women do not significantly participate in local
562 politics although villagers are aware of certain important
women at national levels. Although many village women do
vote as their husbands expect, the percentage favoring the
"traditional" faction is higher for women than for men.
It seems there are enough female votes to swing any elec-
tion. Several women explained that when the "progressive"
faction was in control, more village men went to town more
often and spent more money. Since they would prefer the
men to stay home and save money, many women seldom vote
for the "progressive" candidates.

121
665
571 On one level, local politics can be seen to operate in a manner not unlike the system portrayed for a segmentary lineage system (Evans-Pritchard, 1940). In agnatic groups, the principle of segmental opposition functions such that there are a series of linked groups arranged in a hierarchal structure much like a modern organizational chart. The higher the level in the organization, the greater the number of underlying units which are connected. In any conflict or other sort of political action, one side gains support from every group to which it is linked up to the apical point which links it to the opponent's side and vice versa. As an aid to understanding, picture the form required in a formal English outline. An 'a' and a 'b' may be in conflict with each other but they unite when the '1' under which both are subsumed is in conflict with '2'; similarly, '1' and '2' drop their conflict when the 'B' under which both are subsumed is in conflict with 'A'; and so on for 'A' and 'B' when 'I' is against 'II.'

In applying this concept to Sanlei, note that there are two groups in conflict within the village, the "progressives" and the "traditionalists," although the latter is dominant. At the li level though, the whole village tends to unite and act as a single unit in opposition to other villages or to combine with the villages which once comprised one of the two former pao. Then, at the township level, Talei Li has been a member of the same regional

121 faction (discussed later in this Chapter) for several
665 years although, as previously stated, the li leadership
571 changed from "traditional" to "progressive" and back. The
internal differences are relatively swallowed so as to
present a united front at each succeeding level.

Local Officers and Procedures

632 The mayor is responsible for organizing corvee
labor for civic improvement. He is also extremely in-
fluential in li-wide social and religious affairs for,
although each of these has its own independent organizing
committee, he is often an ex officio member and is usually
an important advisor. It is helpful if the mayor has good
relations in town so that political figures will be sym-
[131] pathetic to the community. For example, when an assessor
is sent from town to lower taxes in the event of a natural
disaster, it is considered best if he already has positive
feelings towards the village and a friendly attitude
towards village leaders.

As can be seen from the above requirements, the
mayor must be a persuasive man to be truly effective.

[212] Basic qualifications for office include literacy and flu-
[191] ency in Mandarin. Although there are no wealth require-
[556] ments for office and Talei Li has never had more than one
resident whose primary income was derived from rent, no
poor man such as a farm laborer has ever held a high

632 office. There are two reasons for this: since a minimal
55b level of wealth is considered to indicate ability, a poor
man is probably not very able or intelligent; and since
leisure time at odd moments is required to conduct political
business, a laborer probably does not have control
over his working hours to the degree of self-employed men.

632 Rather than the expensive personal entertainment of
594 visiting officials by the mayor who provides food and
drink which is characteristic of some communities, Sanlei
residents and the li in general, invite external officials
to the community parties, weddings, and sworn brothers'
association dinners. This custom probably developed be-
cause of the absence of landlords who might have been able
to afford the expenses out of their own pockets.

632 The second officer is the representative to the
[692] township council. All the above qualifications described
for the mayor are equally relevant for the representative
except that he much less often acts as a mediator in vil-
lage disputes. His official duties are as a legislator
rather than an executive and his job stresses external re-
lations by its nature, even when he is a member of the
"traditional" faction.

The final local official is the village secretary
who is appointed by higher level authorities rather than
elected by the community. He operates out of the township
office with major responsibility for taxes, household

632 registration, village records and the draft. He assists the mayor in maintaining records and visits Talei Li once or twice each week. Most li secretaries are young and reasonably well educated. Talei Li's current secretary is a young normal-school graduate having completed two years of college.

651 In spite of the above formal procedures, there are
624 still elements of traditional local control. Taxes are
653 raised rigorously with legal penalties for non-payment much like they are in the United States but there are significant differences on another level. For example, the li needed a major repair to a bridge and the li school required an additional classroom. Procedures for acquiring these items were identical, a combination of formal and informal taxation. Out of the regular taxes, higher level government units agreed to match locally-raised money to pay for the items. After much investigation and analysis and many community meetings, a certain sum was declared to be required for each project. The mayor and lin chang distributed assessments to village households on the basis of wealth and ability to pay. There is no fixed basis for this distribution. The committee talks about who can pay what based on their reputation and since everyone knows a lot about each other's financial situation, this is fairly easy. The general analysis is based on land holdings, size of family, and income, but special

651 allowances are made for those who have had a heavy recent
653 expense such as a wedding. The range of assessments was
626 from \$2.00 to \$100.00.

The lin chang collected the money and gave it to the mayor to deliver to the government. This was all done informally, i.e., no legal pressure could be brought on an individual who refused to contribute. There would be community pressure for by refusing to cooperate a man would be failing his neighbors. In a close-knit community, one never knows when cooperation is needed; a poor man needs employment, and a rich man must hire laborers and at critical periods, the area has a slight to severe labor shortage.

746
[797] Some social welfare support trickles into the community from outside through various governmental levels and even through missionary groups which distribute United States government surplus. Other welfare is on the basis of kinship. However, the local community does assume limited responsibility for its own indigent on a community basis as previously described. There is a proverb, "A good neighbor may be more important than a distant relative" (see Glossary C).

The Farmers' Association

496
291 The Farmers' Association is a quasi-governmental unit which operates as an important link between farmers

474 and the government. Sanlei villagers feel the Farmers'
241 Association is their own organization, not a mere branch
of governmental bureaucracy. In this regard, it is perceived as a successor to the "Farmers' Associations" of the 1920's (locally developed organizations) which were suppressed by the Japanese rather than the "Associations of Agriculture" which were created as official organs of the Japanese Government (Bessac, 1965:21).

Farmers' Associations fulfill a number of different functions. They are a farm credit service with deposit and loan facilities and capital accumulation in the Hsin Tien association is quite large. They provide economic services such as the sale of bean cake, insecticides, farm implements, and fertilizer, and act as a collection agency for taxes in kind and for the sale of rice. They also provide extension services including study groups, home improvement clubs, and 4-H clubs and sponsor model communities and model farms such as that described for the nearby vegetable gardening village. They instruct in new agricultural and sanitation techniques. The one in Hsin Tien helps provide market information for tea growers and recently, developed a form of livestock insurance. Some services are profitable and some lose money such as the necessary activities connected with the responsibility for communicating government directives to farmers. In general, all the activities may be subsumed under general

474 goals of increasing agricultural production and improving
241 rural life.

474 Talei Li has its own small unit, a local branch of
the Farmers' Association. This unit has an elected "Small
Unit Head" from T'oulei and "Vice Small Unit Head" from
Sanlei. These two leaders are a nexus between the com-
munity and the association. Since they receive no compen-
sation other than recognition, an occasional free dinner,
and a magazine subscription, they feel the office is nearly
worthless, without money or power. For example, they are
required to carry out policy with which they may personally
disagree, i.e., currently they are supposed to be encour-
aging hog production although both they and the average
farmer believe that raising hogs is unprofitable.

There are 97 regular members of the Farmers' Asso-
ciation in Talei Li plus 10 associate members. Forty of
the members live in Sanlei, indicative of that village's
great emphasis on agriculture. Talei Li belongs to the
Hsin Tien Farmers' Association which has a total member-
ship of over 1,000. Although each local Farmers' Asso-
ciation is subject to government regulations and direc-
tives, there is great latitude for local independence and
democratic control. The Association is run by a Board
(one elected representative from each li), an Assembly
(representatives elected from each li dependent on size
of membership), a Watch-Dog Committee (auditing supervisors

204

474 elected by the Assembly), and a General Manager hired by
the elected officials. The general manner of operation
is not unlike that of American communities with a council
and a "City Manager" system.

Farmers' Association Factions

474 Competition for the Farmers' Association General
665 Manager's job is very keen. There are two major factions
in the Hsin Tien Farmers' Association which are regionally
based in one sense but do carry different policy emphases.

The faction to which Sanlei belongs is called the
"Inside the Mountain" group. Its members live in the more
remote areas around Hsin Tien and appear to be less urban
and more traditional in outlook. They generally feel the
Farmers' Association should devote itself solely to direct
agricultural activities and to maximizing high dividends.

The other faction is called the "Outside the Moun-
tain" group and contains members who are generally more
urbanized and progressive and who favor the recent trend
to more extension work by the Farmers' Association and the
like.

Individual members belong to units which elect
officials to the overall Hsin Tien Association. Although
the correspondence between the region and the factional
affiliation are not absolute, there is a strong correla-
tion. As the description of the two Farmers' Association
factions suggests, they are related ideologically to the

474
665 factions previously described within Talei Li. Talei Li is strongly in the camp of the "Inside the Mountain" faction which is similar to the li "traditional" faction. Although the factions are reasonably balanced overall within the li, the "traditional" faction is in overwhelming control of the more restricted membership of the Farmers' Association.

Currently there are 21 members of the association board, 13 from the "Outside the Mountain" faction. Ten years ago, when there were fewer li represented in the association, there were 15 board members, 8 from the "Inside the Mountain" faction and 7 from the other. At that time, Talei Li was in the majority faction but today, Talei is in the minority faction for the recently added li have almost all become members of the faction which was previously a minority. Farmers' Associations have been enlarging their memberships vigorously and according to Sanlei villagers, too broadly interpreting which men are farmers. It did seem to me that some members I met in Hsin Tien were farmers in name only. In any case, the new members seem to favor many policies which are not of immediate direct profit to farmers.

474
666 The election of the board member to a term of four years is hotly contested in Talei Li, even more so than the election of the mayor. The member receives an attendance fee of \$40.00 for the meetings which average twice

494 per month. The present board member is from Sanlei and
666 is serving his second term. He has been influential in
various kinds of agricultural committees since he was a
young man who was once chosen as a farm youth representa-
tive to visit Japan and honor the emperor. Six years ago,
he defeated the incumbent, the important Erhlei man who
was the son of the former bandit chief in a very close
election. Two years ago, he badly beat the "progressive"
faction member who had been the previous mayor, also from
Erhlei. The incumbent's residence in Sanlei and identifi-
cation with Sanlei's faction helped his campaign. Also,
the Farmers' Association members tend to be engaged in
agriculture and are more traditional in orientation. The
"progressives" are much more influential among li resi-
dents in general than among those who are primarily farm-
ers.

There are two additional elected representatives:
one is from Sanlei and the other from Erhlei; the latter
is the badly-defeated candidate described above. Within
the li, Sanlei's faction has an overwhelming majority in
the Farmers' Association and could easily control the en-
tire election process. The fact that an outsider holds
office once more illustrates the previously introduced
principle that there should be balance and harmony. Only
the mayor said this explicitly but operations of the sys-
tem, as demonstrated, strongly suggest it. Several men

474 claim that every conflict should be resolved and almost
666 everyone agrees that since there are two factions, each
should be represented even if one does not have sufficient
votes to insure election. This may be partially related
to the old belief in consensus rather than majority rule.

558 Additionally, no one should lose "face," i.e., be too
621 embarrassed. The badly defeated man had lost face but
476 gained much of it back by being elected a representative.

Since the above value is important, let me illustrate it in another context. When money is collected for civic improvements or social affairs, some poor people pay nothing and some rich people pay more than their assessment. When names and contributions are posted on the temple, incorrect figures are listed so that everyone is indicated as donating something. Only the committee chairman or the li chang would know the truth about the whole community and the various lin chang or assistant committee chairmen would know the truth about their own neighborhoods. Thus, face can be saved by the poor although richer villagers are not earning deserved levels of prestige which are related to the size of the donation. Someone who did not pay an amount commensurate with the committee opinion would be so posted and thereby, lose face. The threat is so great that it has happened only once in Sanlei in the past twenty years.

183 The above discussion may falsely suggest an idyllic
496 view of life in Sanlei, all peace and harmony, whereas
621 actually, there are many violations of the underlying
626 principles such as have already been pointed out, i.e.,
the man who refused to accept a consensus, and others will
be discussed later. The man who refused to contribute his
proper share to the temple committee has a reputation for
cheapness, has a little more difficulty hiring workers
during the busy season (his bonus of a meal is considered
likely to consist of poor and cheap food), and he was in-
sulted in public by the gods at the last major celebra-
tion (see Chapter VII). The mayoral candidate who refused
to cooperate with the general consensus was badly defeated
for mayor and also for the next office for which he cam-
paigned.

The Fruit Cooperative

494 Taiwan has six Fruit Cooperatives, primarily market-
245 ing organizations although minimal levels of guidance and
[m] assistance are also provided. These cooperatives are all
continuations of Japanese-established organizations. Talei
Li belongs to the Ch'i Chang branch, one of six branches
in the Taipei Fruit Cooperative which specializes in citrus
fruit.

As farmers in Talei Li have taken up citrus culti-
vation, they have regularly joined the association.

474 Currently, the 66 members, 31 from Sanlei, constitute an
245 all-time high reflecting the previously described change
to citrus cultivation. Four representatives serving
three-year terms represent Talei Li, one from T'oulei,
one from Erhlei, and two from Sanlei, another equal balance
of factions. These representatives meet with others in
Ch'i Chang to elect 20 of their members to represent them
at the Taipei (main) level. At the Taipei level, 111 rep-
resentatives elect a 25 man board which selects the gener-
al manager.

The fruit cooperatives are much larger than farmers' associations, the election process is more indirect, and the organization is less responsive to its membership. However, its management has generally been excellent, distributed profits are good, and marketing is efficient. No Talei citrus farmer has failed to join the cooperative and each markets most of his crop through the association.

Education

872 Talei Li has its own six-year primary school located in Erhlei. Under Japanese rule, students walked to the Pouti school. In 1955, a branch of the Pouti school was established in the li, and in 1964, it was granted independence. Currently the school has a principal, twelve teachers, and a janitor. There is no clerk but one will be added when the school gets bigger. Two hundred Talei

872 Li families send a total of 423 students to school, over 98 per cent of the eligible residents in the li, with girls constituting a slight majority over boys.

871 The Sanlei school is not highly rated. During the first four years students attend only half day and the last two years only permit full days. Admission to junior high school in Taiwan is by competitive examination except for expensive private secondary schools. Successful completion of the examination usually requires six years of full day classes plus a considerable amount of evening classes and individual tutoring. Though illegal, the majority of island schools provide these extra programs for a fee. Talei's school does not and this is one of the reasons why the Mainlander children in Wulei travel to Hsin Tien to school.

871 Villagers do not yet fully believe in the efficacy
875 of education. They point out that most junior high graduates do not earn more money than elementary graduates. School teachers, for example, earn less than most miners and many farmers. For example, a rich farming family with four sons in T'oulei sent the youngest to college and he is now teaching in a Hsin Tien school. Although he brings some prestige to his family, his three farming brothers supplement his salary. In its history, Sanlei has had only one high school graduate and two junior high school graduates and only one of these graduates earns more

871
875 money than an average farmer.

871 Taiwanese schools are rated comparatively like American universities. An important key to the quality rating is the percentage of graduates who take and pass the examination. It is this factor that makes the Talei school so low in rating.

Although education is essentially free, there are a number of fees such as those for the Parents' Association, various taxes, and school supplies although text books are provided without cost by the Ministry of Education. Fees total about \$40.00 for the first and second grade, rising in steps to \$60.00 for the sixth. Since an experienced farm laborer earns \$50.00 per day, the fees are not really high but not inconsequential either, especially if there are many children in the family.

875 The local community has little influence on the selection of the school staff which consists of outsiders, primarily Mainlanders. Only two live in Talei Li while most of the others live in Pouti, a larger more sophisticated community. The staff tends to be an integrated group who feel greatly superior to villagers.

876 Relations with students are usually harsh and "secondary" rather than "primary," i.e., not intimate (Cooley, 1909). This relationship is considered proper by educator and villager alike. Indeed, according to villagers, a teacher must look and sound "fierce" if he

876 is to do an effective job.

871 There are ten officials of the Parents' Association, two from each village in the li. This unit is somewhat similar to the American P.T.A., but much more powerful for it raises money for school affairs such as additional class rooms by means of the previously described informal process. It is important for the school principal to have a good kan-ch'ing⁵ (emotional relationship or feelings) with the Parents' Association.

[571] The procedure for electing Association officials contains many elements of traditional politics. Students bring home the list of candidates selected by a nominating committee of school and association officials. Each household rather than each individual has one vote, entered by stamping the family chop⁶ next to the name of the desired candidate. Slips are returned to the school and counted by the committee. Thus, the ballot is not secret and choices are usually determined by consensus before voting begins. The association board meets at least once per month with the principal and periodically, there are open meetings for the entire membership.

876 Instructional methods are traditional, i.e., there is great emphasis on rote memorization with classes chanting lessons in unison. In traditional terms:

the word education . . . in the Chinese language
is not restricted . . . to the acquisition of

876 technical skills designed to make a living, but comprises the Renaissance idea of the "whole man," including moral behavior; attitudes towards fellow men, relatives, and country; public responsibility; and so forth (Suyin Han, 1966:97-8).

872 This is still an appropriate description of the local school curriculum. There is little emphasis on technical skills other than reading and writing as compared with the amount of time devoted to moral behavior and proper political ideology. Physical training--exercise and games--to develop the body are now included, particularly on Saturday mornings. The school has achieved some success in tag ball competition with other schools. The teams include both girls and boys for separation of sexes in school does not begin until the junior high level.

871 Interest in education is growing, now much stronger in the progressive li faction of Erhlei and T'oulei. The government is in process of implementing a plan for nine years of compulsory education and when it is promulgated, Talei Li children will attend in spite of the fact that villagers do not believe in the value of education for

829 most people. "When the government makes a decision one should smile and obey. To protest is as worthless as a mosquito biting a water buffalo's horn" (see Glossary C), was the statement of the old store owner, an important traditional leader, to a group of senior citizens when asked by one what should be done about the recent increase

329 in taxes. The phrase indicates the general attitude
towards the government.

Social Control

121 This section deals with the formal agencies of
591 social control, the police and courts, and the quasi-
626 formal agencies, elders and mediators. However, much of
the rest of this dissertation deals directly or indirectly
with informal social control. Although an individual may
gain much from his membership in a social organization,
he always pays the price of an acceptance of limitations
on the freedom to do as he pleases. Social control comes
about in part because people are dependent on one another.
Two sociologists (Broom and Selznick, 1968:17) once wrote,
"The way men behave is largely determined by their rela-
tions with each other and by their memberships in groups."

As is clear from the description of Sanlei Ts'un
presented so far, no man is socially isolated. According
to Durkheim (1897--English Translation, 1951), if an in-
dividual is tightly bound into a highly integrated group
with a strong sense of solidarity, he accepts the values
and norms of the group as his own. This is perhaps an
ideal type not to be found in reality, but Sanlei would
approach this end of an ideal continuum. Most social con-
trol is achieved by informal means of one type or another.

829 The outside agencies of control are the police,
courts, and army which are all regarded as legitimate by

829 villagers but to be avoided if possible. "When two men go to court, both always lose," (see Glossary C) is a 648 statement often repeated by villagers. Sanlei's usual direct contact with the police is through its own local policeman. Taiwan has a national police force organized like an army and divided into districts and branches. The closest branch office to Talei is in Pouti, a subdivision of a higher level unit in Hsin Tien. The policemen and their families, primarily Mainlanders, live next to the police station, usually spending several years at one place. The Japanese usually had transferred policemen every six months, a policy which did not permit the establishment of close relationships between policemen and villager which is now common in Taiwan. Villagers know the names of many different police officials in Pouti and a number are usually invited to large social or religious affairs in the village.

There is one policeman assigned full-time to Talei Li with a goal of crime prevention rather than detection and apprehension. To be effective, he must establish good relations with villagers. The previously assigned policeman, recently promoted, had been with the li many years and was both respected and popular. The new man, assigned during our stay, was having a difficult time although he was not really responsible for his difficulties for it is always hard to replace a popular man in any capacity.

648 Moreover, he has little fluency in Taiwanese and since many villagers do not speak Mandarin, he had an especially difficult job communicating. Using another villager as an untrained interpreter presents its own unique problems.

685 The police are in charge of crime when it does occur
[674] although crime is fairly rare in the village as compared with the city. Most crimes in the rural area are classified into two types: external, as when an outsider steals material goods, or internal, as when a resident steals near-ripe agricultural products or dried wood. About half the outsiders are caught and dealt with through the courts. Most of the internal thieves are caught but rarely do the cases reach the courts. Instead, they are treated in the same manner that applies to arguments and disputes among fellow residents, i.e., the thief and victim are merely considered to be two disputants.

Mediation and Legal Processes

627 Internal disputes are usually settled internally by a process of mediation. A mediator goes back and forth between disputants listening to the respective stories and repeating them. Eventually, the two sides are brought into each other's presence. If a compromise still can not be reached, they may agree to resort to the temple to have the gods make a settlement.⁷

648 Even outside the village, Taiwan's formal system of civil courts starts with a regular mediation or

648 arbitration board. The arbitration is not binding and may be rejected by either party in the same manner as in the village. In either case, however, pressure is placed on disputants to accept the recommendations of the mediator. The pressure in the formal system is mandatory, i.e., appearance in a regular court if no agreement is reached and in the local system, is due to the prestige of the mediator if he is a local leader or due to the fact the mediator is a policeman. If the latter cannot settle the case informally, someone is going to be arrested, perhaps both disputants.

627 Mediation is important for all kinds of local conflict resolution. Mediators are men who are considered wise, reasonable, and respected and therefore, their recommendations are reasonable and only an uncooperative unreasonable man would refuse to accept them. One accepts a recommended compromise or becomes branded as unreasonable and unfair.

It usually takes a while before the mediator makes any suggestion or recommendation. He starts by carrying information back and forth between disputants and is also persuasive for both sides. Elders are usually mediators but qualities other than age are also necessary. Since a mediator must be vigorous, very old men can seldom serve. Mediators should also be reasonably successful and have a reputation for honesty and integrity. Finally,

627 they must be skilled in inter-personal relations and since it takes time to build a reputation which includes all these specifications, particularly the last one, most good mediators are between the ages of 50 and 60.

671 The entire legal process in China, both formal and informal, seems to be more concerned with "reasonableness" and "fairness" than with hard definitions of "right" and "wrong." Decisions do not seem arbitrary and have a high level of predictability.

427 There are a number of kinds of local participation.
686 Special mediation boards are created for special purposes
692 such as dealing with disputes generated out of the various Land Reform Acts. A dispute between an owner and tenant over land illustrates the concept of justice. A villager owned .3 chia of paddy land which he operated primarily with hired labor while practicing a trade. He was drafted into the army and leased the land to another villager with several small children. The lease was up, his service was completed, and he wanted the land back although he was still unmarried and practicing his trade, but the tenant was poor and needed the land. Although technically the owner should have obtained the land, the board, recognizing the needs of the tenant, decided the lease should be extended for three more years. The lease is due to end again next year and there will be another board case because both parties still want the land. Since the owner

427 is not married and still earns a good income in his trade
686 and the tenant is still poor with small children, the
692 same outcome of another extension is expected. But since
the owner is seeking a wife, he plans to argue that he
too will soon have small children to support. He does
not expect to regain possession of the land but rather,
to minimize the term of the extension and set the stage
for eventual control of the land after the next lease
termination. The owner is annoyed but does not feel the
decision was unreasonable. Other villagers agree the
owner had the law on his side and a legal claim to the
land. Nevertheless, they too agree the decision was the
only "fair" solution. The owner and tenant are neighbors
and although there are some hard feelings, overt expres-
sion of them was not observed.

674 There have been few formal arrests of villagers and
few occasions in which villagers have appeared before a
criminal court. The son of a villager with a repair shop
in town is serving a six-month sentence on a bad check
charge which he claims was caused by someone who stole his
689 "chop." Another villager was arrested twice for being
drunk and disorderly in Hsin Tien and each time, spent the
night in jail. In addition to a small fine, he was forced
[558] to listen to a stern lecture which caused him a great loss
of face.

Interpersonal Relations and "Face"

626 There is seldom a "face to face" confrontation
571 where someone directly informs another he has done wrong
558 or is a bad man. Instead, there is considerable gossip
[262] so that a criticism soon trickles back to the accused. A
villager took a turtle-dough cake home from a religious
festival and incurred an obligation to return a larger
cake the next year which he failed to accomplish. The
temple committee members told many people about the fail-
ure but would not confront the transgressor in person.
The committee posted two lists on the temple bulletin
board, one specifying those who had taken home turtle-
dough cakes and the other, those who had returned cakes
the next year. Although a cursory comparison of the two
lists would quickly reveal any violators, the committee
claimed they just could not post a list which separately
listed those who had refused to return turtle-dough cakes.
This concept of "face" with a requirement for both avoid-
ing giving offense and helping others to avoid giving
offense does minimize the occurrence of conflict by dis-
couraging the open expression of differences or criti-
cisms.

558 "Face" does seriously hamper interpersonal rela-
571 tions on another level in spite of its employment in
576 promoting harmony. It is necessary that one does not
give offense and it is equally necessary that one helps

558 to prevent another from giving offense. Because a flat
576 no to someone by definition necessarily gives offense,
571 there are special problems in asking for a job, hiring a
laborer, or extending a dinner invitation for it is neces-
sary to do considerable hinting before a direct question
is asked. When an invitation to dinner is extended for-
mally, both parties are clearly aware that the invitation
is coming and the answer will be yes. If the clues were
misinterpreted, one accepts the invitation and then just
does not show up. Not to show up after accepting is an
insult but is not on a face-to-face basis and therefore,
is not as serious. No excuse will be given later and the
host will never mention it. Many dinner invitations are
not extended until a few minutes before dinner. According
to Chen Shao-hsing, the Chinese "yes" often has two mean-
ings, one an affirmation, the other a polite refusal
(1963:58). The closest analogy in American culture is the
hiring process described by Caplow and McGee (1962) for
some university positions, particularly those of higher
ranks. The professor indicates he may be available while
the university indicates it may have an opening. After
considerable discussion, an offer may be made. However,
a firm clear offer is rarely tendered without an under-
standing it will be accepted.

121 In Riesman's terms (1950), the "tradition directed"
558 social character is predominant for Sanlei with the

571
576
626

121 community as the main agency of socialization and shame,
558 the psychological mechanism promoting conformity. This
571 is explored more fully in the chapter on the life cycle,
576 but elements are important for this discussion. Tradition
626 is important. Some people, particularly older ones, are
considered to have such expertise with regard to cultural
norms that acceptance of their authoritative interpretation
of norms is frequent and natural. For example, a
recently married woman wanted to go see her sister's new
baby but knew there was some avoidance rule involving
brides and babies. After learning from an older woman
that a bride brought misfortune to a baby less than 30
days old, she willingly accepted the ruling and did not
even seem disappointed. In many cases, there is this
quite willing acceptance of custom for its own sake.

[562] In summary, it appears that women are not significant on an overt level for social control in the contexts discussed in this chapter. They do not really participate in formal rule, politics, or most political units. Their effects are more covert. They influence men and are extremely significant in the socialization process which builds into individuals the internal mechanisms of social control.

CHAPTER V

KINSHIP

121 According to Marion Levy (1967:67-83) perhaps the
602 most significant feature of traditional China was that it
was family oriented to an overwhelming degree. The family
was an overriding focus for individual loyalty, the basic
unit for production and consumption, and finally, the
basic unit in terms of which the allocation of power and
responsibility took place. Further, the family was a
basic building block in larger agnatic groups. Implicit
in Levy's discussion is the importance of kinship in vil-
lage life.

Although kinship units in Sanlei Ts'un are a sig-
nificant factor in the social life of the village, the
above picture exaggerates their importance. Even Marion
Levy points out (1967:69) his description is an ideal
seldom approached by the peasant. Since Sanlei is a peas-
ant village which does not contain any wealthy individ-
uals, it would not be expected to approach the ideal.
Yet, kinship groups are singularly important in village
social life.

128 This chapter provides a picture of the family and
602 larger kinship organizations in Sanlei Ts'un. The Chinese
system is usually classified as patrilocal, patrilineal,
[769] and patriarchal (Murdock, 1967:194-7). Religious values,
particularly the worship of ancestors, support continua-
tion of the family along the male line.¹ Families are
combined into larger agnatic groups. Although these gen-
eral values are important, it will be demonstrated that
compromises are often made with some aspects to achieve
others which have higher ratings. Birth, marriage, and
adoption are all processes which can be used to create
and enlarge kinship units. We shall see how family units
use these processes strategically to achieve certain
goals.

The chapter will begin with a description of the
nature and distribution of family types in Sanlei Ts'un
followed by a consideration of the nature of the role of
family head, particularly with reference to sex differ-
ences. A discussion of the forms and processes which
change the family composition and their present distribu-
tion in the village completes the static picture of the
family. There follows a dynamic view of the various types
of family life cycles in Sanlei which draws on specific
underlying values in the village, the cultural processes
available, and the demographic factors affecting Taiwanese

128 village populations. Finally, the structure and function
602 of larger agnatic units are considered.

Family versus Household

592 According to Lang, the economic family, the chia,
is a "unit consisting of members related to each other
by blood, marriage, or adoption, and having a common bud-
get and common property" (1946:13). The chia is sometimes
contrasted with the household, the hu, which could in-
clude such temporary residents as more distant relatives,
servants, or workers. If common-law marriages are in-
cluded along with regular marriage since they are so ac-
cepted in the village, the chia and hu are always identi-
cal in Sanlei Ts'un. Both the Sanlei villagers and I
agree that the chia and hu in Sanlei are identical, con-
sisting of the group who live together, share economics,
and cook and eat together as a regular practice.

Household Registration

217 Formal population registration is required for all
659 people in Taiwan. Sanlei records are maintained in the
township office in Hsin Tien. The record, which is main-
tained by hu as the unit of registration, includes an
identification number, the address of the family, the name
of the head of the household (chia chang), and a brief
history of the family including such information as re-
locations, divisions, etc. For each individual in the

217 family, there is listed an identification number, rela-
659 tionship to the chia chang of the household,² birth order
differentiated by sex such as second daughter or first
son, date of birth, spouse's name, father's name, mother's
name, occupation, amount of education, and personal his-
tory such as date of marriage and spouse's name, reasons
why someone leaves or joins the household, cause of death,
army induction and discharge records, etc. A household
registration certificate is kept in each household to
which a personal registration card is related for each
member of the household.

It is required by law that all status changes which
would affect these records be reported to the township
office. Such changes include the relocation of the family,
births, deaths, adoptions in or out, marriage in or out,
[127] Family division, etc. However, the records are only of
limited value to an anthropologist or demographer because
of the many discrepancies and their incompleteness.

Although false registration is a violation of the
law, a major problem in using records is caused by the fact
that people are not living in the household in which they
are registered. Once every five years or so, during a
single night, the government conducts a major census and
checks registrations. Except for census takers and some
necessary vital personnel, military, police, medical, etc.,
everyone is restricted to their official registered homes.

217 For the two days preceding and the two days following the
659 census, the transportation system for the entire island
is overloaded with people traveling to and from their
official residences and the place where they actually
reside.

659 There are various reasons for the failure to reg-
183 ister significant changes. Since an old cultural value
217 maintains it is best not to bring yourself to the atten-
[829] tion of government officials for any reason, registration
acts are avoided because they necessitate contact with
[516] government officials. Another error derives from the
prestige associated with the large extended family, ta
chia ting. A family may actually have divided with one
branch migrating to the city, but if the division is not
officially registered, the family can maintain a pretense
that the move is temporary and the family has not really
divided. Conversely, there were two factors causing
some families to divide on paper but not in fact in spite
of the high values associated with the extended family.
By dividing into smaller units, they hoped to retain land
in the various land reform processes and further, hoped to
obtain draft deferments. The confusion and misinformation
which was rampant at the time of the various "Land Reform
Laws" caused a final form of over-registration. Some small
landlords who lived in the city or a town migrated to the
village officially, on paper but not in fact, in order to

659 maximise the possibility of retaining their land. In
183 summary there is both under-registration and over-
217 registration and although the absolute number of people
by actual residence and official records is quite similar,
they differ considerably in specific characteristics. Total
Sanlei errors are similar to these found in a sample
survey of a community north of Taipei: 11% registered
but not living in the community and 5% living in the community
without registering (P.K.C. Liu, 1967:17).

217 Information regarding individuals is also frequently
183 inaccurate; the categories of education and occupation are
588 the most misleading. Birth and death records are quite
[27] good. Marriages are official only if recorded, but several
common-law marriages have been recognized by participants
and fellow villagers although the couple are only listed
as "living together" in the official records. Common-law
marriages may be legalized eventually, in one case after 13
years. In one extreme case a "Liao" separated from his wife
who still lives in a nearby village. He has been living with
a different woman in Sanlei Ts'un for the past 23 years and
they are listed in the records as just living together. They
have six children, each registered under the woman's surname
with the space for father's name left blank. About two to three
months after birth, the man officially adopted each child,
changing the surname to Liao. Practically, the couple behave as if

217 married, are so considered by villagers, and the unit con-
183 stitutes a family in village affairs even if not officially
588 registered. In this example, the couple claim that it is
less onerous to live together and adopt the children than
to obtain a divorce and remarry because marriage to someone
who is divorced is negatively evaluated. (The way I first
learned of two of the three cases of marriage where one
partner had been divorced was through a check of official
records.) Although the man said it was not a factor, the
fact that the brother of the first wife was the sworn
brother of the man in the example cited above may have
been important. I was not able to obtain agreement about
the significance of this point.

125 In the discussion to follow, the actual residence
591 patterns based on the field census are used rather than
official records. A family is included in the village if
a majority of its members sleep in the village a majority
of the time. A family officially registered as divided
but in fact living and cooking together as a single unit
is counted as a single unit (one case). Conversely, a fam-
ily which had not divided officially but was living and
eating separately in two or more units was counted as more
than one unit (two cases). An individual is considered a
resident if he regards Sanlei as his home and he sleeps in
the village at least one night per week. Thus, a girl who
works in a factory and sleeps in a dormitory but usually

125 spends one or two nights at home is a resident. On the
591 other hand, a boy in the army is not a resident.

161 With the above standards, as of September 1, 1966,
162 the actual population of Sanlei Ts'un was 409, divided
into 66 households, an average household size of 6.2 mem-
bers.

Family Types and Distribution

596 The villagers believe the patrilineal extended
[83] family (ta chi ting) is an ideal. In any discussion, the
largest family in Sanlei is often used as an example of
the best family and the old father, Liao Mou-tu, who is
still the chia chang is held as a model of sagacity and
wisdom. A diagram of his family, a single economic unit,
appears in Figure 5. This example approaches the maximum
for the definition. An extended family³ usually contains
at least three generations although this is not a defining
characteristic (Lang, 1946:14). Minimumly, to be classi-
fied as an extended family, there must be at least two
marriages in the same generation or in non-adjacent gener-
ations. An absolute minimum size extended family would
have four members: two brothers and their respective
wives. The family may be broken but still meets the mini-
mal definition, i.e., a marriage counts even if one part-
[62] ner is dead. There are eight extended families in Sanlei,
12.1% of the 66 households, ranging in size from 6 to 19

231

596

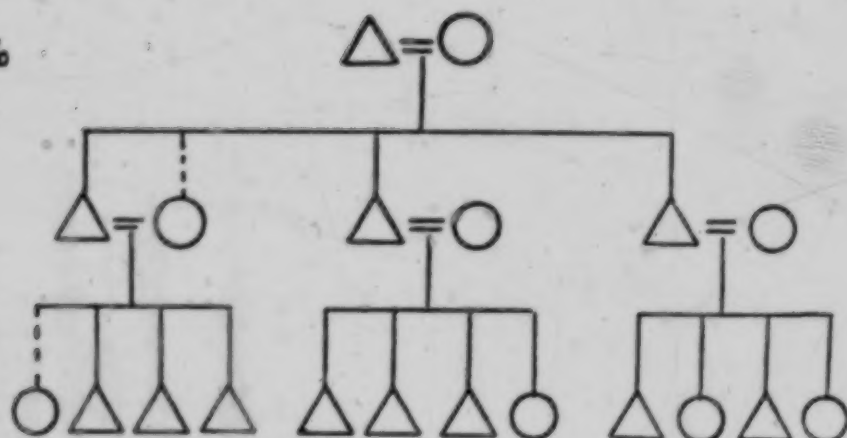


Figure 5. Kinship Diagram, Liao Mou-tu Chia.

[621] members with an average size of 8.1. 19.8% of Sanlei villagers are living in households of this type, ta chia t'ing (see Table 6).

592

A second type to be found in Sanlei is the stem family. The stem ranks between the extended and nuclear families in complexity. In accordance with Lang's definition (1946:14-15), there must be exactly two marriages in adjacent generations with one person from each marriage related lineally. In numbers of people, the minimum could be three, a married couple with one parent alive. The stem family deserves its special status because it tends to be a transitional form, rarely having permanent status. For example, when the first son marries and brings home his wife, a nuclear family becomes a stem family. It remains

Table 6 Summary of Household Types in Sanlei Village

Type	Families		People		Size	
	No.	Per Cent	No.	Per Cent	Mean	Median
Extended	8	12.1	81	19.8	8.1	8.5
Stem	25	37.9	166	40.6	6.6	7.0
Nuclear	33	50.0	162	39.6	4.9	5.0
TOTAL	66	100.0	409	100.0	6.2	6.0

592 a stem family until either the son establishes a new residence resulting in two nuclear families, or both parents die, or until the second child marries and brings home a wife creating an extended family. There are 25 stem families in Sanlei, 37.9% of the 66 households, ranging in size from 3 to 14 members with an average size of 6.6. 40.6% of Sanlei villagers are living in households of this type (see Table 6).

594 The final type of family is the conjugal or nuclear, the most elemental and simple. It consists, at a maximum, of a married couple with their unmarried children or at a minimum, of a single person living alone (Lang, 1946:14), the latter example perhaps stretching the concept of family to its ultimate absurdity. Including the three households which contain men living alone, there are 33 nuclear families, 50.0% of the 66 households, ranging in size up to 9 members with an average of 4.9 members. 39.6% of Sanlei villagers are living in nuclear households. If

594 the three single men are omitted, the range in size is
621 from 2 to 9 with an average of 5.2. The distribution of
these three family types is indicated in Table 6.

Historical Changes in Family Size

178 Historically, there has been a steady growth in the
59 average size of the family in Taiwan (see Table 7). There
621 is an additional factor however, which is not revealed in
the kinds of data usually presented. There is an increasing
percentage of stem and extended families at the expense
of nuclear families in the rural area. While the average
size of the family in Sanlei Ts'un is about the same as
Taiwan's overall figure, it is significant that sixty per
cent of Sanlei villagers are living in households larger
than the nuclear family. Several explanations for this
development can be suggested.

121 One reason is related to a concept recently devel-
178 oped in a provocative article by Marion Levy which was
59 supported mathematically by Ansley Coale (1965:1-69).
Levy draws on the work of demographers who posit a demo-
graphic transition characterized by three stages: (I) high
birth rate and high death rate, (II) high birth rate and
low death rate, and (III) low birth rate and low death
rate. Levy argues that in Stage III, the "actual" family
is the nuclear type. A nuclear type is necessary because
of the restraints imposed by the larger society. Moreover,
the "ideal" size will be congruent with the "actual" size.

178
59

Table 7. Historical Changes in Average Family Size in Taiwan (1940 and earlier from Barclay, 1934:175; later figures from United Nations Statistical Yearbook, 1968:787)

<u>Year</u>	<u>Average Size</u>	<u>Year</u>	<u>Average Size</u>
1905	5.2	1935	6.0
1915	5.3	1940	6.1
1920	5.3	1950	6.1
1925	5.5	1960	6.1
1930	5.7	1965	6.3

121
178
59

In Stage I however, the "ideal" type may be any form with a tendency towards something larger than a nuclear unit but because of the high death rate, there will be few families which achieve this "ideal." The biological facts alone are sufficient to prevent its achievement. Thus, a vast majority of the "actual" families in a Stage I society will be nuclear no matter what the "ideal" may specify. Coale (1965:65-69) created a computer simulation model of family cycles with all conditions set to maximize achievement of unilineal extended families in a Stage I society, i.e., families would not divide unless both members in the senior generation were dead. Yet, these conditions only created an average family size of 7 while the average for an "ideal" of nuclear families under the same conditions was 4. Since we know that families do divide for a number of other reasons, even this figure would be rarely realized.

However, it is Stage II, the transitional stage, which is of most interest in this paper. In Stage II, the mortality rates are changing such that they would now

124 permit the "ideal" to be achieved biologically. Yet, there
178 will now be pressure for a change in the "ideal" size⁵
59 towards a nuclear family because other conditions are
approaching congruence with those of a Stage III society.
In any case, we would expect both an increase in the
average family size and an increase in the percentage of
families that approach the "ideal" form in a Stage II
society.

The above argument will be applied to Taiwan. The
data in Table 2 clearly indicates that 60 years ago, Tai-
wan was a Stage I society, possessing both a high birth
rate and a high death rate. Furthermore, they also indi-
cate that Taiwan slowly changed to a Stage II society,
which was achieved after World War II because of the fall-
ing death rate. Finally, Taiwan now appears to be moving
towards Stage III as indicated by the falling birth rate.
The figures in Table 7 indicate that the average size of
the family steadily increased with the changes in stages
as Levy's theory would predict. Moreover, Sanlei now has
its highest percentage of families larger than the nuclear
type: stem and extended forms total 50% of the families
in Sanlei.

However, there are two other possible explanations
for the current growing family size and high rates of fam-
ilies larger than the nuclear form. In a study of Hsin
Hsing village on Taiwan's West Central Plain, Gallin

121 (1966) found that only 40% of the families were larger
178 than the nuclear type. In both Sanlei and Hsin Hsing
59 there was pressure on the land although the availability
of yet undeveloped mountain near Sanlei meant less pressure. Additionally, the growth in population (associated with the falling death rate) meant that some people were forced to seek employment outside the village in both communities. In Hsin Hsing, it is often necessary to migrate to the city for a job (Gallin, 1966:210). However, the availability of work in the mines and the availability of work in the city within community distance means a man can work outside but continue residence in Sanlei Ts'un.

59 For example, the extended family of Chiu Yung-man which is
121 diagramed in Figure 6 includes four adult males although
178 the family land holdings are not sufficient to support the
entire group. The old man (1), is a full-time farmer although he has withdrawn to a large degree because of his advancing age. His oldest son (2), works about 90% of the time on the family farm and 20% in the family store run by his wife (3). The second son (4) works about half the time on the family farm and half the time in the coal mine. The third son (5), who is a full-time truck driver at a lumber yard in Taipei, commuting daily, rarely assists with farm activities. The family farm requires male labor inputs totaling about the equivalent of two full-time adult males and could support their respective elementary

237

596

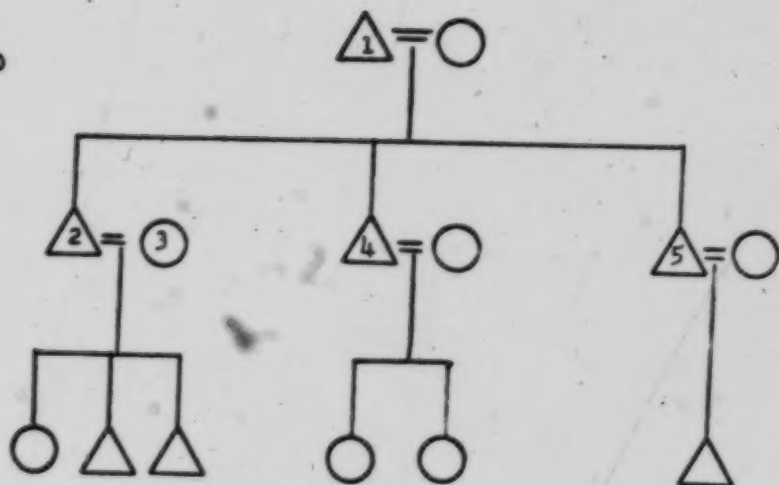


Figure 6. Kinship Diagram, Chiu Yung-man Chia.

121 families. However, the other employment opportunities
178 locally available allow this extended unit to continue
596 living in a single household. On the other hand, in Hsin
Hsing, it is likely that the youngest son would have had
to move to Taipei for work. His wife might not have moved
with him, but given the fact that three adult males still
meant too much pressure on the land, and that he had ob-
tained a steady job with good wages, she would probably
have joined him before long.

121 The final possible explanation is based on the im-
59 proving financial conditions in Taiwan.⁶ Most accounts
178 of the Chinese family stress that the large form is related
to economic well-being (Hsu, 1967:7; Fei, 1939:29, C. K.

121 Yang, 1959a:9, Lang, 1946:16). It may well be that
178 neither the biological explanation nor the convenience of
59 job opportunities are relevant for if the theories about
economic improvement are correct, they may be a sufficient
explanation.⁷

There are few longitudinal studies of Chinese communities. Gallin found a significant increase in material possessions in Hsin Hsing between the original study of 1958-9 and the restudy of 1966 (verbal communication). The strength of the theory could be examined by looking at the present distribution of family types in Hsin Hsing. There are suggestions that the theory of increasing financial well-being has merit for the increasing size of the family (Table 7) corresponds with economic improvement as well as demographic changes. The final support for this explanation comes from the neighboring village of Erhlei which was studied by my wife. In comparison with Sanlei, Erhlei is more prosperous although the average net worth of each family is less (reflecting the smaller investment in land), houses and material goods are richer and monthly income is higher. In both villages the demographic rates would have changed at about the same rate although Erhlei is making use of modern Western medical treatment to a greater extent than Sanlei. As the theory would predict, the average size of the family in Erhlei is higher and additionally, there is a higher percentage of families

121 larger than the nuclear unit. In another recent study of
178 a prosperous Hakka community in Taiwan, Cohen found an
59 average family size of 10.9 and 55% of the families were
larger than the nuclear form (1969:161-180).

The above discussion of the family is basically a "static" one, a snapshot of Sanlei at a given moment in time. Even the discussion of changes over time is essentially "static" because it merely describes and attempts to understand the differences in two or more distributions of family types distinguished by time. Such a description of the incidence and classification of domestic forms is fairly standard in most ethnographies and has been called by Buchler and Selby (1968:48), the "Statistical Approach." They further suggest (1968:52-8) it is necessary to provide a "Diachronic Approach" in analysis which focuses upon the total process of development and change in domestic units. Although often omitted, such analysis is growing in importance and appearing more frequently in ethnographies (Fortes, 1949; Mitchell, 1956; Hammel, 1961). Some of the impetus for these studies comes out of sociological studies of the American family under the heading, "life cycle of the family." There are only a few studies of the life cycle of the Chinese family (Morioka, 1967:595-606; Fukutake, 1967:13-24). The life cycle of the Sanlei family, a "moving picture" so to speak, will be discussed later in this chapter after the

121 explication of jural rules, ideal patterns, and strategies
178 to achieve goals.
59

Family Surnames

551 The various surnames in Sanlei are indicated in
621 Table 8. As previously stated, Sanlei was founded essentially as a single surname family and the major surname, Liao, continues to be dominant in both number of representatives and socio-political affairs. Counting married women as if they retained their maiden names, 180 people of the 409 in the village (over 44%) are surnamed Liao. Only 34 people (just over 8%) have the second most popular surname (see Table 8).

As can be seen in Table 8, the Liao are even more strongly represented among the chia chang (nearly 55%) than they are in the village overall. Eliminating married women's maiden names, i.e., counting them in terms of their married names, would result in an even greater percentage of Liao surnames (over 50%). Moreover, many surnames other than Liao are connected in some manner to a Liao family. For example, one chia chang named Chien moved to Sanlei some years after his eldest son married a Liao girl from the village and one chia chang named Lin is living with a Liao widow in her house as a common-law husband.

Table 8. Distribution of Surnames in Sanlei

<u>Surname</u>	<u>Number of Individuals*</u>	<u>Number of Chia Chang**</u>
Liao	180	36
Chang	34	5
Huang	29	2
Chien	23	4
Yu	22	2
Chiu	18	3
Wu	14	1
Lin	13	4
Ch'en	11	2
Hsu	10	2
Wang	7	1
Heieh	7	-
Kao	5	1
Tuan	5	-
Chou	4	-
Chuang	2	1
Shih	1	1
Chiang	1	1
12 Other Names	23***	-
TOTAL	409	66

*Employing maiden names

**Head of Family (see next section)

***No more than 3 people per surname

Chia Chang

592

The chia chang, head of the family or household, constitutes a significant role in Chinese society. It is formally recognized in official records and in formal village social organization although official records (household registration) and informal recognition do not always coincide. For example, it is expected that men will start to withdraw from active control of the family as they approach age 60, eventually turning all power over to the eldest son, or at least the oldest one who remains at home.

[886]

592 Although some men have strong personalities and resist
this withdrawal from active control quite vigorously,
592 others are most happy to comply. Life in the village for
888 the semi-retired old man seems to be most pleasant. Liao
Tai-peng, the 72 year old temple caretaker, often states
that he no longer has to worry about finances and does not
really know his family condition as his oldest son has now
taken on the burden of family care. In some cases, a son
desires to assume control before his father is willing to
give it up. This conflict may be particularly strong as
the old man's sixtieth year passes and is often accentuated
by the son's literacy and greater knowledge of new crops
and techniques derived from the greater contact with the
world outside the village. However, because of the strong
values associated with filial piety, the son must be most
careful not to push too hard and bring down the wrath of
fellow villagers. Even when a man yields actual control
to his son, there is seldom a change in the official rec-
ords unless there has been a formal family division (dis-
cussed in a subsequent section). Thus, a man may be listed
as the chia chang in spite of the fact his son is the ef-
fective head. In one case, the official chia chang is se-
nile, frequently wets his pants, and is rarely lucid. He
frequently wanders about the village especially in the
bright sunshine, until led home by his grandchild.

592 Of the 66 chia chang appearing on the official
562 records, 53 or 80% are male and 13 or 20% are female. This

592 letter figure appears high but is consistent with the
562 arguments advanced in this paper, i.e., the structural
position of women is not inferior to men to the degree
suggested in the traditional literature. It is higher
than the 12% chia chang who are female listed by Barclay
for Taiwanese households in 1920 and 1930 (1954:182) and
also exceeds the percentage in the previously mentioned
Shihlin survey of nearly 14% (P.K.C. Liu, 1967:34). In
the case of four of these Sanlei female heads, a husband
or son is the practical or effective head. In the re-
maining nine however, the villagers recognize the woman
as the effective head by inviting her participation as the
family representative in such affairs as village meetings,
the parent teachers association, and temple affairs. In
six of the nine cases, there is an adult male who would be
[624] capable of assuming responsibility. One woman during our
stay in the village became the "assistant pot master" in
charge of her lin (village subdivision) during the "Fire
Purification" ceremony although she had an adopted husband
at home.⁸

592 The birthplace of the current chia chang and the
621 means by which they entered the village are indicative of
591 the nature of village history with its emphasis on contin-
uity. Of the 66, 49 were born in Sanlei and 3 were
adopted-in as small children or babies. This means that
nearly 80% of the chia chang were raised in Sanlei. Most

592 people, particularly mature adults, claim that their de-
621 scendants will always remain in Sanlei. Indeed, the fol-
lowing is one of the arguments used to break up a debate
between two villagers before it gets too serious, "Is this
argument important enough to have your great grandchildren
continue it 50 years from now? Remember they will be
neighbors!" (see Glossary C).

592 Fourteen chia chang migrated to the village, eight
621 from one of the other four villages in Talei Li. As pre-
166 viously stated, the establishment of the government Com-
munication Bureau in Wulei at the end of Talei Li forced
the migration of Wulei villagers who settled, for the most
part, in other villages in the li with primary attention
to Ssulei and secondarily, to Sanlei. The other intra-li
movement results from the fact that Erhlei Ts'un is more
modern than Sanlei and has a higher percentage of its pop-
ulation engaged in non-agricultural economic pursuits.
There has been some movement of farmers from Erhlei to
Sanlei and the reciprocal movement of non-farmers from
Sanlei to Erhlei.

The six chia chang not yet identified all came from
outside the li. A retired Mainland soldier who lives by
himself and works in a nearby coal mine came to Sanlei
merely because he does not want to live in the mine dormi-
tory (it is too much like the army) and because a small
rude house was available for rent. The remaining five
chia chang all migrated from other villages in the same

166 township of Hsin Tien. Three of these came from the moun-
592 tain areas adjacent to Talei Li because of the convenience
621 of the transportation system to town and the presence of
electricity in Sanlei but not in the mountain area.

166 In summary then, of the 66 chia chang, 63 were
591 raised within three miles of the center of the village.
592 This data emphasizes the continuity of the Sanlei popula-
621 tion.

Processes Changing Family Size

592 There are various standard mechanisms for increasing
the size of a family unit. Assuming the basic dyadic unit
in a family consists of a cohabiting adult male and female,
the most common means for adding members is through repro-
duction. This means is assumed for Sanlei Ts'un and will
not be explicitly considered in a separate section of this
592 chapter. Adoption is a process available in most societies
592 to add members who are the equivalent of natural children.
Adoption is common in Sanlei but varies in accordance with
the sex of the child and with the kinds of relationships
592 established between the two families involved. Members
may also be added by marriage which also varies in accord-
ance with the sex of the individual added and also at the
stage of the individual life cycle when the marriage proc-
272 ess is started and consummated. Any of the above changes
592 must be registered in the official records. If the change
is marriage or adoption, it will be reflected in two

217 household registrations, the home of origin and the home
592 of destination.

592 Another concept to be considered in family size is the creation of new independent units. In Sanlei, death must be registered but a death never creates a new unit, for any unit continues in spite of membership changes. New units are only created by the process of family division, a formal event which must be registered in the public office. In a division into two or more new units, one of the new units will usually be considered as a continuation of the old. It is possible, however, for a family unit to disappear. As previously stated, a unit may consist of only one person and this unit would disappear with his death or adoption or if the individual married into another unit.

125
592 Again, because of the errors associated with the official records, the following discussion is based on data which was gathered through interviews in the village. Marriages were only considered if one of the original partners was still alive and residing in the village. There was at least one interview with each living spouse. There were 94 marriages which met this requirement, but this meant more than 94 interviews for in many cases both
[597] partners were still alive. Similarly, adoptions were only considered if one of the original participants was still living in the village. This was usually one of the

125 adopting-in or adopting-out parents but in a few cases,
542 only the adopted child.
547

Regular Marriage

58 There is a traditional ideal form of marriage, one
[83] arranged by a matchmaker between two families who are
strangers or who are at least not already related, the
boy's family slightly richer than the girl's, and with the
couple residing permanently in the home of the groom's
father. This marriage should occur when the male com-
pletes his military service and he should be two to four
years older than his wife but a greater age span is ac-
ceptable.

592 Although all but patrilineal parallel cousin mar-
riages are permitted for parts of China, no cousin mar-
riages were recorded for Sanlei Ts'un as villagers claimed
they were acceptable but undesirable. This differs from
Gallin's study on Taiwan's West Central plain where cousin
marriages were estimated to total about four per cent
(1966:153). There is absolute surname exogamy. Addition-
ally, although not as strongly sanctioned, marriage between
members of certain paired surnames are not permitted, i.e.,
Chien and Liao, although there was one example in the vil-
lage. Outside of these restrictions, there is no patterned
regularity indicating certain surnames commonly marry each
other. Statistically, there is a strong tendency towards

582 li exogamy. Although most brides came from villages within two or three miles of Sanlei, brides brought from central Taiwan carry the most prestige.

591 The most highly rated form of residence after marriage is patrilocal, i.e., the bride joins her husband in his natal home. Neolocal marriage, which results when either the bride and groom establish a new residence by themselves or the bride joins her husband in a place where he is living alone, is not uncommon. Many research reports describing Taiwanese marriage which are based on official records have combined neolocal marriages with the figures for patrilocal marriages resulting in an inflated percentage for the latter (P.K.C. Liu, 1967) because the category of wife joins husband in the records applies equally to either. Some marriages, especially in the recent period, do not fit these traditional anthropological categories. Some young people are living and working in town. They marry in the village but immediately establish a new residence in town with an underlying intention to return to the village in two or three years when the wife has a baby in order to live patrilocally.

Selecting a Spouse

584 From the point of view of the marriage partners there are three different marriage procedures for obtaining a spouse. The original form is the "arranged marriage,"

584 established between the bride's parents and groom's
parents through the auspices of a matchmaker, the bride
[178] and groom not meeting until the wedding. This form, once
very popular, is declining in frequency, constituting
about one quarter of the recent marriages in Sanlei Ts'un
from data and estimated about the same for the li.

A second form is what we have called a "veto
marriage." It is closely related to the strictly "arranged
marriage" because the procedures are similar, initial nego-
tiations being handled by a matchmaker between two sets of
parents. However, before the engagement, the young people
meet each other, frequently at the potential bride's home
in the presence of both parents and the matchmaker. Al-
ternatively, they may observe each other but not meet by
both attending the same function such as a movie or amuse-
ment park in separate groups. Each potential spouse re-
tains the right to veto the marriage but this is seldom
done openly. The negative sentiment is expressed by point-
ing out faults, "He doesn't look strong." "She looks like
she has expensive tastes." Positive sentiment, on the
other hand, is merely a statement by the child to the
parent that "You know best," or "Whatever you think." (See
Glossary C.) This data was obtained by both interviews and
observation. I accompanied one village boy, his parents,
and the matchmaker to the home of the potential bride where
we visited for an hour and left. In the taxi on the way
back to the village, the boy told his father that he should

584 make the decision because he had more experience. The boy had previously rejected two other girls by politely pointing out possible faults. The boy and his father did not openly discuss the boy's role in determining the marriage, but that evening the father told me that if the young couple later had trouble the son could not blame him for making a poor choice as he had played a part in the selection of the bride. I also observed two similar visits to a village girl's home and the conversation which followed;

[198] one suitor was rejected and the other accepted. This form has always been present in Chinese culture but in the modern period has supplanted in frequency the arranged form.

The final form which we are calling a "love marriage" is increasing the most rapidly in frequency. It is simply the self-selection of mates. Often, the engagement and wedding are legitimized in traditional terms by employing a matchmaker to carry on negotiations and arrangements as if the decision had not already been made. Among the oldest generation still living in the village, there seemed to have been only one true "love marriage" that was opposed by parents. The couple registered the marriage with the Japanese police and ran off to the mountains to live and did not return until after the girl was obviously pregnant. The term, "love marriage," could also be applied to common-law marriages and many remarriages, especially among couples who marry rather late in life.

584 Careful collection of data is necessary in obtain-
554 ing marriage rates by types for there is a tendency to
183 disguise the latter two types as if they were the highly
123 rated arranged form. One man in Sanlei once told me he
had an "arranged marriage" and did not see his bride until
the wedding. I later learned he and his wife were from
the same village, they grew up in homes only 100 feet
apart, and both played on the same school tag-ball team.
(For discussion of marriage events, see Chapter VIII.)

Incorporation of the Bride

593 Marriage does not make the bride a full-fledged
851 member of her new family for a wife attains a status in
her husband's home only through her children, especially
sons (C. K. Yang, 1959a:89). This value, true for much
of China, has been clearly expressed by Fei:

... the legal act of marriage, although preceding
the birth of a child, always anticipates the reali-
zation of parenthood ... the full status of a
woman is acquired after the birth of a child. Sim-
ilarly, the affinal relation remains impotent un-
less a child is born ... (1939:30).

This is also true in Sanlei, a wife is not fully incor-
porated into her husband's chia until after she has a
child. As will be discussed later, an adopted child may
be substituted for a natural child. In spite of the fact
that the literature suggests that barren women could be
divorced (Lang, 1946:40), no one in Sanlei had ever heard
of it happening.

Chao Fu (Adopted-in Husband)

171 In order to continue the family line and provide
583 descendants to carry on ancestor worship, a man may bring
591 in a wife for his son as described above. However, some
families will have daughters but no sons. There is a cul-
turally specified means for overcoming the problem, the
adopted-in husband, chao fu, a culture trait which is found
all over China (Gallin, 1966:155-6; Fei, 1939:71-2; Hsu,
1967:98-103). It is often called a matrilocal marriage
although China is classified as a patrilocal society
(Murdock, 1967:196). Its frequency is yet to be properly
assessed for a few statistics are ever provided. Fei lists
12 examples for Kaihsienkung and states that this is sig-
nificant but provides no percentages (1939:72). Gallin
lists six such marriages for Hsin Hsing, again without
percentages, but states that it is "difficult to see any
tendency for or against the practice in Hsin Hsing" (1966:
188). Only in West Town does the practice appear to be
frequent where one third to one half of the marriages are
matrilocal (Hsu, 1967:98). However, there is a serious
question as to whether or not West Town is in the main-
stream of Chinese culture (Hsu, 1967:17).

178 The exact numbers of matrilocal marriage in Taiwan
583 based on official records provided by Barclay for the
721 period from 1906 to 1943 (1954:229) indicate a steady de-
cline from a high of 21.8% in 1906 to a low of 6.2% in

178 1943. The decline appears to continue for the P. K. C.
583 Liu study in 1967 for Shihlin indicates less than 5% of the
591 households were matrilocal (1967:34). No matter what year
is selected from the above as a standard, Sanlei is de-
viant. Of the 94 marriages previously listed, nineteen
were regular matrilocal with an adopted-in husband and
six more are also classified as matrilocal, an adopted-in
husband for a daughter who had been previously adopted-in
as a child. Twenty-five such marriages constitute 26.6%
of the total studied, a percentage higher than Barclay
lists above for any year in Taiwan, even 1906. Only Wolf
furnishes exact figures based on full data acquired eth-
nographically for a village also located in the Taipei
region. Among 119 married men, 26 were chao fu (1966:889)
resulting in a percentage of 21.8% which is not unlike
Sanlei's 26.6%.

114 Barclay's figures regarding this form of marriage
583 are questionable. He reports that there were significant
591 problems in translation for "the terms are Japanese and the
facts Chinese" (1954:228). Furthermore, he points out that
other compromises may be made, the marrying male may assume
the wife's surname (1954:228) and this could make errors in
[558] records. As discussed by Gallin (1966:156-8) and Barclay
(1954:229), because the adopted-in husband loses his dig-
nity and authority and is often insulted, there would be
strong reasons favoring an attempt to conceal the true
incidence.

114 incidence. P. K. C. Liu also points out that the percent-
583 age listed is probably lower than the actual frequency
591 (1967:60). An original matrilocal marriage may now be
considered patrilocal because either the girl's parents
are dead or the couple, after some years in the matrilocal
residence, had established a new residence.

591 A family without a son but with a daughter, natural
593 or adopted, can assure the continuation of the family by
this procedure of matrilocal or adopted-in husband marriage.
At marriage, the groom becomes part of the family of the
bride. The degree of his incorporation is established
through negotiation. Often, the ceremony itself is the
mirror image of a regular wedding, celebrated at the
bride's home rather than the groom's, arranged by a match-
maker and with the identical establishment of ch'in ch'i
(affinal) relationships between the two families. The
forms of "arranged," "veto," and "love" described above
may be identical.

583 The conditions of the marriage contract may vary
584 but there is always an agreement that the new family and
769 some or all of its descendants will continue the worship
of the ancestors in the bride's home. Although the agree-
ment is often written, a few villagers prefer an oral
agreement because a written agreement looks too much like
a potential court case. Sometimes, conflict later occurs
with reference to the terms of the agreement. Most often,

583 the agreement is written in duplicate, one copy left on
584 the ancestor's table and the other burned in the ances-
769 tor's pot⁹ to properly inform the ancestors.

583 The groom may or may not bring in ancestors of his
769 own for worship, i.e., an additional ancestor's pot. The
583 groom usually retains his own surname, but may assume his
551 wife's surname or even combine the two to produce a joint
surname. There were none of the latter two currently in
Sanlei but examples of each were found in T'oulei.

583 The most variance in marriage contract terms is
584 with reference to the surnames of the children. The range
551 is from all children assuming the groom's surname (two
851 cases) through half assuming each surname alternating in
order of birth (three cases), to all assuming the bride's
surname (one case). The most common pattern is for one
child to assume the bride's surname and the rest the
groom's (19 cases). In this arrangement, the one child is
always either the first or second, usually with the
bride's parents retaining a choice and not making it until
immediately after the first child is born. If the first
child is a boy, it will be assigned the mother's surname,
but if the first child is a girl, frequently she will ob-
tain the father's surname, with the second automatically
assigned the mother's surname. In this case, the hope of
the mother's parents is that the second child will be a
male for a male child with the maternal grandfather's

surname is the best means for guaranteeing continuity of worship.

The process, or combination of processes described above, may be quite extensive, i.e., they may be repeated in successive generations if no male is produced. One extreme example is illustrated by the case of Liao Chi-cheng (Figure 7) who is now age 80 and the most educated man in his generation. Liao (1) had no children but adopted a daughter (2) and later adopted in a husband for

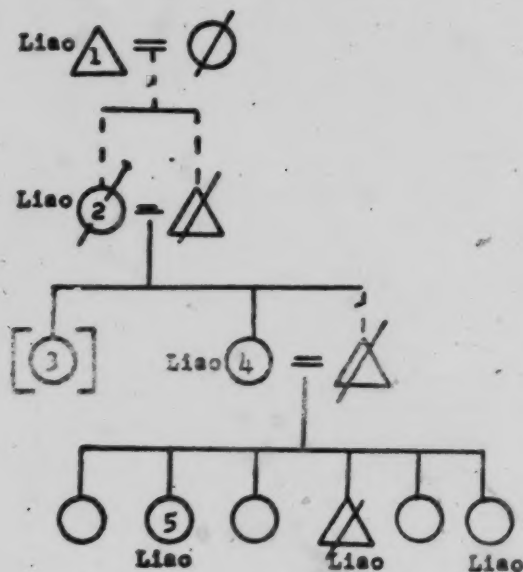


Figure 7. Kinship Diagram, Liao Chi-cheng Chia
(All above individuals surnamed Liao
are so noted.)

583 her. She (2) had two children: one (3) married out, but
851 an adopted-in husband was brought in for the other (4).

The latter (4) had six children before her husband died and half were named Liao and half Wu in accordance with the initial arrangement that alternating children would be assigned each surname. At the time of the study, the family was searching for a man to be brought in as an adopted-in husband for Liao's 18 year old great-granddaughter (5). Liao (1) hoped to have him agree that all his children would have the surname Liao, but he was willing to reduce his conditions to a minimum of his choice of one of the first two only. Thus, Liao Chi-cheng (1) has been able to maintain his family name and ancestral line for three generations although there were no natural children in one generation, only girls in another, and the only male in the third died as a child.

583 Men who become adopted-in husbands usually possess
556 some social characteristic that makes them unlikely pros-
581 pects for a regular marriage. That is, they may be from a poor family, be an orphan, or be the last in a family with many sons. In each of these cases, it would be difficult for the man's family to afford the expenses necessary for a regular marriage. Sometimes the man has a physical defect such as a crippled leg which lowers his value as a groom. On the other hand, it is not unusual for a quite capable and ambitious young man with otherwise poor

583 prospects to become an adopted-in husband for he does gain
586 a wife, usually without cost, and also gains a home and an
581 economic stake in his wife's property, the extent determined by negotiation.

583 At marriage, adopted-in husbands are older than
582 regular husbands, 27.1 versus 25.8, but their brides are younger, 19.8 versus 21.2. Although I was not able to establish the explanation with certainty, it does appear that the older age for men is related to their inferior prospects as grooms. The younger age for women seems due to two facts. For one, they are probably acceding to parental wishes for fear of the lack of descendants; for the other, there is the absence of any pressure to delay marriage because of the girl's economic or labor contributions since she will not be leaving the household.

593 Most men state they would not like to be an adopted-
589 in husband, a chao fu. However, the status of an adopted-in husband does not appear to be as low in Sanlei as has been described in some other communities (Gallin, 1966: 156; Barclay, 1954:229). For example, one adopted-in husband is the elected representative to the farmers' association, another is the chairman of the mediation team for a nearby coal mine, and yet another was the pot master for the last Matsui festival. Perhaps the differences in status are related to the frequency of matrilocal marriages in various communities. Only West Town among the Chinese

583 ethnographies has a higher percentage of adopted-in hus-
558 bands than Sanlei and Hsu states that such a husband does
not have low status (1967:98). Sanlei villagers indicate
it is a natural process to adopt husbands, what else can
a family without a son do?

583 The frequency of this form of marriage has impor-
183 tant implications for the role of women. There are prob-
123 ably regional variations across China with respect to
rates but, as stated, rarely are competent data provided
in ethnographic studies to support the summaries and ab-
stractions. Because of the low status usually claimed for
chao fu marriage, it is likely the estimates by villagers
on which the summary may be based would be low. Among 15
Sanlei men, the average guess at the incidence of chao fu
marriage was 1 in 10 with a single high guess of 1 in 7 by
an old man. Since the actual incidence was higher than
1 in 4, this inaccuracy is significant. If this disser-
tation was based on interviews and the impressions of in-
formants rather than on actual counting, a quite different
picture would likely have emerged.

593 Many, if not all accounts of the Chinese family
583 discuss the great period of stress for the new bride when
she enters her husband's home as a virtual stranger as one
important factor contributing to her lowly condition. Con-
versely, few reports discuss the role of men in the case
of the chao fu marriage who enter the bride's home as a

593 virtual stranger. A. P. Wolf is a notable exception
583 (1968). He reports that: chao fu husbands are often pam-
pered in their new homes, a behavior pattern also common
in Sanlei because of the fear the man will leave. For
Sanlei, in 1 of 4 marriages, it is the male who must ad-
just to the female's household with her father usually the
effective head.

Siaosiv (Adopted Daughter Marriage)

534 Of the 94 marriages under consideration, twelve
597 (12.8%) were the type discussed by Fei (1939:53) as the
siaosiv marriage and elaborated by Lang (1946:127) and
Gallin (1966:163-6). In brief, for Sanlei, the parents of
a boy adopt a female baby three to ten years (average
seven) after the birth of a boy and raise them as brother
and sister. With about six months notice, when the girl
[585] is 18 or 19, the couple are married. There are rarely
parties or any significant wedding ceremony as merely
"putting the shoes under the bed," or "pushing them to-
554 gether." (see Glossary C). The first phrase is also asso-
587 ciated with common-law marriages and the remarriage of
588 widows or divorcees. These marriage types all share in
common a relatively low status in the village value system.

585 Under normal circumstances, a wedding is a gay
occasion with a big dinner, many guests, etc. The affair
lasts most of a full day with the newly-weds as the center

585 of attention. Important guests toast them and speeches are made about them and their families. In the whole life cycle, the funeral of an old person is the only rite de passage approaching it in importance. If a person does not have a wedding party, it is likely he will never be the center of attention at any major affair. Since he also goes to his friend's weddings, he wants his family to [885] reciprocate as a host. The wedding also marks his status change from immaturity to full adult, since an unmarried man of 30 cannot hold traditional positions available to a married man of 24. The wedding party marks this status change for everyone in the area to see and without a big ceremony the status change is not clearly communicated.

178 This kind of marriage, the siaosiv, is often dis-
584 cussed in Chinese ethnographies but, once more, rarely are
597 statistical data provided. Gallin points out that the practice is relatively important in Hsin Hsing but declining in frequency (1966:135) as is also true in Sanlei. Adoption of daughters remains very common in Sanlei (see subsequent section), but marriages of the siaosiv type are relatively rare given the number of possibilities, i.e., families with an adopted daughter and natural son of appropriate ages. Of the 119 marriages previously listed for another Hokkien village, 23 were siaosiv (19.3%), even higher than the 12.8% listed for Sanlei (A. P. Wolf, 1966: 889).

584
597
593
At the time of the adoption and while the child is being raised, there are few differences to be distinguished between girls who were adopted as future mates and girls who were merely adopted as daughters. For his Hokkien village in northern Taiwan, Wolf argues that there is a difference in the daughters who were adopted as future mates and those as mere daughters (1966:884) because he classifies the adoption of a daughter as a future mate as part of the marriage procedure. He claims it differs from the regular marriage only in the longer length of time between change of residence and consumation. Yet, his data do not fully support this position. If the boy dies, the girl is not a widow (1966:884) and furthermore, she becomes eligible as a marriage partner for men such as her intended's brother or his patrilineal parallel first cousin with whom relations would have been incestuous if she has actually been married as planned. Similarly, it will be pointed out later that a sisosiv daughter may be married to a younger brother if the eldest son is able to convince his parents he should have a regular marriage.

It appears for Sanlei that the actual decision regarding marriage is not made until the couple is approximately the appropriate age for marriage. Even then, the decision is dependent upon the financial well-being of the family and the ability of the boy to resist his parents which he usually tries to do. In all twelve examples

584 cited above the male was informed first and in only one
597 case, did the boy claim he did not try to indicate strong
593 reluctance. This latter individual remains today a most
filial son, age 42, living in an extended family with his
father having full control of all family income and ex-
penditures. Eleven of the twelve cases then may be considered
on one level to indicate a failure by the boy or girl to
obtain their wishes. Sometimes, the reluctance was ex-
pressed mildly but in other cases, there was a loud argu-
ment, lasting days, which was heard all over the village.
In one of the twelve marriages, the bride was adopted to
marry the eldest son in the family. She later was married
to the second son after the eldest son successfully per-
suaded his father not to force the marriage. The second
son also tried to refuse but his father was adamant.

584 Wolf (1966:883-92) found that the siaosiv marriage
581 had a much lower probability of success than normal types
which he relates to the nature of the causes for the "in-
cest tabu." Data for Sanlei tend to support his argument.
Only two of the twelve marriages would be rated as above
average successes in the village. In both cases (one is
the filial son example cited previously), each partner is
584 quiet and unaggressive and was so as a child. All four
836 spouses were virgins at marriage and neither man had been
to the tea or wine houses. Although there was some ritual
avoidance after the engagement was announced, in both

584 cases the men were sexually curious but engaged in only a
836 minimum of petting with his future spouse such as squeez-
ing her breast before the marriage. My own opinion, based
on a general impression is that both men even today are
rather naive in orientation toward the world.

584 As stated previously, in some cases the reluctance
593 and dismay was expressed openly by the son and foster daugh-
ter both and considerable argument ensued although the
couple eventually married. Although not fully revealed
by the data for the 94 marriages, some couples were success-
ful in their arguments with parents and managed to change
the plans for a siaosiv marriage. This is a delicate area
in which to collect data for it necessarily exposes someone
as an unfilial person. Since the son is usually informed
first, if the proposed marriage is immediately cancelled
it is possible that only the father, mother, and son would
ever know that the possibility had been advanced. Thus,
an informant revealing this information would be required
to state that his son had been unfilial. Yet, I did find
four such examples among current living Sanlei men and
women.

584 The incidence of the adopted girl marrying out does
556 not necessarily reveal refusal. The original purpose for
the adopted daughter marriage was to save wedding costs
and if the family financial status had improved, a regular
bride may be brought in and the foster daughter married out

584 in the usual manner. From the official records, it is
556 impossible to tell if the decision to marry out the girl
was made by the father alone because his family could now
afford the regular marriage with its consequent prestige
accrual for the family or was due to the non-acceptance of
the original match by the boy and/or girl. In Wolf's
report, of 19 men born between 1910 and 1930 who later had
an adopted sister designated as a future mate, only two
eventually married, and in 15 cases, the young couple re-
fused to go through with the match (1966:886). Only two
of nineteen does not offer strong support for his conten-
tion that the adoption is a "partial" marriage. Indeed,
other kinds of data suggest it is less a "partial marriage"
than is an engagement. If an engaged girl refused to com-
plete the wedding, her family would owe damages to the
groom's family. On the other hand, if an adopted daughter
refused to complete the wedding, her natal family (with
whom relations are most often maintained) would not owe
damages.

275 Unlike the men in Wolf's study (1966:883-92), vil-
548 lage men of Sanlei rarely travel to the wine and tea houses
in Hsin Tien or Taipei. They do go occasionally to an un-
licensed drinking and eating location in a basement in a
nearby village house to eat snacks and drink wine or beer
and sing or play games, but no prostitutes are ever present.

584 However, four promiscuous women do reside in Sanlei and
581 villagers consider one insatiable. Of these four women,
837 two were formerly siaosiv. This frequency is highly significant by sign although the "n" is too small for adequate testing. Among siaosiv, there is a high proportion of quite unhappy marriages and one childless marriage, the only childless marriage of ten years or more in which the wife was under 25 at marriage and in which the couple still refuses to adopt a child.

584 Everyone in the village argues why a siaosiv marriage
183 is a good idea for someone else. Their reasons emphasize both the economies to be realized and the positiveness of good relations between mother and daughter-in-law which must have been present if the match had been proposed. The reasons given for not personally desiring this kind of marriage was always either, "I would be too embarrassed," or, "It would not be interesting" (see Glossary C). It is significant that no man or woman in the village would prefer a siaosiv marriage.

178 The last siaosiv marriage in Sanlei Ts'un was in
584 1939 and since that date, three girls who had been adopted into the village as future mates married out in the regular fashion. As far as I could tell, only one of these was after an argument (a "love marriage" to a boy from T'oulei) while the adopted fathers of the other two claimed that they married the girls out because siaosiv marriage now

584 would only result in trouble for "young people make more
178 decisions today" (see Glossary C). The frequency of
[561] siaosiv marriage is inversely related to prosperity and
directly related to the lessening power of older genera-
tions over younger generations.

Implications of Marriage Forms

591 The variety of marriage residences are particularly
606 significant for the status of women. The major stress for
the bride in her new home largely originates from the
groom's mother according to the traditional literature (see
Chapter X). Combining the 12.8% siaosiv marriages in which
the bride was raised in the groom's home with the 25.6% of
the brides who married chao fu and thus did not move to the
groom's home at marriage and then adding in the "neolocal"
forms suggests that close to half of all brides in Sanlei
do not have the kind of "mother-in-law" problem in their
homes so characteristic of the Chinese literature.

Reasons for Adopting Daughters

599 There are a number of different reasons for the
adoption of a daughter. Gallin lists, in addition to a
future mate for a son as discussed above, such reasons as
no children in the family, to replace a dead infant, to
invite a natural baby boy (chao ti), and as a servant
(1966:161-3). These reasons are also common in Sanlei
except that the last is very rare and, of course, always

597 represents a loss of a village girl for no one in Sanlei has a servant.

584 In order to eventually allow for a siaosiv marriage,
597 a family frequently gives up a natural daughter in adoption and immediately brings in an adopted girl, i.e., if a woman with a son age five or so has a baby daughter, she can give her out for adoption and replace her with an adopted daughter. The expenses of raising children is equal whether natural or adopted. However, when the children are mature, with adoption and a siaosiv marriage, there is only one marriage to arrange instead of two and the larger expenses of the groom's parents for a regular marriage are avoided.

There is a greater stigma attached to giving up a girl in adoption to a family which has no son as a potential future mate than to one with a son. If the family has a son, people claim it might be something like an arranged marriage, but if there is no son, it can only be considered the same as selling the girl. Most girls from proper Sanlei families who are adopted out go to families with sons of appropriate ages (discussed in a later section).

597 Other reasons for adopting daughters are suggested.
562 Because a woman gains status in her husband's home through
842 her children and since an adopted daughter is legally and morally the equivalent of a natural daughter, a fast means of incorporation is provided. A new wife can significantly

597 improve her position in an extended household soon after
562 marriage by adopting a daughter rather than waiting for
842 a child to be born. This reason for adoption is not frequent but does demonstrate a significant factor with regard to the rôle of women. There was only one case in Sanlei, one in Erhlei, and two in T'oulei but several people discussed it specifically and generally. It tends to occur only when the woman has a "strong personality," has earned money working outside the village before marriage, and is married at an age two to five years beyond the median age. These conditions suggest that the practice may be an attempt to minimize the status loss for such a woman upon marriage.

597 A second additional reason for the adoption of
769 daughters is related to the mechanism of the adopted-in husband marriage discussed in an earlier section. A family without children would be incapable of meeting the injunction that there be descendants to carry on worship of ancestors. Because of the high death rate, a family with only one or two children is also in a precarious position. According to Hsu and true for Sanlei as well as most of China:

The desire for male descendants is intense. In local usage this is to insure the continuation of smoke from the incense at ancestral shrines. To perpetuate this smoke insures the continuation (1967:75).

597 It is possible to adopt a daughter, raise her, and at the
769 appropriate age, bring in an adopted husband to aid in
583 carrying on the family line. Of the 94 marriages previously listed, 6 were of this type, an adopted daughter who later had an adopted husband. (The discussion related to Figure 7 demonstrates this process in one generation.) In this kind of adoption plus marriage, although there is no "biological" continuation of a family line, there is a "sociological" continuation.

597 The third and final additional reason seems to be
608 based on friendship or interpersonal relations. It is possible that a ch'in ch'i (affinal) relationship may be established or an old one strengthened by means of adoption of a daughter. There were three adopted daughters in Sanlei that established new ch'in ch'i relationships between neighbors who had been good friends. In another case, an adopted daughter affirmed a relationship by a kind of exchange, a repayment of a daughter adopted in a previous generation although the first adoption was never construed as a debt. In all four cases, there was a movement of a daughter whose birth order in her natal family was fourth to sixth to a family which had less than two natural daughters.

Distribution of Adopted Daughter Types

597 There were eight unmarried girls living in Sanlei
162
562 who were adopted daughters, twelve who had been adopted and

597 married as siaosiv, and six who had been adopted and later
562 married to adopted-in husbands. Finally, there were five
162 wives who had once been adopted daughters but married out.
In total, 31 females who were living in Sanlei at one time
had been adopted daughters (see Table 9). Since there
were 194 females at the time of the census, 16% had once
been adopted. This may appear to be high, but the fre-
quency appears to be decreasing and is probably related
to the decline in siaosiv marriage and improved economic
conditions. In a 1934-5 rural survey near Taipei, it was
discovered that 25% of the females were once adopted
(Okada, 1937), a percentage much higher than current Tai-
wan rates.

Table 9. Adopted Daughter Types in Sanlei Ts'un

Type	Number	Per Cent
Adopted, Unmarried	8	4.1
Adopted, Married as <u>Siaosiv</u>	12	6.2
Adopted, Married with <u>Chao Fu</u>	6	3.1
Adopted, Married Out	5	2.6
Total Adopted	31	16.0
Never Adopted	163	84.0
Village Female Total	194	100.0

The data regarding girls who were adopted out of
Sanlei Ts'un is not as complete as will be explained by
the details of where and how adopted girls originate.
Nevertheless, among the families currently living in San-
lei, there were 15 girls who had been adopted out. There

597 is some overlap with the previous figures because an adop-
562 tion between families who both live in the village counts
162 twice, once as an "in" and once as an "out." The general
opinion of the villagers is that the number of adoptions
in and out of the village has been approximately equal.

597 One of the items of the household registration is
562 the birth order of the child, distinct for each sex.

[217] Birth orders are listed in Table 10 for the 31 adopted-in
females. Residents argue that daughters are usually given
in adoption because a family has too many already, but the
data is only partially supportive of this belief. A high
number of adopted children whose birth order is first or
second indicates other processes are significant although
nearly sixty per cent of the adoptions are from families
which already have three or more girls. Since girls do
not have a value as high as boys, it is quite probable that
younger girls will be released by families that have sev-
eral daughters. In some cases, it appears that economic
deprivation necessitates the release of girls although
there was only one family currently living in Sanlei who
supposedly gave away girls for this reason.

[586] Divorce or widowhood among people who are not in-
corporated in larger chia also results in releasing chil-
dren who may have a birth order number which is first or
second. The exchange of natural daughters for adopted
daughters to promote later siaosiv marriages explains some

597
562 Table 10. Birth Order of Adopted-in Female Residents

<u>Birth Order</u>	<u>Number</u>
1	8
2	5
3	3
4	6
5	4
6	3
7	<u>2</u>
Total	31

[348] of the other first or second daughter adoptions. Finally, illegitimate children and children from common-law marriages are sometimes released. In many of these latter cases, there would be no one in Sanlei to interview as required by the conditions for including the examples.

597 The age at adoption ranges from immediately after birth to as much as eight or nine years. Most frequently, they tend to be about age two or soon after weaning, while the very young babies usually replace a nursing child who has died or are exchanged between two families who both plan siaosiv marriages. The adopted girls tend to originate from the local area immediately surrounding Sanlei although two came from Taipei and one from Hualien.

Incorporation ceremonies for adopted children are minimal and are typically arranged by a matchmaker. Among friends or ch'n ch'i (affinal relatives), there is no payment of "milk money," an equivalent of the bride price at [435] marriage. "Milk money" for female babies averages \$100.00.

599 paid to the natal family but it is said that the older
[435] the girl and the more attractive her appearance, the
greater the amount required as an adoption fee. However,
no villager knows of a Sanlei girl who was merely sold
but, as discussed above, given the characteristics of some
people who release girls, i.e., parents of an illegitimate
child, this does not mean it has not occurred. Villagers
[548] did know of two girls in another village a mile distant
who were sold to become prostitutes. Three Sanlei village
girls have become prostitutes in Taipei but they departed
[178] for their own reasons after reaching maturity. Once again,
impressions indicate that the frequency of adoptions cur-
rently is slightly less than it was in the past.

599 • The traditional literature suggests that the treat-
562 ment of adopted daughters in a household was often extreme-
593 ly harsh, while adopted sons were treated well (Latourette,
1959:679-80; Burkhardt, 1953, 174-6; Smith, 1899:237-311).
For the most part, girls adopted into Sanlei were about as
well treated as natural daughters. There was strong sen-
timent also that girls given out in adoption should go to
a good home, particularly one that had the potential for a
later siaosiv marriage because it was said that if the
girl was an intended future bride, she would be raised
under conditions to promote good relations in the family.
A Sanlei family which merely sold a girl would be strongly
censured.

Adopted Sons

597 In addition to birth, boys may also be incorporated
562 into a family through adoption. Adoption of males usually
occurs when they are very young and tends to be full and
complete. The adoption of baby boys is much less frequent
[162] than that of girls. At the time of the census there were
only seven males (3.2%) living in Sanlei who had ever been
adopted, a significant contrast with the 16% adopted fe-
males. There are two major types of boy adoptions.

The type which is considered a mere sale comprised
five of the seven male adoptions in Sanlei. As described
by Gallin for Hsin Hsing (1966:166-8), no permanent rela-
tions are established or maintained between the two fami-
lies in the transaction and there are strenuous efforts to
keep any information about an adopted boy's natal family
597 secret. In contrast, the marriage ceremony of an adopted
562 girl frequently involved three families: the groom's,
585 the girl's natal and the girl's adoptive. It is not un-
common in the case of an adopted daughter's wedding for
the bride to return to her natal home for a day or two be-
fore the wedding. Also, the usual visit by bride and
groom three days after their marriage is consummated to
worship the wife's ancestors is often to both of the girl's
homes, natal and adopted. In the case of the marriage of
an adopted boy who was merely sold, however, the boy's
597 natal family is seldom involved. Villagers believe that

597 if the boy learns about his natal home he will have a
strong desire to return to it permanently.

597 The second type is not quite a complete adoption
602 socially although legally it is a standard adoption. Two
of the seven Sanlei adoptions were of this form, an adop-
tion between two closely-related family units which are
usually composed of patrilineal kinsmen. A son might be
given by one man who had several sons in adoption to his
brother who had none. Since the household containing the
two brothers may not have divided, this adoption may not
involve a physical movement of the boy and in any case,
the two families will usually remain intimate. In one of
the Sanlei adoptions, two brothers were involved.

The other was deviant and involved matrilineal
stepbrothers in an undivided household (illustrated in
Figure 8). After Huang (1) died, leaving one son (5) his
wife (2) remarried a Liao (3) and they had one son, a
Liao (4). They all constituted a single economic family.
Huang (5) married and had five children, all with the sur-
name of Huang. Liao (4) married and had a daughter but
his wife (7) ran away with a Mainland soldier, taking the
child (8). The balance of the people on the diagram are
now living as a single economic unit and worshipping two
sets of ancestors, Liao and Huang, but these arrangements
would not leave anyone to properly continue worship of the
Liao line, i.e., there are no longer any Liao in the

597 youngest generation. Huang (5) gave up his second son
602 (6) to Liao (4) in adoption, and his surname (6) was
changed from Huang to Liao. Since the household contin-
ues as a single chia, the adoption may appear to be a
trivial structural modification but this is not true for
the adopted son (6) will be different from his siblings
in worship and inheritance. He (6) is now attending a
junior high school as the only person in the family who
has ever gone beyond elementary school, the extra cost
borne by his adopted father (4).

597 Adopted boys originate in a manner distinctively
562 different from the manner described for girls. On the one
hand, boys are seldom given up as a surplus. They tend to
be first or second in birth order and often are merely

597
602
601

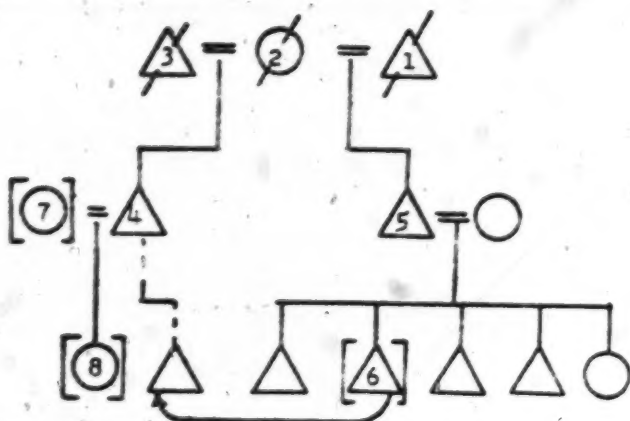


Figure 8. Kinship Diagram, Huang Wen-sheng Chia

597 sold, probably because they are illegitimate and rather
562 than a matchmaker, there is a broker. The going price in
(435) Hsin Tien in 1966, although the supply was most limited,
was \$3,000.00 for a baby boy. Since a girl could be pur-
chased in the same way for less than \$300.00, the price
is indicative of their respective value ratings. The only
adopted boys who had a high birth order were usually adop-
ted between patrilineally related kinsmen.

Family Division and Inheritance

428 The above described processes are used along with
562 birth to build families. Conversely, the breakdown of a
family is also a significant step, usually accomplished by
family division, a legal event requiring registration in
the public office. Family division can be smooth and har-
monious but is usually a period of tension for disputes
over the division of property are common. It is usual to
employ a distant relative, often a respected ch'in ch'i
(affinal relative), to negotiate and mediate the division.
Some people gain reputations as being very skillful in
mediating family divisions.

According to the Law (C. K. Yang, 1959b:92), there
should be no differences in shares according to sex but
in practice, girls rarely get a share equal to boys. It
appears that it is considered to be the family's respon-
sibility to see a daughter properly married and living
with her husband. If she is an old maid, a widow, or a

428 divorcee who has returned home, she may receive a share
562 about equal to her brothers but since marriage and re-marriage is common, the occurrence of these conditions is infrequent. If family division occurs with yet unmarried daughters in the household, part of the process will be an assumption of the obligation to see that each has a good match. The implications of the equal inheritance law is such that if there were two boys and a girl in a family, each should receive one third of the estate (assuming both parents are dead). In Sanlei, each boy would get one half if the girl was married. If she was not married, one brother, most likely the eldest, would get a larger share, the extra amount sufficient to provide a dowry for his sister. Only if the girl were married with an adopted-in husband (chao fu) or if her eventual marriage prospects were nearly nil would she obtain a one-third share. Girls appear to sign papers when it is occasionally necessary to give up their rights without pressure, but often it is merely understood that the daughter has few, if any, rights. No female has yet contested a division in the courts.

The immediately preceding action of females does not appear consistent with what I have argued about the status of women. That is, women seem to be extremely inferior to men with respect to inheritance although I claim women approach equality with men but I believe the appearance is

428 deceiving. To support my position, note that nearly 100%
562 of the females in Sanlei eventually marry. Widows and
428 divorcees in an age bracket when family division is likely
562 to occur, i.e., when their father is around age 60, also
587 have nearly 100% success in obtaining second husbands.
589

There is agreement in the village that a man is responsible for supporting his female dependents although they too may make economic contributions through their own efforts. An unmarried female is the responsibility of her natal family (adopting family if adopted) while a married female is the responsibility of her husband's family. This responsibility continues even after her husband dies. That is, if a family containing a widow and her children plus her husband's brother were to divide, the widow and her brother-in-law would share equally if her remarriage prospects were low. However, without children, as previously stated, she is not fully incorporated in her husband's family and would not share, but a childless widow is still a prime marriage prospect. In Sanlei, a widow is usually helped to remarry by obtaining a dowry from her first husband's family. If she has children, she is usually expected to have an adopted-in husband. If she has many children, her first husband's family may offer a second prospective groom one of the children in adoption (changing his surname) as an inducement to become a chao fu. There was one such case
428 in Sanlei and two in Szulei. A daughter with a chao fu
562

428 husband will get a full share of her parent's estate al-
562 though her husband may receive a portion of her share as
specified in the original marriage contract.

In summary, the traditional system did provide for a woman by assigning some man responsibility for her economic welfare. The new system of inheritance which makes women equal to men in economic terms is also designed to provide for women but in a different manner. The old system works and no woman has yet decided to attempt to introduce the new system into the village because the immediate personal gain might not offset the potential long-term security for women currently provided by the community.

In general, division of a family involves the male patriline. Family division can best be viewed as anticipated inheritance. All a man's sons have rights to his property even while he is still in active control. For example, sale of a piece of property may be of questionable validity without the approval of a man's sons. In Sanlei, if there is only one son (producing a stem family) family division will probably never occur. If there are two or more sons, division is most likely when the youngest son marries and has a child, but if the father dies before the last son is married, division is likely to occur soon after the funeral. Most divisions occur before the death of the last parent.

428
59 Inheritance, real or anticipated in the case of division before the death of parents, is equal for all sons (with exceptions to be discussed later). Diagrammed in Figure 9 is a patrilineal descent group which we will assume represents a single chia with division about to occur. Conceivably, division could produce various combinations of new chia but in Sanlei, the actual division will nearly always produce three new units: (2,5), (3,6), and (4), each unit receiving an equal share. Variations reflect the condition of (1) or (4). (1) may be attached to one of the three units; (1) may constitute a separate unit with an equal or partial share to be later split again after his death; or (1) may be a separate unit with no share but supported by the other three on a rotating basis. If (4) is unmarried, he may be attached, with his share, to one of the first two groups with a strong tendency for the parents to remain with the youngest son (4).

Almost always, a division focuses on one generational level only. That is, (5) or (6) never break off into distinct units at the time (2), (3) and (4) are dividing. It is possible that (2) and (5) could break off as a single unit and leave the rest of the original family as a whole, but this never takes place. If (2) insists on breaking off, the whole family will divide into the three units posited above although if only (2) is insistent, there may be above average amounts of bitterness generated.

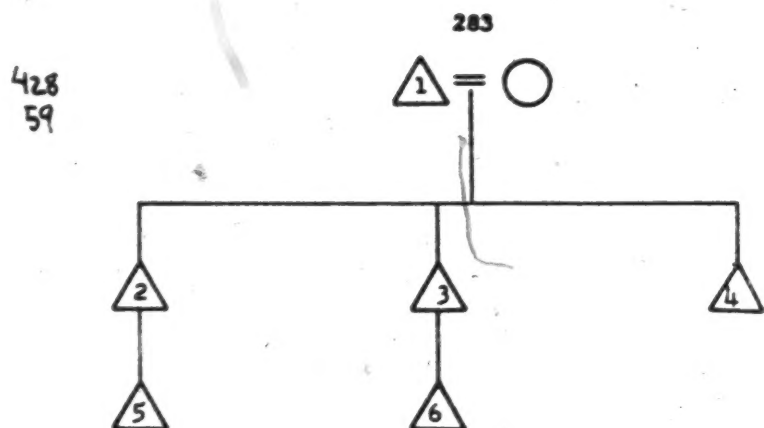


Figure 9. Kinship Diagram, Patrilineal Descent Group

428
561

At the beginning of this discussion related to Figure 9, exceptions to equal inheritance were mentioned. In addition to the variation just described for the senior generation, there is one for the junior generation. In the junior generation, only (5), the oldest son's oldest son, receives a share but it is not the equal of the others. It is often quite minor, varying for individual cases, but everyone in the village agrees that this individual should have something in spite of the fact his siblings and cousins receive nothing. This boy also has special ritual requirements for his grandfather's funeral, i.e., he wears the mourning clothes of a son instead of the mourning clothes of a grandson.

[265]

428
59

Inheritance would be about the same as the above description for division. Assuming the old man (1) dies,

121 words, rather than a series of snapshots, there is an at-
182 tempt to provide a moving picture. This mode of analysis
602
59 draws heavily on the concepts presented by Buchler and
Selby (1968:52-58) which combine both jurial rules and
statistics. Built into the analysis are the constraints
of demographic factors, specifically birth rates, death
rates, and age at marriage.

Although the number of stages in the life cycles
of families identified in various societies differ con-
siderably,¹⁰ Portes (1962:2-5) has suggested that the
developmental cycle in the domestic group may follow the
general paradigm listed below:

1. Phase of Expansion: Offspring are economically, effectively, and jurally dependent on their parents.
2. Phase of Dispersion or Fission: Marriage of the first child until marriage of the last.
3. Phase of Replacement: Until death of both parents.

This general paradigm will be followed for Sanlei vil-
lage without any attempts at further proliferation of
stages.

Postulates Affecting the Family Life Cycle

Additionally, I have derived the following set of
what might be called a combination of rules, beliefs, and
cultural values bearing on the family which must be taken
into consideration in the analysis of family life cycle
patterns in Sanlei village. There is no attempt to be

428 the Sanlei family will inevitably divide into the three
59 units described above, i.e., (2,3), (3,6), and (4).

59 The major original defining characteristic of the
354 household (hu) was those who cook and eat together. Family division frequently appears to revolve around this function. It would appear that if a household divided in half, the two new units could cook and eat separately but continue to share a single stove, but this never occurs. A new stove must be constructed; hopefully, the stove will be in a separate room but if space is not available, a second stove will be built in the original kitchen. Each new household will then share the kitchen but use their own stove. A popular method of referring to family division is to call it "the separation of the stove" (see Glossary C). To refer back to the previous discussion, in a divided family with the old folks alive, they will never have a separate stove. They either eat in turn with each new unit or eat regularly with one unit while the others contribute food.

Basis for a Diachronic Approach to the Family

121 The foregoing has provided both a static view of the
122 distribution of family types in the village and an explanation
62 of various mechanisms which affect its membership and
59 existence: birth, marriage, adoption, and division. I now propose a dynamic view of the family life cycle designed to reveal the major patterns in the village. In other

121 complete, let alone exhaustive, as my selective criteria
182 were merely based on those items that seemed immediately
602 necessary for the analysis. A label under which they can
59 all be subsumed is not at my command, but they are similar to what have been labeled postulates (Hsu, 1969; Hoebel, 1960). The truth of these items would be generally accepted by most villagers. (The exceptions are illustrated later.) The items will hereafter be identified only by a number in parentheses.

- [769] (1) It is necessary that a family obtain descendants to carry on worship of the ancestors. Worship of ancestors should be specific for approximately five generations above the oldest living member but may be general beyond that.
- [769]
[562] (2) Worship of an ancestor is best performed by a male with the same surname.
- [611] (3) Descent is patrilineal and surnames are obtained from a child's father.
- [424] (4) Males may assign their rights to give children their surnames to others.
- [597] (5) An adopted child is almost the equivalent of a natural child.
- [596] (6) The large extended family, ta chia ting, is best economically, morally, and ritually.
- [570] (7) Relations should be harmonious within a household.
- [578] (8) The larger the group the more likely there will be disharmony.
- (9) The individual is subordinate to the family of which he is a part.
- (10) Nevertheless, each person is an individual with his own personal qualities and idiosyncracies and rules for behavior must be flexible so he can meet them.

59

287

602

121

182

- (11) Respect and obedience are due from younger generations to older generations.
- [361] (12) Respect and obedience are due from younger people to older people but in lesser amounts than that due between generations.
- [562] (13) Respect and obedience are due from females to males.
- [602] (14) People who are related consanguineally can maintain more harmonious relations than people who are not related.
- [602] (15) People who are related affinally can maintain more harmonious relations than people who are not related at all.
- [578]
[562] (16) Females naturally have more quarrels with other females than do males with males.
- [737] (17) It is the responsibility of an individual's descendants to care for him in his old age and having descendants is the only protection for old age.
- [889] (18) Both a child and a person beyond age sixty are something less than a mature and responsible adult and not capable of properly representing the family or making the best decisions.

A preliminary analysis quickly reveals that some of these items are in direct conflict with others and that operationally, some principles may be in conflict with others. Moreover, the ranking of the items is not fixed or clear. For example, there is no conflict generated in terms of (11), (12), and (13) when a grandfather interacts with his granddaughter. However, there is conflict for the same items in the case of a woman and her son-in-law, i.e., (11) and (12) declare her superordinate and (13) subordinate. This latter example may indicate why there are more conflicts in a household containing an adopted-in husband.

121 As indicated in Figure 10, in the case of the reg-
182 ular marriage, the relationships between the senior gener-
606 ation and the incoming spouse are consistent or neutral
59 in assignment of subordination in terms of (11), (12), and
(13). Conversely, for the adopted-in husband household,
there is a conflict in the same rules as previously speci-
fied, with reference to the relationship between mother-
in-law and son-in-law. This latter case could also occur
between mother and son in the regular household but several
years of living together when the son was extremely depen-
dent would probably have produced an adjustment.

121 Another item, (18), produces another kind of dis-
182 agreement. There is a belief for example that a man older
888 than sixty should withdraw from active control of his fam-
51 ily and turn management over to his son who is now capable
of better decisions (18). In the same conversation, vil-
lagers will claim that vigorous men over 60 are the best
office holders and mediators for they have the experience
to make the wisest decisions.

Family Life Cycles

182 The above postulates are combined with the analyti-
59 cal techniques explained in the previous section to illus-
trate the family cycle in Sanlei Ts'un. For simplifica-
tion, assume the starting unit is a young married couple
living alone in a single village household. Although this

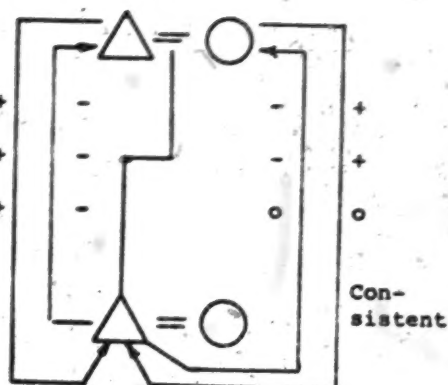
289

121
182
606

(Items or
Postulates)

- 11 - Between Generations +
- 12 - Between Age Levels +
- 13 - Between Sexes +

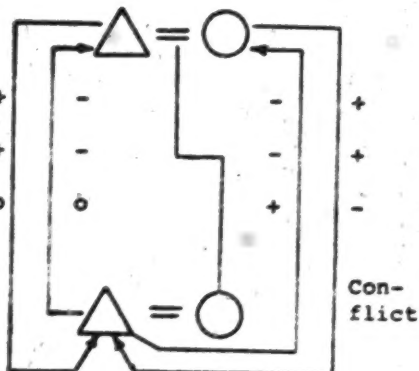
Summary: Consistent



REGULAR MARRIAGE

- 11 - Between Generations +
- 12 - Between Age Levels +
- 13 - Between Sexes o

Summary Consistent



ADOPTED-IN HUSBAND MARRIAGE

Note: Arrowed lines indicate a social relationship which may be characterized by superordination (+), subordination (-), or be neutral (o) with respect to the three items listed on page 287 and summarized briefly above. Only in the adopted-in husband household do these three rules create conflict.

Figure 10. Relations Between Parents and Child's Spouse by Sex

182 situation is relatively rare, it is useful analytically
59 for a starting point and once completely described, the
life cycle can be viewed as an endless chain. Phase I, the
Phase of Expansion continues until the first child is mar-
ried. The first several years in the existence of the
household may produce a variety of forms such as those
listed below:

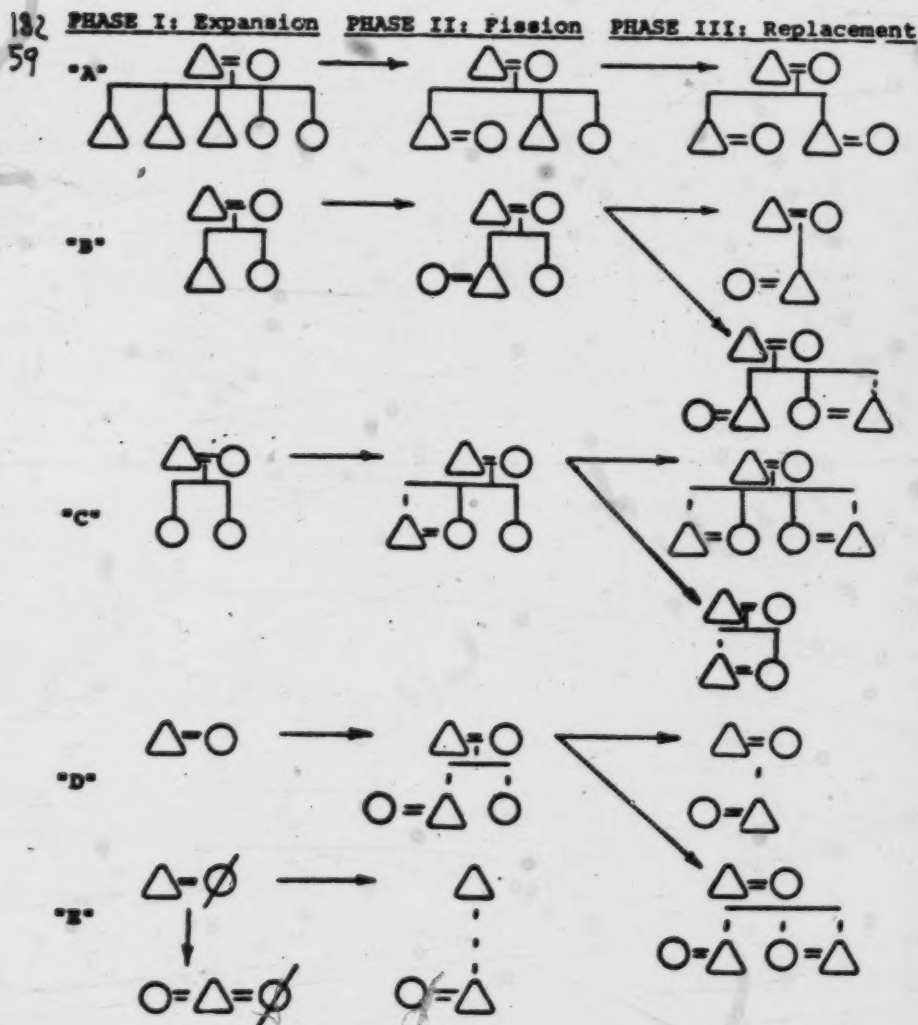
- A. The couple would meet the typical ideal minimal goal maintained by most villagers and have three boys and two girls and raise all to maturity, complying with all the above items.
- B. The couple would have only one boy but perhaps one or more girls and raise the boy to maturity, also complying with all the above items except perhaps (6).
- C. The couple would have no boys but one or more girls who live to maturity potentially violating (6) and (17) and surely violating (1) and (2).
- D. The couple would have no children, violating (1), (2), (6), and (17).
- E. The couple would be divorced or either mate would die, in either case without offspring, violating the same items as in Case D.

There are culturally provided solutions for each of the above potential violations. For case B and C, it is possible to adopt a boy (5) and/or have adopted-in husbands (4) and (5) for one or more of the girls. For case D, it is possible to adopt a boy (5) or one or more girls (5) and have adopted-in husbands (4) and (5) for the adopted girls. In the case of E, without offspring, either remarriage is possible or the solutions advanced for D. Note

182 that in Phase I, the Phase of Expansion, all the families
59 listed above would be nuclear.

Phase II, the Phase of Dispersion or Fission, occurs during the period from the marriage of the first child until the marriage of the last. In accordance with (1), (6), and (17), it would be best if children, as they married brought in their spouses to live in the parents home with (2) and (3) requiring that male offspring especially bring in their spouses. Consequently, if there are no males in the family, it is necessary that no less than one female bring in a husband and in this case, that there be a possibility of producing a child in the succeeding generation with the original surname. In accordance with the requirements of (2) and (3) and because of (4), this condition can be met and often is met by the local practice of an adopted-in husband who permits one or more of his children to be assigned his wife's original surname. The A case above, which does not violate most postulates, would have seldom been realized in Sanlei due to death rates. Demonstrated in Figure 11 are various ways in which each of the five types (A, B, C, D, E) may become a stem family. Of course it is also possible that any stem family could become a regular extended family which is highly probable for A in particular.

However, an extended family is unlikely to come into existence because of demographic factors, i.e., two



Note: This is a sample only and favors development of more complex forms. Any unit may divide or die off before achievement of column 3 and thereby revert back to column 1.

Figure 11. Sample of Family Life Cycle Stages in Sanlei

182 males must marry while at least one parent remains alive.

59 As indicated, other processes could create extended families, but these too are unlikely. Adopting boys is extremely expensive and although adopted-in husbands may be acquired for natural or adopted daughters, it would take a reasonably wealthy household to attract two men.

Nevertheless, an extended family is realized with some degree of regularity, but seldom is an extended family maintained for other factors are relevant. For example, there is the recognition of man's individuality (10) but he is supposedly subordinate to the family (9), a potential and frequent conflict. In the larger family, it is difficult to maintain the harmony that is expected (7) because of the belief that the large group naturally has more problems (8); there are more females who naturally fight with each other (16); and finally, many members are only affines, a stronger source of conflict than consanguines (14) and (15). It may very well be the case that these three causes are part of a self-fulfilling prophecy, i.e., it is believed there should be problems, so there are.

Yet, while the senior generation male is active and in control, a continued undivided existence is possible. However, as he approaches and passes age 60, he ceases to be regarded as an effective adult, often withdrawing willingly from the responsibility (18). This withdrawal is

182 usually delayed as long as there is one unmarried child
59 in the household, particularly if the child is male (18).
In accordance with age emphasis (12), control should pass
to the oldest son. However, the degree of respect due
older siblings (12) does not often appear strong enough to
overcome the other centrifugal forces. It seemingly takes
the increment of respect due between generations (11) to
overcome these centrifugal forces and even that is rarely
sufficient. In Sanlei, there was only one ta chia ting
with two males in the senior generation but this was an
odd case, one brother's wife had deserted him (the family
was discussed in connection with Figure 8). M. Wolf (1968)
also found one ta chia ting in Hotien that had two males
in the senior generation, but she too felt the situation
sufficiently unusual to justify the occurrence as a special
case in special circumstances.

Upon the death of the male chia chang, or at his
withdrawal from active control, if all sons are married,
it is almost certain there will be family division. How-
ever, care for the aged by a man's descendants (17) is so
important that seldom will division occur if there is
only one male in the younger generation. If there are
several sons and a division takes place, it is likely that
the old parents will remain with one son united in a stem
family.

182
59 Phase III, the Phase of Replacement, lasts until the death of both parents. Given the high death rates, this stage may have been realized before any child is married. It does seem usual that the last of the old parents die while living in a home with one married descendant and perhaps, some grandchildren. An old couple with more than one married son usually prefers living in the home of the youngest but there is no cultural norm specifying the youngest son. I would suggest the following factors favor the youngest. Relations between a male and his first-born son are formal and harsh in Sanlei although parents seemingly develop greater skill in child-rearing with practice. The last child is often a family pet, babied by others, while both mother and father put less pressure on the youngest to succeed. The last child has been forced to adjust to older siblings (12) and has likely developed greater skills in smooth interpersonal relations. The end of Stage III produces one or more Stage I families and we are back at the beginning of the cycle. Note however, that the Stage I family is actually likely to already include children at its inception.

To summarize this explication of family cycles, note that with the historical demographic rates, it appears that a large number of people will be living in nuclear households at any given moment in time, as indicated by the 40% figure realized through the statistical approach (Table 6).

182 An examination of the situation from the point of view of
59 an individual actor suggests that the stem family is the
most common form in Sanlei with the occasional appearance
of an extended family. Indeed, almost every person beyond
60 years of age in the village is living in a unit larger
than the nuclear family. I collected thirteen fairly ex-
tensive life histories (not a random sample of villagers)
and in all thirteen, the subjects spent part of their lives
in something larger than a nuclear household.

182 It can also be seen that adoption, marriage, and
183 descent events represent an attempt to realize cultural
59 values. Almost all villagers agree that the two most im-
portant items in the eighteen previously listed are those
with reference to worship of ancestors (1) and the care for
the aged (17). These can best be realized by getting mar-
ried and having several male children who, in turn, marry
and have male children. However, since this will often not
be biologically possible, the various mechanisms discussed
above provide alternative solutions. In place of natural
sons are adopted sons or adopted-in husbands for natural
daughters with shared offspring. There are even adopted
daughters as substitutes for natural daughters in order to
later adopt in a husband. Finally, the adoption of a
daughter as siaosiv is both an attempt to acquire descen-
dants in spite of the high cost of marriage and further, to
promote the harmonious relations within a household

182 necessary to maintain an extended family. These processes
183 are a rational application of permitted alternatives to
59 achieve culturally defined goals.

The improvement of economic conditions, the rapidly changing demographic rates, and the changing values originating from the larger modernizing society are undoubtedly going to change the typical family life cycles previously described.

The Basis of Extra-Familial Kinship Organizations

121 Families are building blocks in the larger kinship
618 units, the clan and the tsu (lineage). The clan consists
613 of people who have the same surname and are therefore assumed to have descended from the same ancestor although the genealogical details are unknown. Fried (1957; 1966) has referred to this assumption as "stipulated descent" and contrasted it with the foundation for the lineage, "demonstrated descent," where the exact details of genealogical connections are known. There are a number of border situations found in Sanlei Ts'un which are difficult to place in either category.

618 Usually a surname was said to be established by some particular historical individual from whom generations are numbered such that most people know the number of their own generation. It is assumed then that although two individuals with the same surname may not know which is the most recent generational ancestor they share, i.e., eighth

618 or tenth, they do share the first. Given sufficient depth of generations and the fact that there can be a wide age spread between the youngest and oldest individuals in a single generation, there is little relationship between genealogical generation and physical age. For example, one of our assistants in his twenties found a man with the same surname in a nearby village. Although the villager was over seventy, he was numbered three generations later. They both read a newspaper which was delivered all over Taiwan and carried news items devoted to the activities of people with their surname. They considered themselves distant clan relatives (ch'in t'ang) and the old man, with a smile, referred to our young assistant as great uncle. Even within shallow-depth American families, a man will occasionally be older than his own uncle.

All of the men in Sanlei surnamed Liao considered themselves to be ch'in t'ang. The Liao group which founded Sanlei all came from the same village in Chuan Chou, Fukien and other Liao migrated later, some from the same village and some from communities in the same county but not in the same village area. For one larger group of Liao, descent was demonstrated but for the balance, descent was merely stipulated.

[262] One area difficult to classify according to the above scheme is due to the fact that several generations after the establishment of the Liao name an event occurred,

618 the result of which caused one Liao to pledge for himself
[262] and his descendants never to eat the head of the chicken.

Thus, the Liao in Sanlei are divided into two subdivisions neither of which can trace actual descent: "those who eat" and "those who do not eat" chicken heads. Those who do not eat chicken heads regard themselves as closer relatives than those who do, for obviously they must share an ancestor more recent in genealogical depth than the original founder. In spite of this shared genealogical relative who was nearer than the founder, descent is still not really demonstrated. A Liao usually called both kinds of Liao ch'in t'ang and distinguished the two subdivisions by means of reference to eating or not eating chicken heads. There is no similar "in-group" feeling for those who eat chicken heads, a local delicacy.

602 The second area difficult to classify revolves
538 around another kind of question as to whether or not des-
551 cent is truly demonstrated. Sometimes a significant individual will compose or commission a poem to be written. He gives his children the first word of the poem as a middle name; grandchildren, the second, etc. The poem may continue to be followed or be abandoned by some or all lines of descent. If two people have the same surname and the same middle name, they compare father's, grandfather's, etc., middle names and if identity is established, they assume they have a common ancestor, i.e., the poem writer

602 or commissioner even though neither can really trace the
538 chain of ancestors linking themselves to him. For example,
551 if two men share the seventh word, their fathers the
sixth, and grandfathers the fifth, they assume a shared an-
cestor eight generations earlier although neither has
knowledge of any ancestors beyond grandparents. There
are two such poems in process in Sanlei Ts'un, one of
which is registered in the Liao Temple¹¹ near Taipei.

602 The poem system is not wholly accurate as a basis
538 for establishing relationships because, for religious
183 reasons, a child may get a unique middle name or someone
who is not a regular descendant may start naming his de-
scendants according to the poem. In this case he will
match the generation number of his child to the poem word
that has that generation number. After several genera-
tions pass, it is possible that no one would know that a
line using the poem did not truly extend back to the poem
writer or commissioner (or vice versa). Thus, although
lines using the poem are assumed to share an ancestor
closer than the founder, once more descent is not truly
demonstrated. Nevertheless, people sharing a poem name
are felt to be closer relatives than people not sharing
one.

618 The above beliefs define a number of groups in the
602 village: those named Liao,¹² Liao who do not eat the
chicken head, and two non-inclusive sets of Liao who are

618 following a poem. However, none of these groups are a
602 very important part of village social organization. They
are consanguine groups and consanguine relatives are closer
than non-relatives and this fact does play some part in
establishing social relationships such as friendship, work
exchanges, money lending, etc. The groups do have some
importance for socio-political events for factional leaders
often utilize kinship identities to solicit support. How-
ever, none of the above groups can really be defined by
corporate holdings other than burial plots or even by
ritual.

602 In only one case does a group approach the defini-
769 tion by Hu (1948:10), membership may be "spread over a
wider region, it has its focus in one community which is
always associated with ancestral graves and the ancestral
hall." There is no ancestral hall. However, about fifty
years ago, a Sanlei villager returned to his family's
original village in Fukien to visit. Among other things,
he registered people in the old ancestral halls and copied
genealogical histories and became intrigued with the large
604 lineage burial plots found in Fukien. Upon his return to
Taiwan, he managed to unite three of five descent lines
from a single man in establishing a single large and elab-
orate burial plot. (The area surrounding Sanlei is rated
particularly highly in terms of feng shui¹³ for burial and
possesses many elaborate tombs.) Earlier burials of some

602 of the deceased in the three lines were collected from
769 their various resting places and placed in the site and
the subsequent burials of descendants of the three lines
have continued, thus creating and maintaining a corporate
group.

602 The meaning of the phrase, three descent lines,
must be explained. In the original village in Fukien, a
man had five sons. After he died, the five sons with wives
and children separated into five families who all migrated
to Sanlei. Descendants of each of the five continue to
identify themselves as members of separate groups, each
focused on one of the five brothers. Although villagers
call each of the five groups a fang, the term has been
translated in various ways in the traditional literature.
Based upon work by Lin, Freedman calls fang a sub-lineage
(1958:36) while H. C. W. Liu (1959:99) terms it a branch
or sub-branch of a clan, literally "house." Use of fang
in Sanlei does not seem consistent with these definitions
but instead follows the pattern described by Cohen (1969:
167), i.e., fang is applied to patrilineal descent unit
segments of various sizes and complexity even to the extent
of labeling the nuclear family units in a single ta chia
t'ing (extended household).

602 Villagers distinguish the collective descendants
769 of each of the five brothers as separate fang, each num-
bered in the original birth order of the brothers. Thus,

602 first fang refers to the descendants of the oldest brother.

769 There was originally a process of fission into five fang.

The man who visiting the mainland managed to fuse three of the five into this one ritual unit which does not have a distinct classification, although acting as a corporate group. The basis for the fusion merely seemed to be the willingness to contribute labor and money to build the elaborate tomb. Although individuals continue to keep track of the separate fang, this combination of three is the only large ritual kinship unit in the village. The members (descendants) gather once each year to clean the grave and worship, a process consuming about four to five hours.

The Compound

121 In a discussion of the varieties of forms lineage
596 organizations assume in Southeastern China, Freedman (1958: 131-3) creates a continuum with ideal types A at one end and Z at the other. Z is large (2000 to 3000 members), rich, segmented, and heterogeneous in reference to the social class of its members while A is small (200 to 300 members), poor, and relatively homogeneous. The only agnatic groups larger than a single family in Sanlei (other than the combination of three fang described above) which regularly function as units and which own property in common are smaller than the A model at one end of the

121 continuum described by Freedman or even those found by
596 Gallin in Hsin Hsing (1966). Rather, they are closely
similar in form and function to those described for a
Hakka community in South Taiwan by Cohen (1969:167-182)
although land owned by a lineage segment and rotated among
members is extremely rare in Sanlei. This agnatic unit
which owns a piece of property in common (a kung t'ing)
approximately fits Freedman's definition of a compound:
an agnatic group which "although occupying one set of
dwellings, is or may be subdivided into distinct kitchen
and property-owning groups" (1958:36-7). The separate chia
(family) or hu (household) were all related agnatically but
the relationships were variable. Each member chia had its
own chia chang (head) and the senior chia chang with re-
spect to generation and age was the head of the compound
although his rights and duties in this connection were min-
imal.

121 Worship in the compound in Sanlei is not like that
769 described by Gallin (1966:239) nor Freedman (1958:56-58)
596 since both distinguished the domestic worship of ancestors
from the worship by higher-level agnatic groupings. After
pointing out the above, Cohen (1969:170) describes a merg-
ing of domestic and compound worship in the single kung
t'ing for each compound in the Hakka village which would
apply equally well to Sanlei. No family in Sanlei which
was part of a compound maintained the separate worship

121
769 area for its own most recent ancestors as described by
596 Gallin (1966:239) for Hsin Hsing.

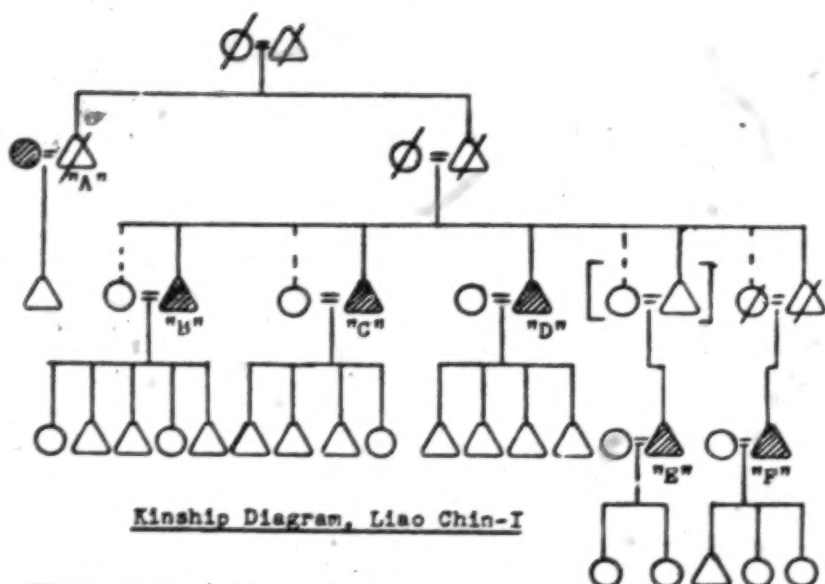
In contrast to many other reports, in Sanlei the central unifying element in worship is the hsiang lu, ancestor's pot or censer, rather than the ancestor's tablets. This difference is explored more fully in Chapter VI but introduction of the fact is necessary to the current discussion. The basis for membership in a compound is problematical, but certainly involves an agnatic relationship. However, there are other potential members of the compound, some with even better credentials for membership, who live and worship elsewhere. Cadet branches which are established in another living unit may return for common worship for a number of years, to be ended only with the endowment of a new ancestor's pot by carrying ashes from the original pot in a red paper envelope from the old kung t'ing to the new one.

601 A single Liao "compound" is illustrated in Figure
596 12. One part of the diagram consists of a kinship diagram of the descendants of Liao Chin-I, but omits those who are dead, adopted-out, married-out, or moved away except when necessary to indicate genealogical connections. Currently, there are six legal and actual hu (households). Each hu is a nuclear unit, indicated with a letter, i.e., A, B, etc., and with its respective chia chang (head) indicated by cross-hatching. The second part of the diagram is a

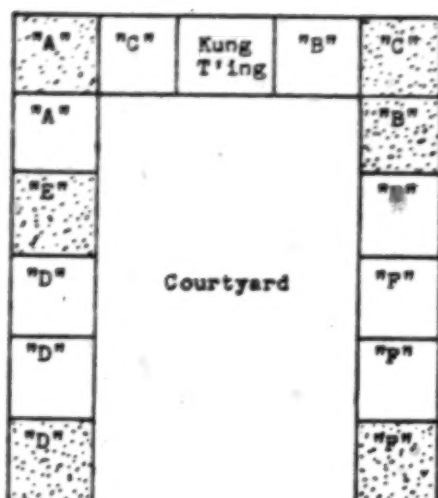
TEXT CONTINUED ON PAGE 307

306

601
596



Kinship Diagram, Liao Chin-I



Building Diagram, Liao Chin-I "Compound"

Note

In the kinship diagram, each chia is identified with a letter which also designates the owner of the rooms in the dwelling unit. The kitchen for each hu is indicated by dots. The chia chang of each family is identified by cross-hatching. The kung t'ing and the courtyard are owned jointly.

Figure 12. Kinship and Dwelling Diagram, Liao Chin-I

596 plan of the dwelling unit, the previously described U-shaped building. The building is divided into rooms (10' x 10' up to 15' x 15') based only on the roof-bearing floor-to-ceiling walls but some rooms are partitioned with partial walls into smaller subdivision. Each nuclear family indicated on the diagram individually owns the rooms marked with its identifying letter. It can be noted that since there are six families, there are six kitchens, a separate kitchen being part of the definition earlier posited for each household. The kung t'ing in the center is owned jointly by all the compound members.

596
842 The building has developed in the manner suggested in a previous discussion. The original building consisted only of the three rooms in the center of the base of the "U." Additional rooms have been added to the original building at each end and then, by extending the wings. The various households have been established at various periods by a process of division. E's parents and his siblings moved to Taipei for a period of time while only E and his family of procreation returned. Obviously, E's father has more rights to rooms than E but space was easily made for E on his return. Occasionally, there has been some juggling of rooms since each room is owned by a separate household.

[769]
[594] However, the kung t'ing is owned jointly by all and used by any member unit for worship or entertaining guests.

769 Indeed, it appears that any descendants of Liao Chin-I,
596 the founder of the compound, have certain rights of wor-
782 ship in the kung t'ing. The chia chang of B, the oldest
male in his generation, is recognized to be in charge of
the room for tax purposes or for planning ritual events,
562 but he regularly consults the old woman in A. Anybody in
the compound can carry out the required daily worship,
morning and evening, for the entire compound but it is
considered best if the worshipper is an older male. In-
dividuals take turns but with no rotating regularity. For
worship, one individual may represent the entire compound
but often several may participate. For special worship
in the evening on the first and fifteenth of the lunar
month, food sacrifices are prepared in each household and
taken to the kung t'ing for worship together and at that
time, an older male usually makes special remarks. Each
family takes back its own food to consume after completing
worship. Special holiday worship may be in this manner
but there also may be a single large feast, potluck fashion.

Contributions of money for religious purposes (in-
cense sticks, paper money, room upkeep) are contributed by
each family on the basis of ability to pay. However, the
kung t'ing is not kept in the best condition as suggested
by an appropriate proverb, "What is public is for every-
one's use and no one's responsibility" (see Glossary C).

596
602 In summary, the "compound" is a corporate kinship unit which functions jointly for ritual purposes, and owns property, the kung t'ing, in common. There are several such units in Sanlei. In worship, they are all like the previously listed Hakka community (Gohen, 1969) in this merging of domestic and compound (agnatic unit) worship and unlike the communities described in the reports of Gallin (1966) and Freedman (1958) in which there is a separation between domestic and compound or lineage worship.

769 The crucial item in the ancestral ceremony is not the ancestor tablet although these are occasionally present but the ancestral incense pot, hsiang lu. The ancestral table which occupies a central place in each village kung t'ing (see Figure 4), always has at least one ancestral pot and almost always a god's pot in addition. Sometimes there is more than one ancestral pot, each with a different surname. An adopted-in husband often brings his own ancestor pot with his own surname. Given the high incidence of adopted-in husbands that have occurred over an extended period of time, this pot multiplication is quite common. Additionally, some women occasionally bring in their family ancestral pots, especially when they were the last of a line. Pots with different surnames are usually separated by a small board fence in accordance with the belief that ancestors with different surnames fight. Worship of all pots on a single table is performed regularly.

769 Occasionally the origin of a particular pot but not its name is unknown but worship dedicated to it always continues. In one extreme case, one table has four distinct pots each with a different surname and another, three.

621 A means to determine the number of active agnatic
769 kinship units (ritual or religious families) is the incidence of ancestral tables, counting the compound then as a single unit. As previously listed, there are 66 hu (households) in Sanlei but there are only 50 ancestral tables. Three households do not have tables and do not worship ancestors; two of these are Mainland soldiers living alone and the last is a common-law marriage, contracted late in life, with no offspring, natural or adopted. In 44 households, the household and worship unit are identical. The remaining 19 households share 6 tables. In other words, there are six agnatic compounds of the form described above, the number of households comprising each distribution as follows: 6,4,3,2,2, and 2. A compound of two households may be much larger in number of people than might be expected. In one compound, the two households have 29 members, the 19 of Liao Mou-tu (his kinship diagram was provided in Figure 5) and the 10 of his younger brother, Liao Mou-ti.

59
34
621 Cooperation between the family units within compounds tend to be more frequent than between other family units which are only neighbors. Although it often appears that the whole village rather than a single family

596 is responsible for enculturating each child, this is es-
261 pecially accentuated within a compound. Because children
wander in and out of each other's rooms (between house-
holds) and are nurtured by any available adult, it took me
a long time to identify compound children with particular
nuclear family units. That is, I could identify a child
as belonging to a particular compound but not as easily
596 identify which family within it. Also, although women
[62] neighbors frequently shared work tasks together such as
grinding rice, and took turns with some tasks so one could
have time off for other things, i.e., one woman might
prepare dinner and care for the two sets of children,
these two practices were also more extensive in compounds.
With rare exceptions, only in extended families or com-
pounds could the only adult female in a family with small
children have a whole day off to work in the fields.
[46] Women took turns for almost everyone preferred the rela-
tive freedom of field work. Additionally, there was the
concomitant benefit of a periodic contribution of income
to a family unit.

596 In spite of the fact that men usually claim the
462 break up of compounds and the division of extended fami-
596 lies is due to conflict among women, the village data sug-
gests that the converse is also true for almost every
large kinship unit that did exist in the village contained
women who got along and who cooperated with each other in

596
462 rotating work responsibilities. In other words, although
578 women may be the key to the dissolution of family structures, they may also be thought of as the essential glue which holds them together. Note that the adult male occupations in the village are quite heterogeneous, i.e., rice farmer, tea farmer, tea processor, miner, etc., while their wives' occupations in the village are relatively homogeneous, housekeeper, cook, tea picker, etc. It is much easier for a woman to substitute for any other woman than it is for a man to substitute for any other man. I do know that conflicts over men's occupations within a household lead to family divisions because each feels the other is not contributing his share (for an extended case study see M. Wolfe, 1968). Because men's jobs are so different it is hard to determine equality whereas women's jobs are so nearly identical, this can not be a similar source of conflict. This discussion should not preclude consideration of the fact that there are many other sources of conflict in the large family household in addition to those arising over economic contributions. Nevertheless, all compounds include women who cooperate very closely with each other and all extended families include women who cooperate even more closely with each other.

596 The compound frequently acts collectively as a political or economic force in the village. This is possibly due to its internal identification as a kinship

313

596 unit, but may be merely due to the fact that the typical unit is in the shape of a "U" with doors rarely opening on other than the inner court-yard. Interaction is much more frequent among the compound members as opposed to outsiders because of propinquity and convenience and increased communication often leads to mutual understanding. In any case, the "compound" is highly valued, not as good as the ta chia ting (extended family), but much better morally and economically than scattered single household units.

CHAPTER VI

VOLUNTARY ASSOCIATIONS

571 The third category in the discussion of the social organization of Sanlei Ts'un is "voluntary associations." This is merely a convenient label for it should not be construed that the social units discussed in the two preceding chapters lack aspects of volunteerism. For example, although the farmers' association is a formal unit, membership and participation in governance is voluntary. Even though processes creating initial membership in kinship units may be voluntary, i.e., birth, adoption, arranged marriage, continued participation is voluntary, particularly in such larger units as the "ta chia ting" or "compound."

Money Lending Club

525 Sanlei Ts'un has money lending clubs similar to
575 those which have been described for a Japanese village
[77] (Embree, 1939:138-147) and for mainland China (Pei, 1939:
267-74). The clubs range in size from ten to thirty
members with a typical size of about twenty. Clubs are
set for a certain amount, say \$300.00 per man. The first
night the club meets, everyone pays the club organizer

525 \$300.00. The second night the club meets, everyone writes
545 a bid somewhat less than \$300.00 (in even dollar amounts
only) on a piece of paper and places it in a hat. After
the bids are mixed up, each is lifted out with chopsticks
and placed on a table in order of removal from right to
left with the low bid declared the winner. In case of a
tie, the bid on the right is the winner. The winner
collects the amount of his bid from each member except
that any previous winner (including the originator, winners
are now called debtors to the club) pays the full ori-
ginal amount of \$300.00. This process continues until
everyone has collected once, so of course, only those who
have not yet collected place bids.

Since early collectors bid less than the required
amount, it is possible to wait until the end, each time
paying less than the full amount, and yet collect the full
amount from every other person. That is, with 21 members
a participant would pay 20 times and collect once from
the other 20 members. If every bid was \$300.00, everyone
would break even, but a typical early bid is \$250.00 to
\$260.00 dollars, but the person who collects at this
\$250.00 rate will eventually, as a debtor, pay the full
\$300.00. Even if the cash is not needed, one should put
in an early bid under \$300.00 because the money could be
placed in a bank or post office, earn interest, and
eventually be paid back without interest. The amount of
the potential interest income determines early bids for

525 those who do not need the money. In essence, a man is in
575 a legal gambling situation in a country which has declared
any gambling other than the official government lottery
illegal. Although the period between bids in the tradi-
tional accounts are of varying lengths up to once a year,
meetings in Sanlei are always monthly. The largest club
in the area during our residence contained 30 members
and therefore, took 30 months to complete.

There are advantages for every participant in the
club. The originator obtains a large sum of money which
is paid back monthly without interest. He has the respon-
sibility to collect the money from each person within three
days of the bid and turn it over to the winning bidder,
and he sometimes provides small refreshments such as soda
pop and cookies. Each member also benefits as he has a
ready source where he can get a sizeable sum of money
merely by placing a low bid. Furthermore, by joining the
club, he directly performs a service for the originator
since the latter always furnishes a reason for his need for
money. Frivolous needs would be rejected. The monthly
meeting is also a social situation, consuming an hour or
more of one evening each month. It is also a major topic
of discussion before the meeting with speculation about
the size of the winning bid and after the meeting, there
is more comment about why someone may have needed the
money so badly, indicated by a below average bid. Finally,
even if no profit is realized, the club is an enforced

525 method of saving for it is difficult for anyone otherwise
575 to accumulate a large sum of cash at one time. Membership
in a money-lending club necessarily means that at least
once during its term a man will have a sizeable amount of
cash in a lump sum.

Since it is necessary that each potential member be
trustworthy, a club membership list indicates the general
nature of relationships between people. Rarely does the
participation in a single club extend beyond the confines
of the li and usually is restricted to but one or two
villages. Some villagers have attempted to form or join
clubs without success because they are not considered
[563] trustworthy. For example, a Mainland soldier in the
village who is an adopted-in husband with four children
needed money for the medical expenses of his wife's
ailing parents. Other than a slight fondness for beer
(15 bottles or so per month) he has turned almost all his
money over to his wife to manage. Moreover, he is a
steady worker and as a dynamiter in the mines earns \$100.00
per day, considerably more than the average villager, but
[82] he was unable to establish a club. As previously stated,
Mainlanders are still regarded as outsiders who are not
to be trusted. Other villagers have failed to establish
clubs in the past and some are not even permitted to join
525 clubs. Yet, many women are able to establish clubs and it
562 appears that women usually constitute about half the
575 membership. In this regard, most village women obviously

525 rank higher in the status system than some men.
562
575

Female participants in money-lending clubs are of two structural types. One type consists of those who are heads of households participating with household money such that any profits which are realized will be returned to the family pool. Since men are usually the heads of households, in a sense, women filling this role of head are the equivalent of men. Historically, female heads of households in Sanlei have always participated in money-lending clubs.

The second structural type consists of women who are not heads of households and who participate with their personal money. And profits which they realize are retained personally rather than contributed to the family pool. As previously stated, only women have this personal money which does not belong to the family pool (See Chapter III). Some villagers claim that 25 or more years ago women had personal money but did not use it for money-lending clubs but other villagers disagree, arguing that women always participated in the clubs with personal money. In any case, women do use their personal money now to join the smaller clubs and eventually, accumulate enough for any club. One older active village woman has accumulated over \$10,000.00 in personal money, the equivalent of the amount a man would earn in about eight months of full-time work. The opportunity to accumulate such funds does give women a significant level of economic

575
525
562 independence and thereby, elevate their status and security.

525 Money-lending clubs are extremely popular in Sanlei
575 and about six or seven are in process at any moment in
time. The participants are drawn from about two thirds of
the households; some households contain more than two
participants, i.e., the man participating as a household
head and his wife participating with her personal money.
Some men belong to several clubs simultaneously, but
women usually belong to only one at a time. In one case,
Liao Chi-hsing, a farmer at the middle level of income in
the community, belonged to four simultaneously at a cost
of over \$1,000.00 monthly.

525 With their inter-locking memberships, money-lending
621 clubs are a unifying force in the village. Both males and
562
575 females participate in the same clubs and either sex may
be a club originator. This is one of the few village
organizations in which both sexes formally participate
[593] competitively as relative equals. However, because of
other kinds of values, a husband and his wife do not
participate in the same club.

Chieh Pai Hsiung Ti (Sworn Brothers Association)

573 A sworn brothers association is a pseudo-kinship
561 group of males who are friends and age mates, i.e.,
within an age span of two to four years. Each association
is formed by a group of twenty or so young men when they
are between the ages of 17 and 24. Rarely do the members
live more than one or two villages apart at the time the

573 association is founded. An association continues in exis-
561 tence until the death of the last member although the
occasional participant moves away and drops out or just
disappears. At the inauguration, the group members are
fairly equal in social class and economic position. In
spite of the later upward and downward mobility of its
members, a group continues to act. Fellow members
originally are only friends or are linked through certain
kinship relationships, i.e., cousins are often fellow
members but real brothers rarely belong to the same
association.

At any given moment in time, an examination of the
details about members of a single association easily
yields data on life expectancy, social mobility, and mig-
ration rates. The information is readily available
because a roster of membership is made at the inception
of the club. Since the members are friends, many details
of each other's socio-economic situation are known and
because the club continues to function and meet collec-
tively once or twice each year, such information is kept
current. I will illustrate briefly with two clubs.

[776] One association which is associated with the god
Tai Tzu Yueh (See Below) was formed around 1941 by 18
young men who were all within a year or two of age 23. At
the time the association was formed, all but one of the
founders lived in Talei Li (the exception had formerly
lived in the Li but had migrated with his family to Hsin

561 Tien). All 18 had gone to the Japanese school in Pouti
573 together and a few had gone on to junior or senior high
school. It appears that the group came from 11 families
which were wealthier than the average for the 11.

By 1966, 15 of the members were still alive and
although only 9 continued to live in Talei Li, all 15
still come together at least twice yearly for a meeting.
Two men are only farm laborers, three became fairly
wealthy, and the rest are in the middle or lower upper
level of income (based on Sanlei standards). One man,
a son of a fairly wealthy T'oulei family, is a dentist
in Hsin Tien and is very active in township politics.
Of the six who no longer live in Talei Li, one lives in
Keelung and has something to do with tea exporting; one
lives near Taichung where he inherited some land from his
father's brother; one lives in Hsin Tien (the dentist);
and the other three all live in Taipei city, two work
in a meat-canning factory and the last is a partner in
a very small restaurant.

The second example was founded by twelve young men
living in Sanlei and Tzulei just before they reached draft
age. In its eight years of existence, all twelve boys
completed their military stint, and seven have subsequently
[194] migrated to Taipei City. The association meets twice
yearly, once during the Matsu Procession (See Chapter VII)
when almost all migrants return to the village for the
celebration. Some of the club members who live in Taipei

561 claim they will come back to take over the family farm
573 when the older generation is no longer capable but others
say they will never live in a village again because the
city is so much more interesting.

561 The associations fulfill a number of functions in
573 the community. For one, they are a fellowship unit. Most
574 units get together once or twice a year for a dinner at
a site which rotates among the homes of the members. The
party lasts several hours and usually features consumption
of great quantities of food and alcohol plus the usual
drinking games and joking behavior. The host provides the
food and drink but each guest contributes an amount of
cash which is determined by the current value of pok as
a hedge against inflation. For example, a typical contri-
bution would be the sum required to buy two chin of pork.
The party itself has an integrating effect for the unit.

561 A second function is as a mutual insurance associ-
573 ation. Members contributed at fixed rates for certain
456 events affecting fellow members although the terms vary
for each group, established at the time it is founded.
A list of a set of contributions for one association
which is somewhat more elaborate than most follows (one
chin equals 1-1/3 pounds):

456
561
573
[562]

2 <u>chin</u> pork	Birth of Son
2 <u>chin</u> pork*	Marriage of Member
2 <u>chin</u> pork	Death of Father
1 <u>chin</u> pork	Death of Mother
5 <u>chin</u> pork	Death of Member

*Plus attendance fee at wedding

[77] Any member who has a son between meetings brings turtle-dough cakes to the next meeting to distribute as consumption of turtle-dough cakes helps spread good fortune. For any member of a club, those life crises events which usually cost money are supported by fellow members.

561
782
573 Another function is religious for worship is always part of the activities of an association meeting. Most units are organized around a particular god with whom the association establishes a special relationship. The host for the next meeting keeps the statue of the association god (which the association usually purchases) between meetings and he is responsible for the required special regular worship activities dedicated to it. The statue stays on the ancestral table in his kung t'ing until after the meeting when it will be carried to the next host's home. Also, the association may participate as a unit sponsoring part of the activities on special religious holidays or may act to refurbish the temple. One big "Fire Purification Ceremony"¹ was originated and sponsored by three cooperating sworn brothers associations.

573
561
627
629 The unit also functions in social control. At times it has disciplined transgressors; association members wildly threaten young men who have been too

321

573 unfilial or frighten older men with threats of physical
561 violence. The threats have always been sufficient to
627 insure proper behavior. In periods of the year when there
[626] is high probability of stealing such as near New Year's
Day, or after a theft has occurred, various associations
have taken responsibility for a night patrol in the
village. Thieves from outside the li were caught twice
in the last three years and were severely thrashed before
turning them over to the police. The unit also supports
its members in conflict or adversity. Political support
for a fellow member is near automatic and it is significant that most local leaders have connections with the
larger kinship units discussed in the last chapter and
are also members of fairly large sworn brothers associations. Local political leaders attempt to enlist
association support and several usually make courtesy
calls long enough for a quick drink and snack at various
association meetings.

561 There are few village men who fail to join a
573 sworn brothers association as young men. A few groups
have added members later in their existence although
most stick to the original membership roster. A migrant
to the area may establish good relations and be invited
to join an ongoing group whose members are his approximate
[562] age. There are many similar clubs all over the area
near Hsin Tien but there is no structural equivalent
for women.

God's Associations

575 A god's association is almost identical to the
794 sworn brothers association and is seemingly formed in the
same way with the same kind of membership but it always
has an identification with a single god. The primary
difference is that the sworn brothers association ends
with the death of its members but a god's association
membership is inherited by a man's oldest son or some
other male relative if there is no son. Since there is
a higher probability of adding additional members to god's
associations, they tended to be much larger.

I was never able to determine exactly the
differences distinguishing the establishment of each. It
did seem that if a sworn brothers association prospered
and its members lived a long time, there was a tendency
to continue it by inviting sons as replacements and
adding other members so that it eventually evolved into
a god's association. In no case did a son and father
both belong to the same association at the same time.

There were two god's associations centered in Sanlei
and compared with the sworn brothers associations, both
were larger, contained members dispersed over a greater
territory, involved greater class distinctions, and of
course, had members covering a greater age span. The two
god's associations in Sanlei both had regional political
leaders and wealthy men among its members although men of
this type do not live in the village.

Social Effects of Men's Voluntary Associations

182 Some manifest social effects of men's voluntary
575 associations were already pointed out, i.e., fellowship.
573 insurance, social control, religious, etc., but there are
latent effects which are also important.

As previously stated, the village is a prime unit for personal identification and the values associated with membership in a village social unit would tend towards extreme isolation of the community from the rest of society. However, a peasant community, by definition and by fact, is part of a larger society and cannot be an isolate. In addition to the establishment of relationship across community boundaries on the basis of kinship (asratic and affinal), men's voluntary associations serve an identical linking mechanism.

In any society such as China in which kinship is an important organizing principle, some men have few or no kinsmen because biology is a significant, if not exclusive, determinant of many kinship relations. That is, some people are barren and some family lines do not prosper. Sworn brothers associations provide an acceptable cultural alternative to the relatively kinless man who might be otherwise isolated. The very name itself (sworn brothers) evokes recognition of its basis as a simulated kinship group.

Finally, the individual member gains emotional support from his membership. Although most social

182 relationships in China are hierarchically structured, i.e.,
575 landlord over tenant, elder over younger, father over son.
573 etc., sworn brothers associations are a collectivity of
equals. Even where there are great differences in status,
the differences are relatively buried for interpersonal
relationships, especially at association meetings. Since
it would probably be impossible to bury a father-son or
older brother-younger brother status difference, these two
types of relationships are never encompassed within a
single sworn brothers association.

Because of these various reasons, manifest and
latent, almost every man belongs to a sworn brothers
association but no man belongs to two. Fewer men belong
to god's associations which are not exclusive, i.e., a
man may belong to more than one (most members of a single
god's association also belong to a sworn brothers associ-
ation). Indeed, one politician in Hsin Tien belongs to
six god's associations including both of those centered
in Sanlei Ts'un.

Neighborhood

361 The village is informally divided into three
neighborhoods although the physical boundaries separating
them are but minor barriers. One barrier results from the
fact the village slopes up a hill while a small mountain
runs down towards the village at right angles to the
slope. A very small brook (18" wide) runs down the moun-
tain towards the village as if it were going to bisect

361 it but, near the center of the village, turns and runs
[296] down the village slope. At the turn-about spot, a concrete pond (five feet by ten feet by eight inches) was
[312] built for convenience in washing clothes. From the pond on down the slope, village houses could pipe water into their houses by gravity feed from the brook by means of rubber hoses, but from the pond up the slope, it was necessary to carry water in buckets. This activity gives a name to two sections of the village: shang shui (above the water) and ya shui (below the water) although the dividing line is not clear. The smallest and least significant neighborhood unit is separated from these two neighborhoods by the river which runs down the middle of the valley (See Figure 2).

361 The "above the water" section contains the original
621 village settlement and continues to be the dominant section in village affairs. Most of its chia chang (family heads) are surnamed Liao and three of the four not surnamed Liao are related to a Liao: two are related by marriage and the third is the step-brother diagrammed in Figure 8. Important individuals in this section include the Li Chang (mayor), representative to the farmers' association, and the Small Unit Head (local subunit of the farmers' association). This section also includes the village temple and the store which has the largest sales in the village and which is owned by one of the wealthier Liao families whose head is an informal leader and a member of

361 the permanent temple committee.
621

The chia chang in the "below the water" neighborhood possess many different surnames. This area has the second ranking store in terms of sales but it is more modern with the only freezer and one of the two television sets in the village. A higher percentage of its population is engaged in other than agricultural pursuits. This section also includes both the active village tea processors who purchase tea leaves from farmers.

The portion across the river includes two "compounds" (one of which was illustrated in Figure 12) and two isolated households. This neighborhood may best be viewed as a residual category for there did not appear to be any behavior as a collective unit and no competition with the other two neighborhoods which sometimes compete with each other.

621 For example, the village had an opportunity in 1964
653 to establish a central water system which required building
666 a water tower and installing a pump and lines so that each
365 house could have running water. To participate, the village would have to achieve two-thirds approval in an election and raise half the requisite cost locally by the informal process previously described, i.e., by contributions rather than by formal taxation. Residents of the "above the water" neighborhood were naturally in favor of the construction since they did not have any running water. "Across the water" people were neutral, willing

621 to support the majority but with a tendency to favor the
653 dominant neighborhood for the two "compounds" located
666 across the river were both agnatic relatives of the Liao
965 who were the most common in the dominant neighborhood.

The "below the water" people were against the installation for most already had a form of running water (the plastic hoses) and could gain few benefits for the large investment which would be required.

Active campaigning ensued. Arguments on one side appealed to village pride and to unity, the entire village working together so most would benefit while the opposing position stressed costs explicitly, but tapped some underlying resentment against the dominant neighborhood. Some appeals to the expenses required found favor among some "above the water" residents. The sworn brothers association cut across neighborhood divisions and stayed neutral, i.e., they did not actively campaign for either position. Since the Liao relatives in the "below the water" neighborhood voted on the basis of their pocketbooks and not on the basis of kinship, the proposal was defeated. There appears to be little local resentment and most of that is directed at a higher level government unit, the county, which set the district to include the entire village rather than the part which did not already have running water.

621 These two neighborhoods became factions which were
665 mobilized around a specific issue, installation of the

621 water tower. Normally, there is little competition
665 between the neighborhoods although the "progressive" and
"traditional" factions within the village do tend to be
localized with the "below the water" and the "above the
water" sections respectively although neither is totally
621 identified with a single neighborhood. The neighborhoods
574 do have some significance for visiting patterns, i.e.,
evening conversational groups are clustered in each of the
two neighborhoods and at small weddings, if only a few
guests in addition to kinsmen are invited, they tend to be
drawn from the immediate neighborhood.

621 The lin (neighborhood) was mentioned previously as
a formal political unit consisting of 10 or 11 contiguous
households and headed by a lin chang (neighborhood leader).
The lin is not an important informal social unit in
Sanlei. Its functions are required by higher adminis-
trative directives, but since it was seemingly created on
the basis of geography (perhaps by an administrator looking
at a map) rather than on the basis of social reality
(visiting and friendship patterns), it is not a signifi-
cant unit in structuring social life except for dividing
the village into equal sized formal units.

Sanlei Ts'un Temple Association

346 The major unifying element in Sanlei village is the
temple, an imposing modern structure (35 feet long by 18
feet deep) possessing an ornate roof. A large paper money

346 burner sits outside the east door at one end. Inside,
353 directly opposite each of the three bright red doors are
[332] three large niches in the wall, each of which contains
[376] from five to nine gods.² In front of each niche are
flower stands, flower vases, and worship tables (see
Chapter VII for further details).

The temple is open from early in the morning until
778 late at night and is seldom empty. It is used by
857 children as a playroom, particularly on hot or rainy
794 days, but when the kids yell too loud or run too fast,
778 they are chased out. In the heat of the day, two or three
[517] men may be napping on the cool floor. Visitors to the
778 village sit on the benches and chat. An occasional chess
524 game is played on the bench with its crowd of kibitzers.
794 village champions challenge salesmen at \$1.00 per game,
but salesmen rarely win, perhaps because they are being
politic but perhaps because the kibitzing is not neutral.
Advice is given frequently and openly and at times, it
appears as if the salesman has challenged the whole
794 village. Of course, there are a few people who come in
778 to worship or ask a question of the gods. In the evening,
[517] between dinner and bed-time, men sit on the porch or on
[434] the benches and chat. The local bus picks up and
discharges passengers in front of the temple.
[421] The temple belongs to the entire village; each
resident shares fully in its ownership and a new resident
is automatically a participant if he so desires. The

794 temple is the central focus for various religious festi-
778 vals that punctuate the yearly cycle. There is a major
778 temple committee, selected by a process of consensus,
794 consisting of the senior and most respected men in the
623 community. The committee is in charge of a small plot
of paddy land, the income from which goes to support the
temple caretaker. The committee is also responsible for
the maintenance of the temple and for coordination of
temple affairs.

796 Those religious affairs which are regular, occurring
794 on a standard date each year, are not managed by the major
624 temple committee. Rather, each chia chang or his repre-
[787] sentative comes to the temple and casts the shen pei³ with
its falls interpreted as a yes or no. Whoever obtains the
most yes votes before receiving a no is the Lu Chu (pot
master) in charge of the next event. He has assistant
potmasters on the special committee, one from each lin
(legal subdivision of the village) chosen in the same
[562] manner. Potmasters have never been female but females
have been permitted to cast the sticks to attempt the
office and females are often assistant potmasters.⁴

796 The special committee is responsible for planning
62 the scheduled event and raising the money to pay for it.
794 If no one on the committee is experienced, a member of
the major temple committee is usually added as an ex
officio member.⁵ A special committee will meet six or
seven times for planning purposes, the members sounding

334

794 out village sentiment on issues between meetings. They
796 may hire shamans or priests for an affair, a puppet show.
62 or a Taiwanese opera, get police permission for the event.
[545] etc. After the budget is estimated, its cost is distributed to households on a basis of ability to pay in the informal process previously discussed and each assistant potmaster is responsible for collecting in his own lin. The final accounting of collections and disbursements is posted on the temple bulletin board but the accounting is never quite wholly accurate as wealthier families have paid somewhat more than is listed while some poor people are listed as contributors although they gave nothing in [435] order to protect everyone from embarrassment. Contributions for a major event usually range from \$10.00 to \$200.00.

796 After the ceremony is over, people talk about how
794 good the festival was. Entertainment usually lasts three
[659] days although police permission is difficult to obtain for a third day because the government is promoting austerity in connection with religious celebrations. Entertainment [435] costs are less each succeeding day, i.e., an opera costs [545] \$2,000.00 the first day, \$1,400.00 the second, and \$1,200.00 the third. People also discuss whether the committee has spent too much of the collection on food and drink for their committee meetings.

There are two major events each year which receive this full treatment, the Matsu procession and New Years.

796 With two different potmasters, each with their respective
794 committees, twenty-five percent of village households are
involved in temple work at a given moment in time without
counting the permanent committee. There are minor events
that receive lesser attention and also, recently there
were two special "Fire Purification Ceremonies" a year
apart. The first was sponsored by three cooperating
sworn brothers associations who alone paid for it. The
village united for the second and helped pay for it in the
previously described manner with a potmaster and committee
which was in addition to the other committees previously
listed.

794 The temple was completely rebuilt ten years ago,
supervised by the major temple committee, and paid for by
contributions. Former villagers from all over Taiwan made
donations, about one third of the cost borne by two
brothers, sons of a former village resident, whose meat
canning factory in Taipei was a financial success. The
brothers were honored by heading the dedication plaque on
the temple wall which listed all donations by names of
contributors. The brothers subsequently returned more
often on festive occasions and have also given job pre-
ferences to village men who go to the city.

Talei Li Temple Association

632 The temple in Sanlei is owned only by Sanlei
794 villagers while the temple in Erhlei belongs to all of

794 T'alei Li. The five villages have always participated in
632 maintaining the li temple except that in the recent period.
Wulei, as previously mentioned, has been taken over by
Mainlanders who do not participate in li activities.
Everyone in the li agrees that the Erhlei temple is at a
higher level than Sanlei in the religious hierarchy. Other
than for special events however, villagers in Sanlei
and Szulei usually go to the Sanlei temple, and those
in Erhlei and T'oulei, to the Erhlei temple although
convenience is the only reason mentioned for the preference.
It may be noted however, that the sets of villagers who
prefer each temple are in perfect correlation with the
sets of villagers who comprise the two regional li
factions (See Chapter IV).

There is an Erhlei temple association board,
similar to that described for Sanlei except that the mem-
bership consists of two senior men from each village in the
li and an influential man in Erhlei is the effective
informal leader in addition to being the formal head.
Most affairs in the li temple (located in Erhlei) are run
by this permanent temple committee although additional
aides are selected by use of the shen pei. In accordance
with the distribution of power in the li, if the head of
an affair is from one end of the li, the chief assistant
is from the other, and minor assistants are evenly distri-
buted. However, the major permanent temple committee
really runs the whole affair. The chairman has been

794 heavily criticized in the past⁶ but has not been challenged
632 for his post which he seemingly inherited from his father.

794 Religious affairs are celebrated with the same kind
621 of periodicity described for Sanlei and on most occasions,
632 celebrations are held simultaneously in both temples. In
this case, the two committees cooperate, sharing the cost
of the entertainment which alternates yearly in location
between Sanlei and Erhlei. The cost is greater for Sanlei
villagers as they are the only ones in the li who contri-
bute to both temples. I was not confidently able to
establish a reason for this fact but as previously stated,
Sanlei villagers all came from the same village in Fukien
and brought a god's statue with them from the Mainland.
The other villages in the li were settled about the same
time but each consisted of people from a variety of villages
in Fukien. The big li temple was built first, all five
villages united to erect it. A few years later, a group
of men in Sanlei all named Liao decided to build a temple
of their own to house the god's statue brought in from
the mainland and did not obtain help from other villages
in the li. Sanlei village was more integrated than the
others in the li and has remained so with the village
temple as a symbol of pride and a focus for the community.
There is a suggestion of a chicken-egg type question in
this explanation. That is, the community was sufficiently
integrated to build its own temple: the temple was a force
promoting community integration. Which comes first?

794 In the post-World War II reconstruction of the
621 typhoon-destroyed temple, the Sanlei planning committee
632 did attempt to solicit funds from other villages in Talei
Li. They had a few initial refusals from influential
leaders who claimed the li temple was sufficient so did
not press the issue but withdrew with a claim that
Sanlei could and would build a temple alone. Their
success, the temple is more plush than the li temple.
served to raise village pride and also provides a stronger
in-group feeling although there is still some resentment
over the failure of the rest of the li to cooperate.

796 For many years Talei Li and another li jointly
794 participated in an annual thanksgiving festival. At
632 first, the festivals alternated yearly between the major
628 temples located in each li. After some time passed, since
the other li was much larger, two festivals were held
at that li to one in Talei Li. One of the festival events
featured a cash award for the owner of the largest pig
which had been slaughtered for the banquet. One year, a
Talei Li resident entered a simply enormous pig, but the
festival committee (a majority from outside Talei Li)
selected a different pig as the winner after both had been
weighed. Talei Li people claimed the chosen pig had lead
weights in its stomach and they withdrew from the cooper-
ative ceremony in anger. The conflict aided in uniting
the people of Talei Li and although the event occurred
eight years ago, it is still a frequent topic of

796 conversation, most repetitions of the story liberally
794 sprinkled with "we" and "they."
632
628

The Temple versus an Ancestral Hall

121
621 In a discussion of the significance of ancestral
182 hall associations in Chinese village life. Freedman
794 (1958: 1966) reports they constitute dominant structural
[171] features of many communities in Southeastern China from
whence the majority of Sanlei residents migrated. He
also points out there are other kinds of social organi-
zations in local communities such as voluntary associ-
ations (1958:92-5). Hsiao Kung-chuan (1960:278) contrasted
a village dominated by an ancestral hall association
with another village dominated by a temple association
and suggested the two kinds of organizations may be
alternative structures fulfilling identical functions.
Topley (1968:19) argues that seldom would a village have
both an active temple organization and an active ancestral
hall association for such would likely lead to much
disharmony. She suspects that both "ancestral hall and
temple organizations must have been alternative forms for
controlling village affairs--the one being based on mono-
lineage villages," although the literature does not always
relate the temple organization to village composition in
kinship terms (1968:19).

[613] On one level, Sanlei constituted an ideal situation
for the establishment of a strong lineage village. Since
the migrants who founded Sanlei came from an area of China

121 noted for its single lineage villages, there was con-
182 siderable previous experience with lineage structures
613 and, as noted previously, the home village on the main-
621 land had a large ancestral hall association. Moreover,
794 there was a single surname, Liao, which encompassed almost
all residents in the early history of the community and
still predominates. In spite of these facts, a community
temple association evolved rather than a strong lineage
organization. I suggest the arguments advanced by
Pasternak (1969:551-61) concerning the role of the
frontier in lineage development are more cogent than
Freedman's contention that the frontier is a stimulus
to lineage development (1966:163-4). In essence, Pasternak
claims that the frontier required such "extensive
cooperation for purposes of defense and environmental
exploitation among unrelated family and lineage fragments"
(1969:560-1) that lineages would not develop and become
strong.

Sanlei data support Pasternak's position. Sanlei
village was established in an area occupied by hostile
aborigines who attacked so frequently, it was necessary
to build a wall around the village and mount a regular
guard. Developing the land also required cooperative
work in terracing and irrigation. Any tendencies towards
fragmentation such as the development of lineages would
have been dysfunctional for it was necessary that the
entire community perform as a unit to achieve success.

341

121 In fairness to Freedman, he also posits (1966:160) as
182 contributing factors, the "extent of irrigation" and "the
613 degree to which land is held in joint ownership", neither
621 of which were significant in Sanlei.
794

Pasternak (1969:561) suggests that "only when the primitive and hostile conditions of the frontier have been somewhat ameliorated" that localized lineages may appear. Although the conditions in Sanlei have long since been peaceful, localized lineages have not emerged. The temple organization which developed out of the entire community on a cooperative basis has been successful, serves as a source of community pride as well as a community focus, and has continually enfolded each new resident into its structure. I suggest that the original frontier conditions inhibited development of a strong lineage. Creation of a community temple might be considered an historical accident, but once a social unit developed around it, the presence of the temple would continue to inhibit development of lineage organization and ancestral halls. The Liao brothers who enjoyed considerable financial success with the meat-canning factory in Taipei could easily have endowed an ancestral hall in the village, but instead, they made an equivalent contribution to the village temple and are now honored with plaques on the temple wall. I suspect that unless great changes occur such as the establishment of significant class differences in Sanlei, strong lineage organizations will never develop in the

121

182

342

613

621

794

village, especially in light of the fact that long-established lineages are disappearing throughout Taiwan.

Women's Work Groups

462

476

There are various work activities performed by women: some as a member of a team, some individually but in the company of others, and some as isolates working alone. Many of the work groups have existed with the same membership for many years. In general, most work groups are organized on an age basis which rarely exceeds a period of a few years.

561

462

296

476

Six days a week women wash, sometimes seven. There are three major washing locations in Sanlei Ts'un: one at the previously described artificial pond and the other two in the river, one close and convenient to the village center and the other upstream a distance across a narrow bridge. Some people wash in the morning and some in the afternoon, each wash requiring an hour or more of labor. Each woman is responsible for her own washing although occasionally, a woman will wash for a fee which goes into the regular family pool. Although some women wash individually, many wash in social groups although each person does her own. People frequently evaluate a woman's ability as a housekeeper on the basis of the cleanliness of her wash. While washing, there is considerable latitude for conversation, and although the women themselves are not consciously aware of the constraints of the pattern, there are seven regular washing groups, membership from day to

462 day rarely varying. Each of the seven groups has a con-
476 stant nucleus although a number of other women attach
296 themselves to each group periodically. If a woman is ill
for a couple of days or more, her washing responsibilities
will be borne by a kinswoman in her household; if she is
not in an extended family, by a fellow member of her
regular wash group.

462 There are three groups of women who grade tea on a
476 piece-work basis. They work for any tea processor who
245 requires sorting as there is no necessary relationship
between a particular processor and a particular work group.
The goal is to sort the leaves (high grade) from the
twigs, pieces, and stems (low grade) in a flat bamboo
basket, six feet in diameter, which holds processed tea.
Four to six women can sit around the basket and sort
together while chatting but, of course, it is also

[465] possible to work alone. The work is easy and with a half-
hour's instruction, anyone can earn \$2.00 to \$3.00 per
[887] hour on a piece-work basis. This activity is usually
performed by old women and occasionally by very young girls.
Three groups of old women constitute the regular work
teams, sharing equally in the piece-work income although
quite aware that some women work faster than others. They
work out in the courtyard when the weather is nice and in
anyone's house who has space when it is cold or wet.

There are two other important income-earning work
activities usually performed only by women, tea picking

344

462 on a piece work basis and orange-orchard weeding on a daily
476 rate. Both pay more than tea grading and are much harder.
245 employing young to middle-age married women. Once again,
this is usually performed by regular recurrent groups
although income is not shared. Employers from the village
our outside hire a group by contacting one member of the
group most of whom have one informal leader, an aggressive
type in her forties who plans work ahead of time. She
earns no extra money but seems to enjoy the power and
prestige. Some individuals are hired as individuals and
for smaller jobs, teams often break up into sub-units or
even individuals.

562 Income from any of the above sources belongs to the
434 woman's family unit as does men's income. However, two
476 sources of income are not shared with the family and are
291 considered the personal resources of females: that derived
412 from making brooms and straw hats. This can be done only
462 in leisure time when other work is not expected, i.e., the
time between cleaning up the dinner dishes and going to
bed. Once more, some women work individually, but others
jointly cooperate and share income.

462 There are other kinds of shared work activities
476 which are not involved with income, the housework such as
cooking and cleaning as well as tending children. It was
previously pointed out that women in extended families
frequently share work or take turns and some women who are
friends and neighbors often do the same. There are many

345

462 regular patterns. Some tasks such as grinding rice are
476 done jointly together while for other tasks, they alter-
nate, i.e., two women rotate care of both sets of children.
[546] preparing lunch, etc. Sometimes, a woman can get into the
fields to work for an afternoon or even a whole day or they
can take turns with time off to go to town and shop or take
[562] in a movie. Village women see movies more often than men,
usually in the afternoon. A new bride in the village soon
[561] has her own circle of friends among women who are in her
same age range.

Men's Work Groups

Men's work groups do not seem as structured as
[465] women's. As previously stated, the standard rate of pay
[248] for a day's labor for a man is \$50.00 except there is an
addition of a five meal bonus when the work is trans-
planting or harvesting rice. There is no bargaining in
terms of ability or skill; instead, the better workers
obtain jobs more frequently.

There are many regular units which trade labor,
almost inevitably composed of relatives or sworn brothers.
It is easy to keep track of records because one day's
labor equals any other day's labor no matter what the
activity. Although a day planting rice may be considered
more difficult than a day spent weeding oranges, the five
meal bonus for the rice work makes the two activities
equal. There were 17 such work groups which had at least

346

462 one of their members in Sanlei, the smallest with two
476 members (3 cases) and the largest with six (2 cases).

Work groups of two men merely traded days, but in any group larger than two members, the accounting was managed like a bank savings account, i.e., a man deposited so many day's labor and withdrew the same amount. It was not necessary to see that each member balanced with every other individually, merely that each individual's total deposits and withdrawals matched. A man with but little land under cultivation was permitted to withdraw his deposit by hiring the team out and collecting their wages. Periodically, the books could be balanced by \$50.00 increments for each day's overdraft.

462 However, more labor is acquired on a hired basis
476 than on an exchange basis. A typical large work force for
464 transplanting, weeding, or harvesting will usually include a combination of paid and exchange laborers. An individual will tend to hire the same men and be hired in turn by them. Often, a man may hire a man for wages with whom he sometimes exchanges labor. Many people say it is easier just to pay a man when a job is done, a one to ten day period, then to try and keep track of the records required for labor exchanges. Some work is seemingly exchanged only because it does promote a structure of mutual indebtedness between friends. For several village men, the amount they pay out in wages about equals the amount they collect. The larger land holders are the

347

462 real support for the many village men who are full time
464 farm laborers or who are partially farm laborers and
476 partially tenants or owner-operators.

Tea Processors

245 There are three tea processing households in
472 Sanlei. One processor owns much land which he operates
627 almost totally with hired labor and processes little
[577] more than his own tea. Fifteen years ago he was caught
using false weights to buy tea leaves from Sanlei farmers
and villagers have never trusted him since. He and
his wife are isolated from the rest of the village in
social terms and both of their children are living and
[207] working in Taipei. The couple are reasonably well-off
financially by village standards and own the second
village television set which they watch alone without
guests. Just about everyone else in the village watches
the television set owned by the village store.

245 The other two processors pay identical prices
472 and offer identical services and share most of the
rest of the village tea production except that part
[477] sold to a processor in Erhlei. Although each processor
would like a larger share of the business, competition
is on the basis of establishing good relations with
sellers (farmers) rather than on service or price.
One processor is named Liao and had the major share of
business in the past. The other is named Chiu.

348

245 The Chiu family has produced a large crop of daughters in
472 recent years who have married into Liao families and Chiu
602 has subsequently been getting a larger share of business
recently from ch'in ch'i (affinal relatives). Both pro-
cessors have kinship relationships with many tea farmers,
their own customers and their competitor's customers as
well. Although kinship identities are only one aspect
of the relationship (other aspects include such as sworn
brothers, mutual friends, etc.), it is possible to
approximately assess the relative strength of various
kinship categories. That is, a man seldom will sell to
another processor if his father, brother, father's
brother, or mother's brother is a processor. However, he
usually sells to his wife's father or wife's brother
rather than a more distant kinsman on his own side of the
family, i.e., a first or second cousin. As Chiu girls
marry Liao boys, there is usually no immediate change,
but as time passes so that a new generation takes over
management of farm and processing from the old generation,
some Chiu girls bring their Liao husband's tea production
into the Chiu processing business.

245 Both processors periodically entertain the farmers
472 with whom they do most of their business. The tea
farmers are divided into two groups, so to speak, each
focusing on the respective processor to whom they sell
most of their tea leaves.

Young Men

561 As will be discussed in the life history section,
884 there is a period almost of limbo for young men between
primary school graduation and their military service. At
some point which is not clearly delineated a boy becomes
a man and earns a man's wage rather than a boy's wage.
Boys who enroll for an apprenticeship or who continue
in school tend to drop out but those remaining in the
village constitute a social group.

561 The main activities of the group are in the evening
883 and consist of conversation, music, wandering around,
517 telling jokes, talking about girls, and the occasional
trip to tea houses which are cheaper than coffee or wine
houses. Such places usually have girls who are not
prostitutes but who will talk very suggestively, entertain,
and occasionally pet.

561 These young men's groups are age graded, usually a
spread of not more than two or three years. They sometimes
become a sworn brother's association and at that time,
the student and apprentice in the appropriate age group
will usually be invited to join.

Young Women

882 In general, there is no equivalent for girls of the
young men's groups described above. Girls who graduate
from primary school stay and help at home until marriage
and are watched much more carefully than boys. The major
000

The major

883 exception involves girls who are hired by factories,
464 particularly clothing factories. There is one small
factory close enough to commute by bicycle daily and two
factories which pick up the girls on a truck in the morning
[434] and return them each night. Although it is expected that
each girl will turn over her money to the family, she is
economically independent and usually has pocket money of
[517] her own. On Sunday, a non-work day, these girls travel in
a group to the park, the theater, etc. Girls who work in
the same place play together. Since there are three
factories, there are three such groups, each related to a
factory and cutting across village lines although seldom
do groups include anyone living outside Talei Li.

I Ching (Voluntary Policemen)

625 The modern I Ching organization (voluntary police-
men) was started for men in good health between the ages
of 30 and 45 two to three years after the Restoration by
the regular police organization. Men are available any-
time for service but tend to be most active for the fifty
[124] days immediately preceding the lunar New Year. An old
[42] Chinese custom requires that all debts should be paid by
[74] New Year's day and the pressure to liquidate debts leads
[125] to an increase in the frequency of robbery although
robbery is a fairly common crime on Taiwan in general.
During the period of fifty days before New Year, the
I Ching mount a night patrol in Talei Li.

Each member is furnished a rain coat, flash light,

625 night stick, and piece of rope. The patrol for Talei Li usually consists of five men nightly; two men patrol the first half of the night and two others, the last while one man is on duty as a spare in case someone gets sick. He also prepares tea and noodles for snacks. Although only adult males are regular members of the I Ching, the patrol is considered part of each household's responsibility. Therefore, the fifth or spare man is often not a regular member and indeed, may often be a girl representing a household which has no adult males within the appropriate age group. A girl never patrols but she does [562] fix the tea and noodles. In this manner, a girl is seen as almost the equivalent of a male, for although she does not patrol, her activities (all night rather than half the night) mean her household has made a contribution equal to that of one furnishing a man.

[36] Control of crimes is easy to maintain because [49] there is only one road leading through the Li towards town and escape over the mountains would be extremely difficult.

625 Clothes and equipment for the I Ching are purchased 431 from funds contributed by business men and wealthier 626 land owners in the area. Although donations are supposedly voluntary, community pressure is placed on anyone who does not willingly donate his share, i.e., there is a veiled threat that no watch will be kept on property 625 owned by uncooperative men. Each night of work, each 435

625 participant receives \$4.00 to purchase noodles. As
[435] stated previously, sworn brothers associations sometimes
[573] mount the patrol in other periods on their own initiative
as a community service without any contributions.

Once a month, the I Ching go to the police station
in Fouti for training conducted by the policeman assigned
to the li with the help of other officers in the station.
Occasionally, a high ranking officer from Hsin Tien comes
in to give a pep talk. The efficiency of the force and
the degree of assistance obtained is purely dependent on
the kind of relationship the policeman is able to estab-
lish with villagers. Although considerable force and
power is his by virtue of his office, villagers can make
his job relatively easy or very difficult. The previous
policeman had been stationed in Sanlei for many years and
[648] had excellent relations with villagers. Most police are
Mainlanders, one of whom was assigned shortly after our
study began. Since he only spoke a few words of
Taiwanese and those with an accent, he was having a
[191] difficult time. Many villagers speak no Mandarin and
several that know some Mandarin refuse to speak it.

434 If a thief is captured, the I Ching on duty get a
reward of \$120.00 each (more than two days regular pay)
and the policeman in charge of the li gets a citation
of merit. One third of the reward comes from the
donations, one third from the police station in Hsin
Tien, and one third from the main police station in

625 Taipei along with a letter commendation. Additionally,
the I Ching and policeman have their pictures taken
together at the station in Pouti and are presented copies
later at the village temple by the local police chief.
This custom helps to break down the natural antagonisms
between police and villager by instilling the idea they
are united in a task to prevent robbery and catch thieves.

625 There was a similar organization under the Japanese
648 but at that time the volunteers had more training, a
681 regular uniform, and discipline was more harsh. According
to informants, a Japanese policeman always beat trans-
gressors on the spot in public, but this never seems to
happen with Chinese policemen although there were rumors
of beatings at the police stations. The policeman now
uses persuasion, attempts mediation, or relies on the
courts.

685 If the I Ching capture a thief, they are instructed
625 to send for the policemen in Pouti. A Mainlander was
caught some years ago, arrested and as far as villagers
were able to learn, was quickly released by the police who
were fellow Mainlanders. Therefore, before the police
arrive all captured thieves are thoroughly beaten with
sticks but are not killed and even villagers not on duty
are all awakened to contribute blows. Since every man
in the village and perhaps several from nearby villages
participate, it would be difficult to prosecute them all.

625 The whole li contributes men to make up the patrol
632

354

625 and it thus is a unifying force since there are presently
632 55 members. 18 of them from Sanlei. As stated, Sanlei
often mounts its own patrol in periods when the li patrol
is not active. The fact that Sanlei is the only li village
that mounts this extra patrol supports my contention that
Sanlei is more integrated.

Corvee

653 There has been a tradition in China of using local
651 labor for civic works, road repair, bridge construction,
public building maintenance, etc. Local villagers are
653 assessed so many days of service per year. The system of
648 corvee was continued under the Japanese but was quite
harsh for every adult male had to contribute a heavy
amount of labor every year. The work might be performed
locally, but some men were conscripted into work groups
and taken from the village for two-week periods, usually
to dig ditches or work on road maintenance. During
World War II, several village men were conscripted into
Japanese labor battalions. One village man worked at the
American prisoner of war camp near Taipei. Several li
men were taken to other islands under Japanese control;
two went to the Philippines and were returned by the
Americans after the end of the war. Their earnings were
in Japanese Yen and are still on deposit in a Japanese
bank and will not be returned until after treaty nego-
tiations between the Republic of China and Japan are

653 concluded although the enormous post-war decrease in the
648 value of the Yen has made the savings minuscule.

653 The system of corvee labor has continued under the
651 Chinese Nationalists but is now considered to be much more
equitable. Labor is still required but the load is light
and accomplished only in the immediate area of Talei Li.
Moreover, it is possible to buy your way out of the
[465] required labor. Since \$10.00 is recognized as the equal
of a full day's corvee labor while \$50.00 constitutes a
normal day's wages, the work can be seen to be considered
very light. The rich tea owner and processor previously
discussed does no corvee work but his \$10.00 contributions
are used for the material which might be required such
as nails.

Nevertheless, it is desired that everyone possible
work on corvee projects. Most villagers respond to the
appeals which are made to civic pride and do participate.
The work projects are treated almost as a game for no man
653 works very hard. Since a villager accumulates a day's
461 corvee labor credit for working on any project either for
651 a day or until it is completed whichever is less, most
projects are overloaded with workers and each man contri-
butes little labor. For example, a foot bridge was built
across the creek when the water was quite high from the
winter floods. The Li Chang (mayor) and I estimated that
the bridge could have been completed in a single day by
three or four men. However, twenty-six village men worked

653 on the bridge and each achieved credit for a day's corvee
461 work. They often got in each other's way, i.e., I watched
651 four men struggling to carry a single bamboo pole which
one man could have carried in one hand without much effort.

There is a latent effect which may be evident to village leaders and political officials. Men are able to do "good" for the community without strain and since the work is always confined to their own area, they can see the completed job regularly. Although no one person's contribution to each job amounts to very much, the completed project is useful and worthwhile. For example, the bridge described above saved up to half a mile walk to the next closest foot bridge. Men work together cooperatively in a large group, the only large work groups ever seen in the village. Finally, because of the great excess of men over what is reasonably needed for a job, there is much time for joking and friendly conversation. Although only men do corvee labor, women always gather to watch and pass remarks so that in essence, every corvee job we observed in the village was a gay occasion.

CHAPTER VII

RELIGION

121
79) The significance of religion in Chinese social life
has often been undervalued in the conventional analyses.

In one of the first assignments in my formal university
study of China, a noted sinologist had written:

The Chinese have been less concerned with the
world of the supernatural than with the worlds
of nature and of man. They are not a people
for whom religious ideas and activities consti-
tute an all-important and absorbing part of
life . . . (Bodde, 1951:18).

Reischauer and Fairbank, in a classic work (1960:30), add
that Confucianism was a "great ethical institution, which
in a sense occupied in China much of the place filled by
both law and religion in the West . . ." A similar thread
of the insignificance of religion is woven throughout the
accounts of Western scholars and is even more strongly a
part of the literature of modern Chinese intellectuals
(C. K. Yang, 1961:4).

The attitudes towards religion and the observances
of religious rites and rituals found in Sanlei Ts'un would
not support the above positions. I do not believe that
Sanlei Ts'un is unique in its strong emphasis on religion
as compared with other Chinese villages, i.e., I believe

121 most Chinese villages have a strong emphasis on religion.
71 I discuss below four primary reasons for this discrepancy between published accounts of its non-importance and the actual practice.

The first reason is identical to one contributing to the errors in interpretation of the role of women, the problem focus of this dissertation. In accordance with the concepts of Redfield (1956), every civilization has a "Great Tradition" found predominantly among the educated elite which is contrasted with a "Little Tradition" or series of "Little Traditions" found among the masses. The relationships between the two levels are problematical although almost all of the classical literature and historical records in China are devoted to the bearers of the "Great Tradition." In other terms, this has been succinctly stated by Reischauer and Fairbank:

The common people who formed the mass of Chinese society did not bulk large in the cultural record, which has come down to us chiefly from the brushes of scholar-officials. Most Chinese were neither scholars nor Confucian gentlemen, and had very little, if anything, to do with officialdom. For the common people, Taoism and Buddhism still supplied the principle explanations of the cosmos and the family and village still were the focus of everyday living. But it is not yet possible to reconstruct with verisimilitude the daily life of the average Chinese villager in the pre-modern centuries. What we know most about is the educated, urban upper classes . . . (1960:383).

In respect to the practice of religion, it appears there is a significant difference between the elite and the masses. At least, even on Taiwan today, great differences

121 can be found between the religion of the masses, particu-
771 larly in rural areas, and that of college-educated urban
dwellers.

A second reason is due to a great difference in the structure of the typical Western as opposed to Chinese religion. C. K. Yang has discussed this difference on a structural-functional basis as the differences between "institutionalized" and "diffused" religion:

In institutional religion, the theology, the organization of personnel, and the cultic symbols and practices are separate from the secular social institutions, thus making religion an independent social institution. In diffused religion, these factors have no separate institutional existence but are diffused into the concept and structure of several different institutions. In Nanching and in Chinese society as a whole, diffused religion represented the structurally stronger and more pervasive force in the lives of the common people (1965:192-3).

Western religion tends to be highly institutionalized as opposed to the strongly diffused Chinese pattern. An institutionalized religion is much more obvious to the cross-cultural observer. It will be demonstrated that religion in Sanlei Ts'un is diffused into many different aspects of social life as has been described in most ethnographic accounts of Chinese villages.

The third reason, also related to the difficulty of the Westerner in understanding Chinese religion and appraising its role in society, is due to the eclectic nature of religion in China. Eclecticism refers to the fact that Chinese religion is made up of elements from many

121 different sources including both Great and Little Tradi-
771 tions and also, that the Chinese are non-exclusive with
reference to a commitment to a particular religion. It
is not only possible to believe in two conflicting ideolo-
gies, it may well be prudent as I shall illustrate.¹ When
exposed to a new religion, an individual may ask two cen-
tral questions: (1) Is it the one true religion? (2)
Should I become a believer? Man can never be certain of
the answer to the first question but he does have control
over his actions relating to the second. If the answer to
the first question is no (the new religion is false), then
the answer to the second is irrelevant (believing or not
believing). However, if the answer to the first question
is true (the new religion is the one true religion), then
the answer to the second is crucial: a man can be a be-
liever in the one true religion and be rewarded; or he can
be a non-believer in the one true religion and be punished.
Therefore since man has control over only one of the two
questions, it is prudent to answer it in only one profita-
ble way--be a believer.²

The above rational process could be applied to a
series of individual beliefs or constellation of beliefs
and in each case the outcome would be the same: become a
believer. On several occasions, villagers asked how to be
a Christian or perform Christian ritual. They had heard of
Christianity and would like to add it to their belief

121 systems.
771

If a man were to apply the above approach to a series of beliefs, he would be required to accept and internalize some beliefs which are in direct conflict with others. This does not seem to present the problems it might require of a man socialized in terms of Western culture. That is, there does not seem to be the same strong drive for belief consistency, i.e., construction of what has been termed an integrated personality. Francis L. K. Hsu (1953; 1963) has characterized the Chinese personality as "situation-centered" by which he means that a Chinese reacts to his world as if it were compartmentalized; he possesses a segmented personality. "Principles which are correct for one set of circumstances may not be appropriate for another at all, but the principles in each case are equally honorable. In fact, the good Chinese tends to have multiple standards" (1963:2). "The individual feels no resentment against conforming and no compunction about behaving differently under contrasting sets of circumstances" (1963:2). This great difference in approach has seemingly confused Western scholars.

A man who repeatedly offers one opinion, then changes it to the opposite side and then again reverts to the original position is labeled "insincere" according to Western principles. Liao P'o-li, the forty-two year old son of the man who headed the largest extended family in

121
771
775
181
156

121 Sanlei, told me on many different occasions that he did
711 not believe in ghosts or evil spirits. Nevertheless, I
715
181 saw him make sacrifices of propitiation to ghosts and evil
156 spirits and after an accidental death in Erhlei, he refused
to come alone to my house to chat as long as he had to
pass the body which was laid out in the courtyard. He
said he was afraid of the evil spirits which were sure to
be lurking near the body. When I argued that he claimed
he did not believe in spirits and ghosts, he told me not
to be foolish and he would not come until the body was
buried. Liao P'o-li was a sincere man who did not believe
in spirits in one set of circumstances but did believe in
spirits in another. He will continue to oscillate between
121 these positions as situations change. I believe the West-
771 ern scholar is incorrect if he labels China irreligious on
the basis of this process. Even though an informant may
tell him, "We do not really believe these religious things,"
the researcher should observe his activities and apply a
behavioral yardstick to accurately assess the informant's
attitudes.

The fourth and final reason is due to a Western
distinction between religion on the one hand and magic or
superstition on the other. Gallin points out (1966:232)
there is "so complete a mixture of religious and magical
belief [in the village he studied] that it is often dif-
ficult to determine where one form ends and another begins"

121 but such an objective approach has not always been realized.

771

Many of the earliest Western studies were by Christian missionaries, a group not likely to be unbiased with regard to reports on religion. In one of the best known nineteenth century rural studies, Arthur Smith (1899:343) argued that the Chinese neglected the spiritual nature. Modern sinologists treat magic and religion as a single loose system (Gallin, 1966:232) or a complex of attitudes and beliefs (Kulp, 1952:284). The former separation of magic from religion and then labeling most items as magic and thereby superstition is not reasonable as a basis for declaring that religion is not important in China. C. K. Yang claims that because of the large numbers of magical practices and beliefs to be found in the study of Chinese religion which carry no ethical connotations:

... The Chinese people were generally regarded as a superstitious lot who had yet to experience an ethico-religious life of a higher order. This view was most familiar to the Western world, as it was popularized for over a century by Western missionaries who found this situation to be wholly incompatible with the Christian faith and took it as the most convincing justification for their evangelical zeal (1961:3).

In this chapter, I will demonstrate that religion is very important in Sanlei village. There are few households in the village in which a religious act is not performed at least twice each day. Religion is used to bolster the family and the larger kinship organizations. Religious observances legitimize and mark key steps in the

121 life cycle. Religion supports the previously described
771 sworn brothers and god's associations. The village temple
and major religious events also support relationships with
other communities. Finally, religious beliefs affect many
aspects of daily life.

The Main Village Temple

346 The most important building in Sanlei Ts'un is the
village temple which is ornate and well-maintained inside
and out, the largest, cleanest, and most imposing structure
778 in the village. This building is the social center of the
621 village for in addition to its religious functions, it is
a meeting hall, a recreation center, a study center for
children, and the focal point for visitors and much com-
munity pride is derived from the prestige associated with
the temple. The temple is important for the performance of
religious rites but not as important as the home, at least
on a quantitative basis, although the temple is considered
to rank higher in the religious hierarchy than the home as
a worship center. Temples are also rated hierarchically
and in local opinion, the one in Erhlei is ranked higher
than the one in Sanlei while both rank below a major temple
778 in Hsin Tien. The temple is usually a significant part of
[776] the major calendrical religious rites as well as many of
the periodic (non-calendrical) community religious events.
[778] On a personal level, many individuals consult the temple
gods as needed while other individuals may worship daily,

778 some in observance of a promise made to the gods for ful-
[782]filling some previous request.

778 On the interior wall of the temple is a bulletin
554 board topped by an engraved history of the temple and list
203 of donations for its construction. A report of collections
794 and expenditures for the preceding religious event is post-
ed in descending order by amount of donation per household.
In this manner, the gods are advised of contributions and
every resident and visitor to the community may learn who
is important in the village, i.e., the larger the donation,
the higher the status.

787 There are two regular means to question the gods.
One method involves use of the shen pei which look rather
like they were made from a short blunt banana sliced in
two lengthwise. After asking a question accompanied by
appropriate ritual, the shen pei are dropped on the floor
from chest level. There are two falls interpreted as yes
and two as no, thus yielding a fifty per cent success
probability. The second method of questioning gods in-
volves randomly selecting a fortune stick from a vase.
Matching the stick is a fortune on a set of tablets but
all fortunes are rather ambiguous and subject to conflict-
ing interpretations.

793 There is no regular priest attached to the temple
nor is it on a route of a visiting circuit of priests for
the temple is a religious center complete unto itself.

778 There is no permanent individual in charge of the temple
796 which belongs to the entire community. Each particular
794 festival has a lu chu (pot master) in charge and a com-
624 mittee of assistant pot masters, one from each of the six
787 village lin, all chosen by the gods through casting the
shen pei. Whoever obtains the most "yes" answers before
his first "no" is considered to have been selected by the
gods for the position. The last part of any yearly event
requires casting the shen pei to determine the next year's
committee. Since there are two major regular events each
year plus periodic special affairs, each requiring a
unique committee of seven, many villagers are involved in
temple committees at any particular moment in time.

562 Women have never been the pot master but they have
624 regularly been assistant pot masters. Gallin claims this
794 is an unusual role for women in the Chang-hua area in
[798] which he worked (personal communication). Sanlei villagers
believe it is natural because the pot masters and assistant
pot masters are said to be selected solely by the gods.
Eligible candidates who cast the shen pei include all
village chia chang (household heads) and since the chia
chang are usually males, the unusualness may be deceiving.
That is, female lu chu may be rare only because female
chia chang are relatively rare and not because there is
some normative bias against female lu chu. As previously
stated, female chia chang are more numerous in Sanlei than

562 in many other areas of Taiwan. The only other office to
624 which females are elected in Sanlei is the parent teacher's
[594] association although as chia chang, females are eligible
for any political office. (Women from some other li
around Hsin Tien are elected to the township council.)
This explanation of the relationship between the percentage
of female lu chu and the percentage of female chia chang
cannot be tested without further data from other regions
of Taiwan.

358 The only semi-permanent temple official is the care-
taker who tends the temple, keeps it clean, puts flowers
in the vases, chases out children when they are too noisy,
and watches for thieves. He receives the income from a
small piece of temple-owned land but since it is not ade-
quate to pay for a regular worker's services, the care-
taker's job is always filled by one of the semi-retired
783 old men who has extra leisure time. The current caretaker
[558] replaced the former caretaker two years ago because his
wife had died rendering him ritually unclean for three
years. People who are ritually unclean, i.e., those in
mourning or women who are menstruating, should not enter
the temple lest they contaminate the gods.

Temple Gods

776 There are many different shen (gods) who are all
arranged in a great pantheon not unlike an emperor with
his officials descending down to the level of the local

776 policemen. The originations of gods are diverse, some were pure spirits and some were real historical figures who have been deified. As stated by Gamble for North China and true for all China, "Buddhism, Taoism, Official, and individual cults have influenced each other, borrowed from each other, and imitated each other" (1963:400). Certain gods are associated with certain purposes, i.e., they have functional specificity. However, across China as a whole there is a great deal of regional variability. "Even for certain national cults, the names and at times the functions of the same god vary from place to place" (C. K. Yang, 1961:10-11).

[532] There are 30 god's statues in the Sanlei temple. The names of all but two³ are known by some villagers but only a few villagers could name the 28. On the average, men know more names than women and old people know more than the young. For some of the popular gods, everyone in the village knew the name, even small children. Associated with each known god is a story. The oldest temple god was brought to the village from Fukien with the original group of migrants while others have been installed periodically; some have been acquired out of surplus funds collected for a general festival; some have been donated by sworn brothers associations; and some have been donated by individuals.

776 During our study, a part-time miner was visited by a god
787 in a dream who informed him not to go to work in the mine

776 anymore. The next day, there was a cave-in which killed
787 a miner from Erhlei Ts'un. The part-time miner was sure
the god had saved him so he obtained a statue of the god,
installed it in the temple, and pledged to worship it
776 daily for the rest of his life. Although the history of
532 the acquisition of many statues is known, much has been
lost and as stated earlier, two of the statutes are com-
pletely unknown, even their names.

776 The statues in the temple are called gods because
778 they are more than a mere symbolic representation, they
532 actually possess some essence of the god himself, acquired
by being made by special craftsmen and by being placed with
appropriate rituals next to other gods in special temples
[783] for a period of time. Temple gods may become contaminated
by various means such as by the close approach of a person
in mourning or a menstruating woman. When contaminated,
they lose much of their power but there are appropriate
rituals to cleanse them.

776 Gods are both males and females and probably the
most popular single god in China is Kuan-yin, the so called
Goddess of Mercy (L. Thompson, 1969:56). In Taiwan and
Fukien, one of the most popular gods is Matsu, another fe-
male, around whom a major celebration is dedicated each
[543] year in Sanlei. The importance of females in the pantheon
of gods is consistent with the arguments presented in this
paper with regard to the role of women in Chinese society.

121
562
79b I have argued that females are not as inferior to men as
claimed in much of the traditional literature (see Chapter X). On the spiritual plane, which as mentioned partially mirrors the structure of Imperial China's political organization, female gods hold commanding positions and rank above a great many male gods.

Temple Events

79b Each year, there are two major religious events celebrated in the temple, the Matsu procession and Lunar New Year (see Chapter IX). In many years there is also an additional major special event, i.e., not regular periodic. There have been three extra events in the past five years such as the "Fire Purification Ceremony" (discussed in the latter part of this chapter). There is nearly 100% participation in major events, each of which usually lasts more than one day and features elaborate hired entertainment, hired religious specialists, dinner and entertainment parties, food and money sacrifices at the temple and at home, and individual and kinship unit worship.

There are seven or eight minor religious events during each year (see Chapter IX) which are celebrated in a manner not unlike the above major events but much less elaborately. The extent of participation is less and sacrifices are smaller. We collected lists of affairs in which each family participated by household and in only

776
[556] rare cases did any two lists exactly match. The number of items on a single list were closely related to the socio-economic status of the household, i.e., the richer the household, the longer the list, undoubtedly due to the fact celebrations are always an expense. Rarely is a religious specialist hired and rarely is entertainment provided for minor events but if entertainment is hired, it is much less expensive than that for a major event, a puppet show rather than an opera for example.

782 A yet smaller percentage of the population use the temple for the regular bi-monthly special sacrifices (first and fifteenth or second and sixteenth of the lunar calendar).

778
674 The temple is rarely empty at any period from its opening just before sunrise until its closing at bedtime. In the past, the temple was open all the time, but villagers claim it is now necessary to lock it at night because of the many thieves, particularly wandering retired Main-
782 lander soldiers. On a typical non-special day, about 20 people, more than half of whom are women, perform some religious act in the temple such as an offering of incense. These acts are for three major purposes: thanking the gods for a past action, begging for a future favor, or merely asking advice. The most frequent underlying cause is health and second, is economics.

Earth God Temple

776 According to C. K. Yang, T'u Ti Kung (God of Earth)
[184] is a universal cult found in all Chinese villages and
towns and having special importance for local neighborhoods
778 (1961:98). Almost every small community in Taiwan has a
small shrine dedicated to T'u Ti Kung and a few larger
communities have large and elaborate shrines. Sanlei's
shrine is near the village border next to Erhlei, not a
convenient location but one which has powerful feng shui
[346] coordinates. The brick temple is very small, about four
[532] feet square and three feet high with a peaked roof. In-
side is T'u Ti Kung's statue and a stone incense pot.

776 It is necessary to digress for a moment to discuss
religious attitudes. Spiritual beings include gods (shen)
which are good divine powers, beings who bless those who
worship them; and spirits or devils (kuei) which are malev-
olent divine powers, beings who either bring harm or remain
neutral, i.e., withhold bestowal of blessings. Ancestors
may be considered spirits until they demonstrate benevo-
lence and if they are appropriately revered, ancestors will
not cause harm. However, the status of any supernatural
being is subject to change, gods may become spirits and
vice versa (Thelen and Li, 1963:44). The whole pantheon
of gods and spirits, as previously stated, is organized
much like the traditional government of Imperial China.
[184] Although there is great regional variation in details

716 there are hundreds of gods arranged hierarchically so
[184] that important gods have both attendants and troops. A villager approaches the gods much as he does ordinary governmental officials, i.e., gods and officials alike can be bribed, coaxed, tricked, etc., for gods are neither omniscient nor omnipresent.

T'u Ti Kung is the god in charge of the local community and thus, ranks low in the hierarchy. Villagers describe his status as somewhat similar to the local policeman. He keeps track of local events: births, deaths, farm production, business enterprises, marriages, etc., and has the power to influence the acquisition of wealth. Therefore, supplications are made to him by farmers before planting and thanks are given to him after harvesting. Some of the regular periodic religious events require worship at the T'u Ti Kung temple as well as the main temple and one event is devoted to his temple and the home. Some households make sacrifices at the Earth God temple as a regular part of their bi-monthly worship (1st and 15th or 2nd and 16th). About seven or eight times each month (estimated) individual villagers perform unscheduled worship activities for personal reasons at the T'u Ti Kung temple.

782 The usual form of worship is to face the altar, light three incense sticks, bow the head, hold the sticks between the two closed hands palms touching at chest level,

762 pai pai⁴ three times, and then insert the sticks in the incense pot.⁵ Then the whole ritual is repeated while facing away from the temple to invite any passing gods to come in and be worshipped except that the incense sticks are stuck in the ground about twenty feet from the shrine door. Worship at the main temple is nearly identical with the exception that three sticks may be placed in the pot in front of each of the three altars and the final outside worship is in the doorway with the sticks placed in the pot hanging on the wall outside. The twenty-foot distance at the T'u Ti Kung temple illustrates the general attitude towards gods for the sticks are stuck in the ground so far away from the earth god temple in order to make T'u Ti Kung think his temple is as large as the main Temple. If food and wine sacrifices are part of the worship, they are placed in front of the altar before the pai pai and are left long enough for the god or gods to eat as much as desired. All left-overs are returned home for family consumption, another indication of a rational and reasonable approach to religion. Statements to the gods are usually spoken but in a low voice. It is possible to stand close and hear the conversation but some statements are quite private and would embarrass the worshippers to have them overheard.

776 Legend states, according to most villagers, that T'u Ti Kung has a wife, T'u Ti Po. He had wanted to make

776 everyone prosperous but she argued that then there would be no one left to carry her sedan chair. She won the argument and many people therefore remain poor and consequently, villagers refuse to worship her. They all agree that most women do have a similar ability to influence their husband's behavior.

Miscellaneous Holy Places

778 Some years ago, a set of human bones was found under the bridge at the border of Erhlei and Sanlei. A general collection was made and the bones were interred on the site in a small shrine where people worship periodically as [753] needed, especially women who have sick children. The attitude seems to be that the spirit causes trouble such as sickness unless periodically propitiated.

In back of Liao Kan-yi's house (head of the major temple committee and owner of the oldest village store) is a special holy rock installed by his grandfather. No one remembers the reason for worshipping the rock, but on the first and fifteenth of each month, his family worships it with food sacrifices and three incense sticks. A younger grandson is often delegated the task. There are several trees and other rocks at which special worship is made. For example, some years ago a boy fell on a rock and was [782] in a coma for several days. His mother worshipped at the rock on which he fell and promised that if her son got well

773 she would worship there twice each month the rest of her
[782] life and since he recovered, she has continued now for
about 25 years.

778 The final set of holy places are the various tombs
764 for as previously stated, the Sanlei area has many excel-
[435] lent burial sites. One elaborate tomb recently was con-
structed at a cost of over \$200,000.00 (\$5,000.00 U.S.).

[769] Villagers usually avoid outsider's tombs, but tombs of
their own ancestors receive periodic attention. There is
special worship on regular days throughout the year and
the individual worship as necessary. The tomb location is
considered significant for family prosperity.

The Home Worship Center or Kung T'ing

The kung t'ing, which is the central room in every
house or compound, is a ritual center but serves multiple
uses in addition as a main workroom, storage place, living-
dining room, etc. (Gallin, 1966:239-40). When a household
divides, there is usually a continued sharing of the kung
t'ing. The appointments are similar throughout the vil-
778 lage (see Figure 4). On the wall across from the main
769 door is the ancestral table (one foot deep, five feet long,
353 and four feet high) which holds wine cups in sets of three,
ancestral tablets if any, death memorial boards, perhaps
some god's statues and incense pots. A few tables have
only one pot but most have two or more, one of which will

usually be a god's pot. Extra pots are usually those with
separate surnames for worship of ancestors other than the
ones associated with the head of the household (see later
section).

Directly in front of the ancestral table is the
table of Eight Immortals (four feet square) with a bench
on each side so that it can comfortably seat eight. On
it are placed the food sacrifices to the gods and/or an-
cestors although it should be carried outside the door to
hold sacrifices for negative spirits who, after all,
should not be invited into the house. Because it often
rains and since most people do not want to bother, it is
usually placed just inside the door. It is pulled out
for dining at parties or for children to do homework.

[532] On the wall behind the ancestral table are usually
some scrolls, god's pictures, and perhaps the picture of
353 a dead ancestor. On the sidewalls are advertisements,
calendars, and pictures of living older members of the
household.

769 In almost all village households, each morning and
[542] each evening of every day someone worships in front of the
ancestral table with incense; usually the worshipper is a
male but it is permissible for a female to substitute. On
either the first and fifteenth or second and sixteenth of
each month, special rich foods are used for the evening
worship and consumed afterwards. On the regular periodic

769 or special religious occasions, food sacrifices will vary in elaborateness according to the importance of the event. Paper money is often burned in a metal pot on the kung t'ing floor for the benefit of both gods and ancestors. Life crises events such as birth, death if not accidental, engagements, and weddings are all solemnized in the kung t'ing.

778 One should not believe however, that the kung t'ing
342 is a cherished and sacred room which is always approached with reverence. It is a common room, second only to the kitchen in frequency of use. Bicycles and other valuable goods are kept in the room while pickled radishes and home-made soy sauce may be stored in crocks under the ancestral table. Children often play in the room and the ever-present chickens wander in and out leaving droppings. Since the room is frequently owned jointly by more than one household, no one person truly feels it is his responsibility to keep it clean.

771 In one sense, the room furnishes a clue to the general approach to religion found in the village; it is elaborate but not well-maintained. One performs all the proper rituals but one is skeptical about their efficacy. Everyone half-believes and half does not believe in ancestors, magic, and religion. Older people are more interested in religion than younger people and women are more interested than men although there is considerable variability related to personality in both instances.

648 Hsiang Lu (Censer) versus Shen Wei (Ancestor Tablet)

769

Although ancestral tablets are common throughout China, they are relatively rare in Sanlei Ts'un as a direct result of the Japanese occupation. Many tablets were destroyed along with the houses when pacifying the bandits and others were individually destroyed later in a deliberate Japanization process as part of an attempt to destroy any continued roots to Mainland China. The lack of tablets has had little effect on ancestor worship for Sanlei data suggest the hsiang lu (ancestral incense pot) may be more important for ancestor worship than the ancestor tablets.

121

On this point, the literature is somewhat vague.

769

Although the ancestor cult and rituals have been described many times, the concentration has usually been on the shen wei (ancestor or soul tablets) rather than the hsiang lu. Many accounts of ancestral worship specifically note that there are no shen wei, but conversely, no account seems to note the absence of the hsiang lu although some do not mention it in the description of a worship activity. Gallin emphasizes the presence of the god's statues and ancestral tablets in the lung t'ing (1966:239). He also lists the incense receptacles in a list of other items (*op. cit.*) but in another section (1966:220) claims that one of the three ancestral spirits lives in the incense pot in the ancestral-worship room⁶ which suggests the censer is necessary. Martin Yang's description of ancestral worship in Shantung

121 includes an incense pot but no ancestral tablets (1945:93).
769 Instead there is a general scroll on the wall to represent the ancestors. Hu (1948:32) notes that many people had no tablets, merely writing ancestor's names on pieces of paper and burning them in worship. Freedman remarks on the frequent absence of tablets in Hong Kong households (1958:83). In a general religious account, C. K. Yang (1961:39) also emphasizes the importance of tablets but claims that the simplest form of worship to ancestors might consist of the daily burning of incense to a symbol of the spirit "which was usually a wooden tablet or a portrait." Hsu states that every house in West Town has a household shrine (1967:30) and that in every shrine there are two incense burners, one for ancestors and one for gods (1967:184). However, he also states that not every house has tablets; often there is only a large scroll (1967:184). Lang, too, discovered in a survey that worship of ancestors was performed by burning incense before either a tablet or a photograph (1946:162). She also cites an example of a retired official who worshipped ancestors after merely writing their names on a piece of paper (1946:163). Since these authors have not generally considered the direct significance of ancestral tablets versus the censor, the question can not be definitively answered at this time.

[728] My own data on the above point, both from Sanlei Ts'un and the City of Taipei,⁷ reveals that the censers

121 but not the tablets are vital. That is, I viewed many
769 shrines that did not have tablets, but every shrine had
778 at least one censer and often had two or more. In place
of the tablets, there may be nothing but quite often,
there was the shou scroll which features 100 classical
variations of the character shou (long life) or alter-
natively, a scroll with one large shou character in red.

769 In Sanlei, most shrines have at least two censers:
one for gods and the other for ancestors. Each ancestral
censer has a name, the family surname. Ancestral censers
always have handles which villagers call erh tsu which
means ears although alternative definitions of the word
(Mathews, 1963:245-6) include ear, handle, and grandson of
a great-great-grandson, certainly representing a long line
of descendants. The censer contains the residue (ash) of
burning incense sticks. It can be cleaned only on regular
occasions with due reverence and is never fully emptied.
It is believed thereby that the ash extends back to the
first worship of the founder of the line. When a new wor-
ship center is established after a family division, the new
censer will be endowed with some ash from the old censer
(transferred from house to house in a red envelope) so that
each censer maintains continuity with the past. If tablets
are destroyed, new ones can be made. If the ash is lost--
it is lost forever and misfortune is certain unless some
can be obtained from the worship center of a cadet branch

769 of the family.

The censer also possesses a quantity of spiritual essence, i.e., it is a repository of part of the ancestor's souls. Therefore, it can not be touched by an outsider and in parts of Taiwan, may be hidden from view (Thelin and Li, 1963). In Sanlei, if there are two censers with different surnames in a single shrine they will be separated by a barrier so they can not "see" each other. Villagers universally claim that ancestors with different surnames fight.

In the discussion of compounds in Chapter V, I pointed out that many households had more than one censer. Moreover, some censers do not belong, i.e., according to the Great Tradition, the only pots in a household should be those of patrilineal ancestors of the head of the household. Sometimes, as noted, a wife brings her family ancestral pot and in at least one case, no living member of a household knows where a particular censer came from.

121
769 Once more, because of the lack of specific information in the literature, it is impossible to ascertain if Sanlei is normal or deviant as compared with other Chinese villages in this regard. The closest comparison derives from a paper delivered by Professor Robert Smith at an Alpha Kappa Delta meeting at Michigan State University. [n1] Professor Smith noted that ancestral shrines in Japan

121
769 (which in many respects are similar to Chinese shrines)
[171] are only supposed to contain patrilineal ancestors of the household head. However, in spite of the fact the heads of households he surveyed claimed that only proper tablets were in their shrines, Smith discovered (by physically examining the actual tablets) many tablets which did not belong, i.e., affinal relatives. A similar kind of actual check of tablets and censers in Taiwan might provide similar kinds of results, i.e., deviance from the Great Tradition in the direction suggested by the Sanlei data.

Professor Smith's report also supports the argument I advanced in Chapter I, i.e., the Great Tradition strongly influences anthropologists and indigenous members of the society as well. As far as I know (my familiarity with the Japanese sources is limited), Smith's account was the first to note that many ancestral tablets were "falsely" located in various shrines. His discovery was easily accomplished by merely going around and counting tablets, but it was not easily accomplished in the sense that a belief which he previously had internalized had to be questioned and overcome (see Chapter I and Chapter X).

Worship Units

782 The significant worship unit is the individual but
592 he often acts as a representative of a family for family units rarely perform a religious act collectively. Instead,

782 one individual performs the act while others observe.
592 There are only two kinds of occasions I observed during
[269] the study when there are joint performances: a teaching
[764] situation with an older individual and a child perform-
[93] ing the same rite; or when hired priests collectively par-
ticipate in a ceremony such as a funeral. Most worship is
by an individual representing his family, nuclear up to
extended or compound, and often including deceased mem-
bers.

For 64 of the 66 Sanlei households, one representa-
tive, usually the oldest male in the household, worships
in the kung t'ing each morning and evening with incense.
There is no ritual gathering to observe the worship. Where
more than one household share ownership of the kung t'ing,
i.e., in a compound, only one representative for the com-
pound is necessary and usual. On the first and fifteenth
or second and sixteenth of each lunar month, worship offer-
ings include special rich food such as many meat and fish
dishes and the family usually does gather to observe the
worship in 59 of the 66 households.

[621] On the community level, there is worship for the
various special holidays, but each household's sacrifice
is offered separately and returned to be consumed sepa-
527 rately. There are often parties with guests present on
592 special days but even then the food is kept separate in
574 each household. Only in some compounds with a joint kung

527 t'ing is food comingled and even there, the practice is
592 relatively rare. I attended one big dinner in a compound
574 lung t'ing of two families. There were two tables with
identical menus although food for each was prepared in
separate kitchens. I ate part of the meal at each table,
oldest brother's first. It was a single party with much
joking and drinking games and although wine and cigarettes
were passed between tables, the food remained distinct.
To have many guests is desirable so that frequently at large
affairs, the host is out on the street bringing in guests
and he never does sit and eat. Since meals are usually
served in courses, one dish at a time, it is possible for
a guest to only stay long enough for one or two courses,
and thus, be able to visit many different homes in a single
evening.

796
632 Beyond the community, only the li and li temple are
important in religious activities. The li consists of five
villages which have historically cooperated in maintenance
of a single temple. On some occasions, sacrifices are
brought to the li temple rather than the Sanlei temple
but if the li is involved, usually to both. Hired priests
and/or entertainment may be at the li temple as well as
the village.

796 There is very little joint worship beyond the li and
although some holidays are national, Talei Li does not
cooperate with others in celebration. The only unit larger

796 than the li in which there is cooperation for religion is the territory around Hsin Tien at the time of the Matsu festival. Matsu is one of the most important dieties on Taiwan and some scholars feel she is almost a focus of a separate cult. During the celebration dedicated to Matsu, her statue, together with other god's statues, are carried on sedan chairs in a procession to each village near Hsin [535] Tien. Each village contributes money for the cost of the dragon dance team and sword dance team which accompanies the procession and also provides young men to carry the chairs. It is a gay occasion, especially since the li also provides its own additional ceremonies and entertainment during the same day and one or two days which follow.

Formal Religion

779 As far as the other formal religions are concerned, the village has a mixture of Confucianism,⁸ Buddhism, Taoism, Official and local folk religions. These are so intermixed that it is impossible to fully extract individual sources and any attempt to do so would be worthless because the people do not care. Most of the larger temples scattered through Taiwan have similar admixtures of gods and rituals.

Religious Specialists

779 There are a variety of kinds of religious specialists consulted by villagers although none live in the

79 village itself. Each differs in the types of powers he possesses and/or the rituals he performs while two of the same type may have different qualitative ratings. Some specialists charge a fee for services and others depend on gifts. Nothing will be said directly if the gift is too small, but the practitioner will not return the next time he is called. Everyone knows what amount constitutes a proper gift. For the most part, the community has established rather permanent relations with certain individuals who have a regular practice in the area.

791 One significant type of practice involves special-
823 ists in feng shui (literally wind and water but usually
791 termed geomancy). Geomancy is related to the Yin (nega-
787 tive) and Yang (positive) factors and the Five Elements:
water, metal, fire, earth, and wood (Burkhardt, 1953:129-
33). "Geomancy deals with the supernatural relation of
geographical locations to human events" (C. K. Yang,
1967b:263). Certain geographical locations have influence
on human life, negative or positive. These factors are
especially important with regard to the location of tombs,
791 building sites, and the kitchen stove. Almost all village
823 adults are amateur geomancers, i.e., they possess rudi-
787 mentary knowledge of significant elements. Moreover, vil-
lagers believe they can generalize from previous events.
For instance, a house may be built right next door to a
geomancer-directed house without professional consultation

791 by duplicating the orientation. Since there are family
823 burial plots, geomancers are not always used for additional
787 burials.

[354] The most frequent call for a geomancer to come to Sanlei is to orient the kitchen stove. Sanlei villagers usually consult a geomancer from Pouti but occasionally [764] employ a more expensive one from Hsin Tien. Although the literature mentions relocation of ancestral graves if a family has great misfortune, this has not happened in Sanlei but about twenty years ago, one family removed a rock near a tomb and planted three trees as directed by a geomancer who was called as a consultant after much misfortune.

791 As previously stated, Talei Li has many excellent
823 sites for tombs with powerful feng shui coordinates. Two
764 of the most famous geomancers in Taipei have purchased
787 many of these sites. They then select them for clients and also sell the sites to the clients and make a profit both on the sale and as a consultant. One village mason [464] and two village women earn a significant part of their [434] incomes helping erect the elaborate tombs.

756 Shamans of various kinds are still consulted for illnesses although villagers believe the frequency is declining. Three different men, all from nearby villages, are called in periodically. However, trips are also made to the consulting rooms of two others, a ching tsao hsien

756 (master of green grass) in Hsin Tien and a mi fang hsien
(master of secret remedies) in Taipei. Shamans usually
appear to be consulted with reference to illnesses which
are psychosomatic in nature or those which are relatively
hopeless, i.e., medical advice has not worked. This latter
may be merely because sufficient time for medical treat-
755 ment to take effect has not elapsed. If someone is sick,
many kinds of practitioners may be consulted quickly, both
medical and religious. Serious illness in children, male
and female alike, stimulates the call for a shaman quicker
761 than would identical symptoms in adults. Shamans are
755 rarely used for old people (beyond age 60) who have not
been vigorous recently because after 60, death is consid-
ered inevitable and any years granted beyond 60 were only
due to the favor of the gods. With a terminal illness,
the family patiently waits for death without treatment.

793 Some of the temples in Hsin Tien and Taipei have
[787] priests such as Tao jen (Men of the tao). Priests are con-
sulted with reference to the suitability of a pair for mar-
riage (kan ming hsien) and also for illness (hung t'ou
[755] Taoist). Curing involves a procedure much like that de-
scribed for the fortune sticks in the village temple except
the stick specifies a potion to be consumed instead of a
fortune. Priests themselves do not have the specific per-
sonal powers of shamans but do have the ability to perform
[764] proper rituals. Two part-time hei t'ou (Black-headed

793
[764] Taoist priests) from Pouti officiate at almost all village funerals.

791 There are various other kinds of magicians, diviners, fortune tellers, etc., who are occasionally used by Sanlei
787 villagers. Coins, grains of rice, palm reading, and a pile of sticks are all used for predictions and explanations. The eight characters of birth (hour, day, month, year) are important both in predicting the future and determining
[777] suitability of marriage partners. Astrology is well developed and the calendric cycle of good and bad days is everywhere evident.

796
793 Two part-time hung tau (red-headed Taoist priests) from Hsin Tien participate at many big ceremonies in the village and li. Finally, one particular part-time shaman,
796
791 a fa shih and his assistant from over the mountain were
465 frequently hired for certain ceremonies. Perhaps the term hired is too strong for no fee was ever discussed when an invitation was extended but the fa shih always received a sizable gift for officiating, the equivalent of a week's pay for an experienced farm laborer, plus elaborate food.
791 This man has the ability to inspire others to go into
787 trances and then he can interpret what they say if they "speak in tongues" or read the "spirit characters" a man in a trance may write in sand which is spread in a fine layer on a table.

183
791
787 There is a final kind of service that religious practitioners provide for community residents although few villagers would be likely to admit it explicitly, i.e., they provide justification for social acts which might be contrary to community standards or which might otherwise create difficulties in interpersonal relations. For instance, assume a family wants to give up a daughter in adoption but also does not want to create an impression that they are releasing her because the family can not afford her support. If a shaman of some kind orders the adoption, the family can accomplish it without censure by claiming the gods wishes must be obeyed. Someone can be found to interpret the god's desires in a manner so that anything and everything can be justified.

A Fire Purification Ceremony

796
783 As an extended case study, I will present an account of a non-cyclical but important religious event held in [171] Sanlei in November of 1966. The ceremony was entitled the "Fire Purification of the Gods" and differs only in minor details from that described by DeGroot for Mainland China (1892-1910). The essential part of the ceremony is ritual purification of the gods by carrying them through a fire of god's paper money in sedan chairs carried by bearers who are ritually clean and have no foot coverings.

[171]
[184]
[128] Similar ceremonies have occurred throughout Taiwan periodically with strong evidence they have increased in

713
796
176
[71]
[184]
frequency during the past twenty-five years, probably for two different reasons. One reason is related to the recent increased prosperity. Although people seem to greatly enjoy the big festivals, they are very expensive. With the increased prosperity, there are both more ceremonies such as the "Fire Purification Ceremony" and greater participation together with increased expenditures on regular ceremonies.

The second reason is more explicitly related to the "Fire Purification Ceremony" in particular for the ceremony is considered partially a response to crises and change. During these past twenty-odd years there have been many significant events in Taiwan such as a change in the official government and a multitude of cultural and social changes accompanying the expanding economy. Moreover, there is a constant fear of a Taiwanese attack on the Mainland or a Communist attack on Taiwan. Consequently, there have been four "Fire Purification Ceremonies" in Talei Li in the past twenty-five years, two of them during our eighteen month period of study and one of the remaining two, the previous year.

783
796
776
Carrying a god's statue through the sacred fire after proper ritual purifies it and helps make the god more powerful and thereby, temporarily raises the rank of the temple in which the god resides. Higher rank will bring more people to the temple to worship and the more people

783 that come, the more powerful the gods in the temple are
796 assumed to be. Part of the reason for the ceremony in
796 Sanlei was a desire to raise the status of the temple for
once raised, it is possible but not probable that the
higher rank will be maintained. If miracles occur more
people will come, and as stated, the major key to assessing
rank is the number of worshippers.

783 There are two forms of the "Fire Purification Cere-
796 mony." The first concludes the whole process on a single
occasion which may take one or more consecutive days. The
second form requires two nearly similar processes some
years apart although each part may take more than one day.
The ceremony to be discussed in this section was the last
half of the two-part ceremony, entitled the "tail." The
first part, the "head," was held just under two years pre-
viously.

783 The "head" was originated, planned, and conducted
796 by three cooperating sworn brothers associations. These
593 three associations consisted of all younger men (maximum
621 age 35) and most of them were part of the progressive fac-
tion politically. They paid most of the costs themselves
but did accept donations from wealthier villagers. Al-
though almost everyone in the village eventually partici-
pated in the ceremony itself, this was the first major
affair ever held in Sanlei that was not supported by the
usual assessment procedure and temple committee and many

783
796 people therefore felt that the ceremony was not really
573 theirs. One sworn brother explained that he got the idea
621 and started the whole process because of a ceremony he
attended at a village near Hsin Tien.

The three sworn brothers associations had originally
[624] planned to conduct the "tail" in the same manner. How-
ever, after many discussions over a period of time lasting
nearly a year, it was decided to handle it in nearly the
same manner as most ceremonies except that the committee
would not only include a pot master and an assistant from
each of the six lin, but one assistant from each of the
[787] three sworn brothers associations. One of the ten com-
[562] mittee members was a female, selected by the gods in the
usual way by casting the shen pei.

783 In the meantime, the temple committee for the Erhlei
796 temple, the temple which actually encompassed all Talei Li,
794 decided they could not let the Sanlei temple get too far
632 ahead because the li temple was supposedly higher in rank.
They therefore planned a "Fire Purification Ceremony" of
their own. It would be a much more elaborate one-occasion
type falling between the Sanlei "head" and "tail" cere-
monies.

62 The first task of the Sanlei committee was to select
632 a date. This was not an easy task for the date had to be
783 auspicious, not too close to other religious holidays, not
794 too close to the li Fire Purification Ceremony, and during
796

783 a relatively slack agricultural period. The li chang (li
796 mayor and resident of Sanlei) became an ex officio member
794 of the committee because of his experience and knowledge
632 and his ability to mediate disputes and calm disputants.
621

Additionally, since money was to be collected and expended, he had an excellent reputation for honesty and frugality which would help protect against the usual charge that temple committees waste public money for their own pleasures.

Sanlei Ts'un is in a curious position as previously stated for it has its own temple but is also part of the li temple organization which is centered in Erhlei. The residents are thereby partially in competition with themselves. Sanlei is the only village in the li whose residents financially support two different temples. As previously explained, one li faction includes T'oulei and Erhlei and the other, the rest of the li. Although verbally accepting the temple in Erhlei as the li temple, at times people behave as if it belonged only to the Erhlei-T'oulei faction. For the li ceremony an expensive opera was hired. The Sanlei committee finally agreed on a puppet show which was much less expensive although some committee members wanted to hire another opera to show that the Sanlei and Erhlei temples were equal.

783 In addition to the above tasks of setting a date
796 and arranging entertainment, the committee was responsible
621

783 for obtaining the fa shih (shaman), getting the police
796 permit for a ceremony, inviting official guests from out-
621 side the community, renting the extra sedan chairs and
other equipment, and purchasing expendable items such as
incense sticks, paper money, and candles. All this re-
quired preparation of an estimated budget, distribution
of assessments to residents, obtaining pledges, and later,
collecting the money and disbursing it. As would be ex-
pected, the planning required many meetings and also per-
iodic appraisal of general village sentiment about details.
Although the committee was nominally in charge, the whole
community was actually involved in planning.

783 Finally, the day of the ceremony arrived. About
796 seven o'clock in the morning, most of the villagers gath-
ered in a field just across the river from the village
where the second rice crop had recently been harvested and
the ground was hard. In the center of the field was a
Table of the Eight Immortals holding a number of god's
statues, candles, incense sticks, and a fine layer of sand.
In front of the table were six sedan chairs, a bamboo pole
strapped on each side. Two were fairly small and could be
carried by two men and the remaining four required four
men each. Tied to the chairs with large red ribbons were
ten of the Sanlei temple gods.

Twenty young men under thirty years of age had been
selected as sedan chair bearers. Several had participated

783 in the ceremony the previous year but both neophyte and
796 veteran were frightened for they knew they would eventually walk through a fire and all truly felt they would probably be burned. They had ritually prepared for the

[834] ceremony. All were supposed to have refrained from sexual intercourse for twenty-four hours, taken a thorough hot bath the night before, and washed their feet again in the morning in the temple just before coming to the field.

Upon a signal given by the fa shih in charge, the sedan chairs were hoisted to the men's shoulders and would
[534] not be lowered for about four hours. Two older village men carried eight-inch gongs which they beat as they walked about the field, frequently closely approaching the bearers and banging the gongs especially loudly in their ears. The shaman carried long heavy incense sticks which released thick smoke and a pungent odor. He walked from bearer to bearer, waving the sticks in their faces and whispering in
783 their ears. After a half hour in the hot sun, some of the
787 chairs started to sway, to lurch forward two or three
796 steps, and to return back into line. One set of men stumbled and bumped into the group next to them. One of the men in front on a four-man chair started to tremble, his eyes were closed, and then he took off running in a wide circle, his three fellow bearers struggling to keep the chair balanced. He was "possessed by the gods." Following quickly beside the chair were the two gong-beaters

783 and the shaman who helped guide the chair so that it would
796 strike other chairs. It is believed that "possession" is
787 contagious and by touching chairs, perhaps more people
would become possessed. If the touching was rather vigor-
ous, the transfer process is more likely.

Before long, all six chairs with their respective
crews were involved, dashing about here and there. Since
most of the villagers were in the same field, they too had
to dash about avoiding flying sedan chairs. A few villag-
ers got knocked down and some bearers were severely bruised
as chairs crashed into each other. We did note that at no
time did any chair run into the table in the center of the
field and at no time did it appear that all members of a
single crew were in a trance simultaneously.

Follow-up interviews afterwards revealed that all
but four men felt that they had been in trances at some
time during the day. Some felt that they were always aware
of what was happening but had no control over it which they
described as similar to when a man had too much to drink.
Other men stated that periods were completely blank with no
memory at all of what had happened. Most men had several
trances, none seemingly exceeding ten minutes in duration.

After about an hour, a chair halted in front of the
table and lines were marked in the sand with one of the
poles used to carry it, but the shaman said the lines made
no sense. Character writing went on in a similar manner

783 sporadically all during the day. After each character was
796 written, the sand was smoothed out again in preparation
787 for the next. These characters were all special spirit
writing, direct communications from the gods which only the
shaman is able to read and interpret. The statements may
be criticism or praise of specific villagers or general
information. Eventually, one character would proclaim
when the fire for the walk should be started.

783 After about four hours, around 11:00, everyone quit
796 for lunch. It is possible that the gods could call for
the fire within a very few minutes after the ceremony started,
but no ceremony in memory however, had ever started
before the first day's lunch break. Lunch was much more
elaborate than usual and there were many guests in attendance.
Outsiders had been arriving all day during the morning to observe
the men running in the fields and to
[602] become guests for lunch. Few villagers did any regular
[593] work that day; even much of the cooking was performed by
[628] outsiders such as ch'in ch'i (affinal relatives) or sworn
brothers from other villages who worked without pay. In
turn, Sanlei would provide cooks for ceremonies, funerals,
and weddings in other villages. Four sworn brother associations
gathered for an extra lunch together. Politicians from Hsin Tien
[66] and the county visited each of the associations in turn for a few minutes and also visited
the lunches hosted by the more important people.

783 At 1:00, everyone was back in the field and the
796 ceremony started again. The temperature was now much
787 hotter so it did not take as long as it had in the morn-
ing for the trances and running to start. A pair of
chairs were carried down the hill, across the bridge,
into the village proper, and in and out of the temple.
783 Many villagers became frightened as they observed the
796 chairs head for the village for if the gods were truly
784 angry with some man, the chair would enter his house and
626 do some damage. The fear was not of damage but of the
787 knowledge that the gods were strongly displeased. For-
tunately, this did not happen although it had at the pre-
vious Erhlei ceremony to one important man. In this man-
ner, any person in the community, no matter how important,
can be severely criticized.

783 The gods spoke through two different young men at
796 various times while they were in trances. Both were sur-
787 named Liao and were members of old village families. One
was a very proper and filial type but the other was con-
sidered a little too aggressive and had a reputation of
frequenting the wine houses. The statements were in Tai-
wanese although any language is possible, even some spirit
languages which can be translated only by a shaman. In
total, there were more than seventy statements, at least
one for every household in the village and a few extra
[93] general statements. Some statements were complementary

401

183
783
776
787

but a majority were critical although all reinforced cultural values and standards.

A sample of the god's statements is listed below followed by my personal comments or explanations. As previously stated, in a normal situation, few of these statements would be permitted for seldom is there a face to face confrontation between an accuser and accused unless the situation is going to degenerate into a serious fight.

(Names are all disguised for obvious reasons.)

[785]

1. "Liao A.B.: You are a sincere man. I have helped you to recover your health. I am happy that you always come to clean and take care of the temple." (Subject had prostate trouble with considerable discharge. After various types of medical and shamanistic treatment failed to bring relief, he made a pledge at the temple that if the gods helped he would worship daily forever. The pain is almost gone and he seldom has any more discharge. Each morning, at daybreak, he opens the temple, pai pai's with incense, and puts flowers in the vases. Every villager is aware of his pledge and performance.)

[577]
[364]

2. "Liao C.D.: You are a bad-hearted⁹ woman. You would not clean the dirty ditch in front of your house so the dirty water runs into the pond where other villagers wash clothes and vegetables." (Subject immediately ran off to clean her ditch. She frequently quarreled with her husband and his brother's wife.)

[785]

3. "Liao E.F.: Your second son has poor health. I will give him a charm. He should drink it in the early morning." (Subject is a community leader and head of an extended household. The charm is a package of herbs to be mixed with hot water. "To give" means that the speaking god will guide the proper stick out when the vase of medicine sticks is shaken.)

[784]
[753]
[755]

4. "Huang G.H.: Your wife is sick because she dried women's underpants in the kung t'ing in front of the gods. I will give you a charm for her to drink." (Subject is a local official and well liked.)

402

183

783

796

787

[577]

[583]

[753]

5. "Liao I.J.: Old man, you are a good person and serve the gods. But your son is a bad-hearted person. He says bad things about people behind their backs." (The son is unfilial and wants to marry a village girl but her parents are refusing the match by asking a bride price of more than five times the standard amount.)

6. "Huang K.L.: Your sons' eyes hurt because you picked a bad day to fix your kitchen. You never worship the god's soldiers on the 1st and 15th of each month. You should worship on these days. I will give you charms for your family to drink." (Subject has a reputation for cheapness and refuses to spend proper amounts on ritual.)

[825]

[593]

7. "Yu M.N.: Your eldest son is not strong because the altar in your kung t'ing is not properly located. You should think about your second son's marriage because he is too embarrassed to talk to you about it." (The altar is one of the two in the village on the side rather than the back wall in relationship to the door. The man through whom the gods were now speaking was the "second son" mentioned in the statement.)

8. "Chiu O.P.: Your son is fine. Do not worry about him." (Subject is poor but considered to be a good man. His son is in the army and stationed in Kin Men.)

As can be seen from the above samples, the gods speak through the young men to reinforce common values. We talked to many people afterwards and none thought that the two boys through whom the gods spoke were bad-hearted people; that is, they believed that the statements really came from the gods. They said that in the past, bad-hearted people have tried to pretend they were gods but they always got caught.

783

796

About 3:30 p.m., the shaman interpreted a character written in the sand with the poles of a sedan chair as

783 signifying the gods were ready for the ceremony. (It has
786 been known to take as long as four days to reach this
stage.) The equivalent of twenty bushel baskets of paper
money (sacrificial money, not real bills) was placed in a
pile about three feet wide, twenty-five feet long, and over
a foot deep. The pile was then set on fire for the high
point of the ceremony was near. Almost every villager and
guest were present as observers for runners had gone into
the village to collect people as soon as the gods stated
they were ready.

783 The first chair, after a false start running beside
786 the fire down its length, was carried the length of the
789 fire very quickly. The men were completely without foot
covering and the fire was hot enough to singe their rolled-
up trousers and also to burn the hair off my hand which I
had put near the fire and into it to see if it really was
hot. Soon, every chair had gone through the fire at least
twice, each god thus becoming purified by passing through
the sacred smoke over the sacred fire. After the first few
trips, the speed of the bearers diminished to just about a
fast walk. As the fire died down, older village men car-
ried both the remaining temple gods and private and sworn
brothers association gods through the fire by merely wrap-
ping their arms around them and walking the length of the
fire at a fast pace. Every god in the community was
eventually purified. Small boys and girls ran through the

404

783
796 smouldering ashes at the end and the ceremony proper was
789 over.

I cannot explain why no one was burned. I carefully examined the feet of several men over the next few days and none turned red, blistered, or seemed painful to the touch. The villagers all claimed that the men were protected by the gods. One village participant, a boy who became a good informant was as mystified as I. He too carefully examined his feet each day because he felt he was being burned during the trip through the fire, but now claims that the gods must have protected him. In this manner, the ceremony helped dispel some of the doubts common in the village with reference to the power of the gods.

783 The gods were then returned to the temple or their
796 regular resting places and shortly thereafter, the puppet
[782] show began. Elaborate food sacrifices were made to the gods in the temple, to the earth god, to the negative spirits, and in the homes as everyone observed the quality and
[574] quantity of each other's sacrifices. Almost every household had elaborate dinners that evening with many guests from outside and inside the village including elected officials, salesmen and several policemen from both Pouti and
[627] Hsin Tien. There were many residents from other nearby villages and eventually, Sanlei villagers would be guests at their affairs.

796 During the same evening, two wedding feasts were
585 held although the respective ceremonies had begun in the

796 morning as usual. The hosts explained that there would be
585 many guests and elaborate food for the "Fire Purification Ceremony" in any case and therefore, it was economical to have a wedding the same day as a big village ceremony. Additionally, the gods had already decided the day was auspicious for worship and therefore, also auspicious for weddings.

796 The drinking and eating parties lasted until after
783 midnight, an unusually late hour in village life. Much
521 conversation was devoted to the ceremony and to what the gods had stated about the village and individual villagers. The various statements from the gods were badly distorted as they spread through the community for with the gongs clanging and people running and screaming, many statements were none too clear to start. Additionally, since they tended to be invested with high levels of emotional content, they were subject to considerable distortion as they passed through communication chains. No one villager had heard every statement in the original form. The statements will be repeated innumerable times and will be remembered for many years and the ceremony itself will be discussed for a long time, both in the village and in the region for miles around.

796 The last official function of the responsible com-
783 mittee was fulfilled the next day. At the meeting, the
794 members prepared a final accounting of receipts and

796 disbursements and posted it on the temple bulletin board.
783 The account included a list of donors, household head only.
794 in rank order by size of donation with every village house-
hold listed as contributing something. There was nearly
\$700.00 left over so the committee decided to spend \$60.00
for a temple scroll and to donate the balance to the li
school.

796 The ceremony appeared to be over but its latent
783 effects will long linger. Already comparisons were being
621 made with a ceremony conducted over forty years previously
in Sanlei and with other ceremonies held in surrounding
villages. With the requirement that many villagers had had
to work together to conduct the affair, the ceremony was a
strong integrative agency for the community. It also
served to elevate Sanlei's status in the area and by having
many guests, past favors were repaid and new debts were

[869] created. Young men vividly learned of the powers of the
gods--the fire walk was spectacular for participant and
796 observer alike. Tension was also released by the many gay
783 parties, especially since they included much drinking.
273 The drunken villager is either very happy or very quiet
and withdrawn with an extremely rare appearance of aggres-
sive behavior. Since it is considered very bad to drink
one's self into a stupor more than once in a lifetime,
most men learn to control their liquor, i.e., know how
much they can drink and act accordingly.

796
574
435
[585] The affair involved a sizeable expenditure of re-
sources. The temple committee collected and spent over
\$5,500.00. The two weddings scheduled because of the cere-
mony, one with eight tables (80 guests) and the other with
five tables (50 guests) meant a dinner guest fee¹⁰ alone
of over \$6,000.00 without the additional gifts and expenses.
Sixty-one other households held elaborate dinners with
feasts too for there were more guests in the village than
residents. For one of the richer households, the addition-
al expenditures on food and drink as compared with a typi-
cal day exceeded \$700.00. To assess the size of this
[434] figure, note that an experienced farm laborer earns but
\$50.00 for a full day's work. No villager seemed too un-
happy about the expenditure as people claim they now "dare
[78] to spend money" (see Glossary C). The expenditures for pai
pai have increased in Sanlei village, a process that seems
common to all of Taiwan and which reflects the overall
growing prosperity.

Summary

791 Religion is very important in Sanlei Ts'un. Although
little importance can be attached to an organized hierarchy
of religious functionaries, there are many kinds of unorgan-
782 ized specialists who are consulted as needs arise. Addi-
tionally, almost everyone in the village can and does per-
form religious acts regularly. There is daily worship in
most homes and special worship connected with almost every
important event: life crises, health, and economic.

000 important event: life crises, health, and economic. The
778 home is the central focus of worship and in all but two
[353] village homes, the most elaborate and expensive furnishings
are those connected with worship. The second most impor-
tant center is the temple which is the most elaborate and
771 expensive building in the community. Although Sanlei vil-
624 lage is highly integrated, only for religion does the com-
182 munity gather in one place to act cooperatively with any
182 degree of frequency. At the li level, the temple and
632 religion serve a similar function except that in addition
771 to religion, politics and the school also feature commun-
771 ity-wide cooperation and joint activities. Religion is
602 the unifying element, at least on a manifest basis, of
182 larger kinship organizations such as the compound and
575 lineage and such voluntary organizations as the sworn
brothers and god's associations.

771 Religious values support the dictums of social con-
626 trol. Although there are reasonably high levels of skep-
182 ticism regarding the efficacy of religious acts, no man is
truly an atheist, i.e., although many claim not to believe
that a particular act works or has power for good or evil,
almost everyone is afraid not to perform the required
ritual when it is specified as appropriate.

771 There are so many kinds of religious and magical
193 functionaries, that one can be found to recommend almost
182 any kind of desired action. This recommendation supports
79

771 a villager in what otherwise might be an unpopular deci-
183 sion or action because he can then say the gods so order
182 it.
79

182 Additionally, religious events are fun and along
771 with certain life crises events, almost the only periods
796 of gaiety in an otherwise fairly drab existence. It ap-
pears, as suggested in Potter's conception of "The Limited
Good," richer villagers do fear to practice conspicuous
consumption (1965). One normally avoids coming to the
attention of villagers, government officials, and gods, in
order to avoid arousing feelings of jealousy, but rich
food and drink is not only permitted but is strongly en-
couraged for holidays. It is proper to offer expensive
foods to the gods and whatever is left over when the gods
finish can be eaten by anyone without fear of censure.
Indeed, it should be shared with guests for jealousy is
not aroused when people are only eating the god's left-
[554] overs. This set of beliefs permits both self-indulgence
and a means for validating one's social position in the
community, i.e., the richer the food, the higher the
status. For guests (especially poorer ones), there is an
opportunity to eat rich foods and delicacies rarely ex-
perienced.

771 It will be demonstrated in Chapter IX that religion
805 also serves to regulate the divisions of time--yearly,
461 monthly, and daily and that much of the leisure time is
182 justified on a religious basis.

771 Finally, during periods of ultimate crises, various
182 aspects of religion and ritual emotionally support an individual. Although medicine may fail, religion or magic may work and if neither prove effective, there is the underlying concept of fate, i.e., all had been ordained at birth. By using magic and religion, one has attempted all possible avenues towards achievement of some goal.

CHAPTER VIII

THE LIFE CYCLE

121 Although the most general patterns will be abstracted below, it must be made patent that there is great variability in the life histories of individual villagers. China is a high civilization and a defining characteristic of a civilization is the existence of a large number of modal patterns of behavior. In addition to differences due to sub-cultural variation and individual personalities, there is structured variance related to wealth, sex, birth order, family type, etc. For example, the fact of an adoption would make a significant difference in an individual's life history and although not everyone is adopted, a sizeable minority of village children are adopted.

[178] Taiwan is experiencing great economic and political changes and these too are modifying traditional patterns of
121 the life cycle and its stages. Formal education furnishes
871 a prime example. Currently, two significant stages in the
882 life cycle are marked by entrance into the first grade, the pre-schooler versus the student and the next stage is marked by graduation at the end of the sixth year of school, the change from student to young adult status.

121

871

621

882

276

178

Very few villagers are educated beyond the compulsory six years although the government is now planning a change from six to nine years of compulsory education.¹ This change too will have a major effect on the typical life cycle for entrance into the labor market (and achievement of young adult status) will be delayed an additional three years. The immediate direct effects on the economics of village life are obvious but there will undoubtedly be concomitant social and cultural effects. For example, at present, boys do not start smoking until their formal education is completed. Even if a boy's age cohorts are working and smoking, the village boy still in school does not. If education is extended three more years, boys will probably not start smoking, on the average, until they are three years older than the present beginning age.

178

871

562

The effects resulting from a change in the length of compulsory education suggested above are more than mere idle speculations, they are derived by extensions of a process which has already been realized in the last twenty years.

[212]

Among people over age 70 still living in the village, there is only one literate person, a male. He claimed that when he was a young man, although the village population exceeded 230, only about 15 people attended the local school, only two of them girls. As a clear demonstration of a pattern change, at the time of the study, there were only three village children (one male, two female) of appropriate ages not

412

178
891
562

Table 11. Percentage of Sanlei Villagers Who Graduated

Age in 1965	Year of Graduation	Percentage Graduating	
		Male	Female
15-19	1960-64	96.7	87.6
25-29	1950-54	90.0	50.0
35-39	1940-44	66.7	22.2
45-49	1930-34	66.7	16.7
55-59	1920-24	50.0	10.0
65-69	1910-14	27.6	2.3

in school and satisfactorily progressing within one year of the normal grade for their respective ages.

The figures in Table 11 suggest the rate of change in education over time for Sanlei village by means of an analysis of current living residents in various age groups. In 1915, school was not really a significant stage in the life cycle for most villagers but by 1925, it was the most frequent (over 50%) pattern for males and by 1955, for females. By 1960, there remained scarcely any other pattern with reference to ages between 6 and 12 except to attend school. Actually, the current three exceptions are not a single structural type for each truant has a unique reason.

178 With reference to the stages to be discussed below, changes such as the above example have occurred in the memory of living villagers. In addition to those related to economics and education, important changes are connected with the population growth, increased life expectancy, and the availability of modern medical facilities including Western hospitals and birth control clinics.

The Desire for Children

181 The following expression of the Confucian design for
842 living is still significant after 2000 years: "Of the of-
769 fenses against filial piety, lacking descendants is the
775 worst" (Hsu, 1963:29). Barrenness is not only contrary to
duty to one's ancestors, but a man without offspring to wor-
ship his soul after death may become a wandering spirit or
181 be confined to one of the many hells. Additionally, social
842 security is essentially provided by one's children and
554 moreover, children are a source of prestige and a means of
validating one's position in the community. It would be
very rare for a childless man to fill an official position
or play any significant leadership role in the community.
A woman gains full status and membership in her husband's
181 family through her children. There is a culturally provided
842 escape for the biologically barren: an adopted child is the
597 equivalent of a natural child.

The pressure for descendants has other concomitant
[626] effects. A family without natural children is nearly forced
to adopt one or more by community pressure even if they had
no real personal desire of their own although the cultural
values and logic of security mean the latter would be un-
581 likely. Almost every woman gets married as there are few
842 acceptable alternative roles for women outside of marriage.
597 In the rare case of a woman who never marries, i.e., some
prostitutes, or in the case of widowhood before bearing

414

581 children, an adoption is still likely in order to provide
842 security in old age. Historically, Taiwan has had a high
597 sex ratio (Barclay, 1954:212) and nearly all females were
able to marry; the rate exceeded 99% married every year
since 1905 for women over 40. However, some men were
necessarily without mates; never-married men over 40 always
exceeded 4% for the same period (Barclay, 1954:211). Most
men who never marry have some kind of social defect such
as poverty or a drinking problem but many of these men
also adopt children such as the two never-married men in
Sanlei with adopted children.

842 Martin Yang reports that the number of children de-
178 sired in the "ideal" family for Taiwan has been decreasing
183 over time (1962:69). This finding is not based on a longi-
125 tudinal study but on a comparative study using respondents
in different generations. Interviews in Sanlei village
support his findings. However, all attempts to simulate
longitudinal studies by assuming an age range suffer the
same obvious defects. For example, if Sanlei women beyond
child-bearing ages are divided into two groups, those who
bore more than four children and those who bore less, there
is a strong positive correlation between the actual size of
183 a woman's family and her report of an "ideal" size. For
178 young married women, it is possible that the attitude may
942 change in time, i.e., her desires and expectancies may be-
come congruent with her real situation. Nevertheless, the
number of children desired for an "ideal" family is

183
183 significantly less for each ten-year age cohort. It is
842
[562] interesting that men's reports are nearly identical to their
wives and both sexes agree that women are predominantly in
control of the eventual family size.

183
842
562 The typical desired family size among women of child-
bearing ages (and their respective husbands) is now four or
five with no one listing less than three and only three
women and five men, more than six. The pair who desired
the largest number was a married couple with ten children
who both wanted twelve. In spite of the reported bias to-
wards males, if the number is even, the desire is usually
for an equal number of males and females, but if the desired
number is odd, males are nearly always expected to consti-
tute a majority of one. Only a few very old men reported
a desire for nearly all males but everyone agrees that if
a couple have only one child, he should be male.

842
562 These reports from Sanlei should not be construed
such that there is not a strong preference for males.
Rather, the preference is not as strong as has been sug-
gested in some of the literature (see Chapter X). Almost
everyone desires a male for the first child and a family
with all boys will be viewed by neighbors as fortunate
while a family with all girls is something to be pitied,
but not as much as a family with no children at all. After
a string of girls, a family may name the last as "our last
daughter" in hope of breaking the chain of misfortune.
There is no corresponding practice for a string of boys.

842 Almost everyone agrees that a couple should have the first child as soon after marriage as possible and I found no married childless couples employing birth control measures. It is proper to continue having children until the 833 first grand-child is born. Although it is expected that 842 intercourse will continue as long as physically possible, a couple who continues to have children after they have become grandparents will experience much ridicule.

Pregnancy and Birth

843 Pregnancy and birth are periods of anxiety in every 844 society for they are physically dangerous for mother and child alike since either may die. There may be a spontaneous abortion or defective children may be born. Consequently, almost everywhere, special ritual is required with respect to various aspects of the period of pregnancy.

Seemingly, in Sanlei, some of the ritual or belief is supported by modern medical discoveries, i.e., certain food requirements such as increased consumption of meat and eggs for expectant mothers is medically sound. The origins of other customs are lost in antiquity. It has been posited in another context that certain proximate events were often interpreted to have spurious causal connections (Carroll, 1963:5). In any case, there is a great host of Chinese beliefs connected with pregnancy and birth with attendant rituals and avoidances which are exceeded in number only by those related to death.

- 843 For just about every other event in village requiring
562 religious-magical activities, men predominate in their performance. It appears that women may worship individually more often than men, but if an activity is required rather than voluntary, men usually perform it. Women are dominant only in religious activities which focus on pregnancy and childbirth. Before birth, the only requirement for men is continuance of sustenance responsibilities, tendency to indulge his wife's whims (particularly food cravings), and sexual abstinence during the last month of the pregnancy.
- 84b He has responsibility after birth for a month's continued sexual abstinence and joint participation in naming, celebrating, and introducing the child. The expectant father has no requirements regarding food or ritual which are the equivalents of those for his wife.

The delayed onset of the menstrual period marks the beginning of pregnancy. Almost all women state pregnancy is accompanied by a craving for odd foods which comes and goes all during pregnancy. Most of the foods are not very expensive but are unusual or out of season. Morning sickness is fairly common but only present in a minority of cases. Aside from certain forbidden activities, morning sickness or pregnancy in general is not expected to interfere with a woman's daily activities and hard work. Work continues right up until near parturition for everyone agrees that hard work, particularly many walks up into the mountains, will make parturition easier.

843 The husband usually is told matter of factly as soon as the wife suspects she is pregnant for only wives keep track of the menstrual cycle. Outside the immediate household, others are not normally told until the woman starts to show but since social relations are so intimate, word soon gets around. Outsiders are really curious only about brides but only old women in the village ask brides openly, usually accompanied with a cackle and slapped knee, "Are you pregnant yet?" The girls never answer and are greatly embarrassed while older people laugh openly and younger ones smile. From older women, the expectant mother learns what should be done, what is good to eat, what food and activities to avoid, etc.

[782] The pregnant girl may have prayed to a particular god or a variety of gods for assistance in becoming pregnant so the answer to the prayer should be recognized with rich food sacrifices. Rarely does anyone regret a pregnancy.

843 There are many taboos for a pregnant woman such as
776 the set which derives from the belief in Tai Shen, the god of the pregnant womb. As soon as a woman becomes pregnant, Tai Shen enters her room and hides somewhere, under the bed, in a chair, on a picture on the wall, etc. If he is disturbed, he may harm the baby, possibly causing an abortion. Thus, it is necessary to keep the bedroom undisturbed all
[356] during pregnancy. The belief prevents sweeping and cleaning

843 and moreover, since a woman typically is pregnant for a
The period of time before becoming aware, the bedrooms of po-
[356] tentially fertile women are seldom cleaned. The only truly
[844] safe period is 30 days after a child is born, the morning
before intercourse is resumed. If Tai Shen is inadvertent-
ly offended, which can be detected through a sharp pain
in the abdomen at the time of the disturbing activity, it
844 is necessary to call in a shaman to pacify him. Because
776 of Tai Shen it is necessary that parturition take place
in the regular bedroom.

178 An interesting change in this belief about Tai Shen
844 is related to modern medical practices emanating out of a
776 small public hospital in Hsin Tien which provides a doctor
(945) for child birth. The mines provide the families of workers
with medical insurance and many miner's wives are therefore
having babies in the hospital, fairly common in Erhlei but
still rare in Sanlei. Twenty years ago, it was impossible
to discover the hiding place of Tai Shen but today, reli-
gious specialists are able to detect his hiding place so
the object in which he is hiding can be taken to the hos-
pital in Hsin Tien with the woman in labor.

843 There is a whole host of other taboos for the preg-
nant woman: tying strings in her bedroom will effect the
baby's fingers; using scissors, the ears; needles, the eyes,
etc. Funerals are likely to cause miscarriages. Wedding
ceremonies are also off limits because the belief in hai

843 chung hsi (good counteracts good) means that either the mother or the newlyweds will likely suffer harm. There are many other such strictures but almost any lapses may be counteracted by the activities of a shaman.

[842] As previously stated, it is hoped the first child will be a boy and boys will continue to be desired following the first child until the desired number is acquired. There are rituals to change the sex of the unborn child from female to male, some performed by the family and others by specialists, but villagers do not believe them very effective. It is also possible to detect the sex by various means such as computations involving the mother's age and month of conception.

844 Most births in the village are attended by a local unlicensed midwife with the assistance of a few older women while men are excluded. A woman should not make much noise during birth as everyone lives crowded together and loud [843] crying or screaming would be disturbing. Herbs have been consumed monthly commencing the third month with more added as the expected delivery date nears. Women give birth while lying down on their backs.

The new baby is wiped with sesame oil and a cloth soaked in salt water is used to clean his mouth followed by sugar water. Eye drops are irregularly used, increasing now in frequency but still only half the time for they cost extra. The baby is wrapped in a cloth and placed next to

844 the mother. The afterbirth is usually buried in or next to
[771] the river but many villagers preserve the umbilical cord for
[546] good luck. Nursing will commence within one to three days,
853 as soon as lactation commences, and to aid its beginning,
the breast is periodically massaged. Before the first
suckle, the nipples are washed with rice porridge and green
onions.

846 In Sanlei Ts'un, the mother will now have one month
[262] for recuperation, tso yueh. It starts soon after birth with
rich foods such as eggs in sesame oil with wine and heavily
sweetened orange peel soup and the rest of the month her
food is unusually rich with great emphasis on chicken.
During this month, she does few of her regular chores and is
confined to the house where she can neither bathe nor use
salt. Other women in the family do the work: the two most
likely aides are mother-in-law and mother. Neighbors often
assist as for example, the daily wash is usually done by
the group with whom the new mother normally washes in Sanlei.
Having a boy is considered much more exhausting than having
a girl and therefore, less will be expected of the mother of
a boy.

851 Three days after birth, the fact is reported to the
family ancestors by an older female member of the family
and the natal home of the mother will be notified, if they
have not yet heard. For some girls who were adopted and
later married out, both natal and adopted families will be
advised. Gifts may be sent back.

217 The authorities want the birth registered as soon as
851 possible but cultural values are in opposition since a baby
is not quite human until 30 days have elapsed. Funerals,
for example, are only conducted for those who live at least
30 days.

852 The end of 30 days is marked by a major ceremony.
851 man yueh (full month). The baby's head is annointed and
shaved and then he is taken outside to show the neighbors.
The family of the baby's mother provides a complete set of
clothes which tend to decline in elaborateness in direct pro-
portion to the number of grandchildren. In Sanlei, almost
as a mirror image, the family of an adopted-in husband often
provides the outfit and gifts if financially able. There
will usually be a luncheon party to celebrate man yueh with
food provided by all four grandparents.

553 At the ceremony, everyone will hear the child's name.
[852] The surname should be obvious but because of the number of
adopted-in husbands, it is possible the child could receive
either mother's or father's. Although agreements were origi-
nally considered clear, their interpretations are often a
matter of dispute and some people also change their minds.
There should be two more parts to the name but a very few
children only receive one although the latter practice is
disappearing. Every child under 12 in the village had two
names in addition to his surname although several adults had
but one. One name is uniquely a child's own. The middle

553 name may be unique, may be designed to complement the given name, or may reflect a family situation, i.e., it may indicate generation by use of the poem described in Chapter V or it may be merely common to all one man's offspring, different for boys and girls.

551
789 Names alone can usually be used to distinguish sex although there are some which overlap. Names have magical powers too such that a good name may foster desired qualities such as kung, wisdom. Previously described was the name given to a girl such as "last daughter" to break a chain of girls. Also if a couple has lost several children, a "dirty" name such as "idiot pig" may be given so the child will be unattractive to the gods. Names may be selected by the family or may be selected in consultation with specialists at the temple.

846
[783] After man yueh, the woman is free to leave the house and resume her duties. Her bedroom, which has been "ritually unclean" by virtue of the birth in addition to its general untidiness will have a thorough cleaning the day after the baby's presentation. Sexual intercourse is expected to be resumed that night so the husband will be teased about this resumption by his close male friends, particularly by his sworn brothers. His siblings or parents are not likely to ever comment on his sexual activities. Only an old woman is likely to make a suggestive remark in public about his

424

846
834/ resumption of sex and the situation will be considered very
831 funny.

Babies

852 There are few formal stages during the early years of growth. Between man yueh and entering school at age 6, only the first birthday is recognized formally and that is not celebrated by many people although more often for boys than girls. When it is celebrated, it may range from an elaborate meal to mere giving an egg to the child in order to promote long life. Informal divisions include such as "in the arms," "toddler," "baby," or "child" but there is little agreement as to when they commence and the terms are non-exclusive.

853 Children are raised very permissively. Breast feeding lasts two years or longer on a demand basis so that every time a baby fusses or cries he is offered the breast. Mothers breast-feed their own children and occasionally the
853 children of others. A grandmother offers her breast to a
855 child as a kind of pacifier as any woman will give the breast even when dry, to a child as old as seven or eight who is sick or frightened. Most of the time feeding is offered
857 while in a sitting or standing position. Although the breast is an object for sexual foreplay, there is no immodesty connected with feeding a baby in public.

362 Houses are crowded together and the rooms are small and not private so that aside from some work in the fields, a resident is rarely alone.

000

861 a resident is rarely alone. Children are always watched but their training is very relaxed and primarily by guidance and example. Only three times did I observe children being beaten although handslapping is frequent and threats are often used. The most common threat is to give the child 855 away for adoption. Children receive lots of affection and 861 considerable fondling. Life is such that few children are really raised in a semi-isolated nuclear family for if their homes do not already contain more than parents and siblings, there are either more distant relatives or good neighbors nearby. Everyone takes some responsibility for raising each other's children although harsh punishment is only administered by a member of the immediate family. Being harsh with a nephew led to one serious argument observed in an extended [604] family. Children are not often held responsible for what they do and everyone claims they just do not know better. 863 For example, enuresis which occasionally continues into the [513] early teens presents a real problem for the parents who normally sleep in the same bed with their children.² Yet, the wetting child is rarely struck. Instead, his liquids are curtailed in the evening before bedtime and his parents say he will grow out of it.

853 Solid food is slowly added to the diet at about three to four months of age commencing first with the thickened water used to boil rice. Weaning is gradual and so late that rarely are problems encountered.

863
[854] Diapers are exchanged for training pants at about six or seven months of age. These are not closed at the crotch and when the child squats, gape wide, allowing elimination without soiling. When the child is finished feeding or gets an expression on his face that mothers come to recognize, he is held gently in a sitting position suspended over a ditch while mother squats but she will wait only a few minutes. Instead of threats for not eliminating, the child will be coaxed and praised and petted if he eliminates. Full control is not expected until he is over two years of age so his messes are cleaned regularly without open expression of crossness.

Children

593 The relations between mother and child are usually warm and intimate and remain so all throughout life while the relations between father and child are more formal and distant. It is mothers who are expected to know and understand the children's wishes and serve as a buffer between a boy and his father. For example, a working boy who is turning all his money over to his father might desire a watch but he is unlikely to ask his father for one. He can convey his desire to mother indirectly, mother will suggest it to father, and father will present a watch or money for a watch to his son as if it were his own idea.

855 Older children take care of younger siblings. Women
857 and children carry children around strapped to their backs
482

855
857 and it often appeared that some children were nearly as big
482 as the children carrying them. Grandparents were extremely
603 indulgent towards grandchildren. The only adult males ever
observed sitting on the ground playing games with small
593 children were their grandfathers. Brothers rarely remain
intimate for the role of younger brother toward older
brother is patterned after that of son to father but not as
extreme in formality and authority. Sisters do remain rela-
tively intimate and the brother-sister relationship is var-
604 iable but usually warm. A woman's brother will often have
special relationships with her children and exercises spec-
ial duties for such events as their weddings, births, and
funerals.

857 Children may gather grass for animals and run er-
rands. Boys help father and girls, mother but their duties
and responsibilities are light. Other than caring for sib-
lings, most time is for play although there are no organized
games except a form of tag ball learned in school.

513 The sleeping arrangements in the village furnish a
855 clue to attitudes toward children. As previously described,
1352 the typical bed is about 8' by 10'. A husband and wife nor-
1354 mally sleep together in the middle. A nursing child is
placed next to mother until weaned when boys are placed on
father's side and girls, on mother's, in ascending age order,
the oldest on the outside. It is felt that children should
share the bed with parents until around age 9 or 10 because
children have bad dreams and someone should be close to

513 comfort them.

855 When a child leaves his parent's bed, he does not sleep alone. There is a separation of sexes at this age so that a household has male beds and female beds and if there is no older adult such as an aunt or grandparent to join, two siblings of the same sex will be transferred together. The bed will be shared until marriage when the newlyweds start off just by themselves for one bed never contains more than one couple enjoying a sexual relationship. The married couple may sleep together the rest of their lives although some old people separate after intercourse ceases.

Education

871 Primary school is compulsory for six years to the degree that there were only three village children who were not attending school at the time of the study. The five villages in the li share the school located in Erhlei except that the Mainlanders in Wulei send their children to Hain Tien. There are 423 students in the school, 204 boys and 219 girls.

895 The school has 12 teachers, a principal, and a janitor. The principal, a Mainland woman, and the assistant principal, also a Mainlander, share a house in Erhlei which is owned by the school. One teacher lives with his family in a rented Erhlei house but all the other teachers, most of them Mainlanders, live in Pouti or Hain Tien. Six of the

875 thirteen staff members are males and seven, females.

871 The principal and teachers are appointed by the
875 Provincial Ministry of Education with the local villagers
having no choice in their selection. However, a degree
of local control is maintained through the Parent-Teacher's
Association which raises part of the money for school con-
struction and equipment.

The qualifications of Talei Li teachers are below
national average because an appointment in Talei Li is not
a desirable post because of the few opportunities to earn
extra income. In order for a student to go on to junior
high school he must pass a competitive examination which
is nearly impossible to accomplish without supplementary
school lessons at night and individual tutoring. Although
illegal, all good schools provide supplemental offerings
for a fee and thereby, teachers earn a sizeable portion of
their yearly income from these extra fees which are shared
with the principal. The desire for higher education is not
very strong in the village as most villagers do not believe
that more education will produce opportunities for more in-
come. Therefore, the li school has no such extra courses
and few li children request extra tutoring, denying the
teachers and principals the opportunity for a good income
although a few of the teachers living outside Talei Li
earn extra money tutoring in Pouti.

875 The teachers and villagers have few contacts as most teachers consider themselves an elite forced to associate with parents whom they seemingly regard as ignorant peasants.

[563] Undoubtedly the Mainlander (teacher)-Taiwanese (villager) identities exacerbate the relationship problems (See Chapter I). Only two teachers are highly admired by villagers, one of whom is a Taiwanese.

872 The school is so overcrowded that the first four grades are on half-day sessions and only the last two grades are full-day sessions. The first five days of the week are primarily devoted to academics but with a mid-morning and mid-afternoon recess. Saturday morning is devoted to physical education, housekeeping, and additional lessons in Mandarin.

876 Teaching techniques emphasize rote memorization, chanting lessons in unison, and extreme respect for the teacher. Elements of traditional classical education remain a part of the curriculum for a major goal of education is to make good citizens. Everyone memorizes a large number of quotations and classical short stories which possess a moral. This kind of memorization was common in the village even among those who were illiterate and the school merely reinforced and expanded this traditional content. One old village man, quite illiterate, could recite an appropriate quote for any occasion.³

171 There is an interesting contrast in the Chinese and
876 American teacher's relationship with students. Using

876 Cooley's construct of a primary-secondary relationship
171 continuum (1909), Americans expect a kindergarden or first grade teacher to have a primary relationship with his students, i.e., he should be intimate and have knowledge of the child's home life, father's occupation, number of siblings, etc. As the child progresses in school, his relationships with teachers moves steadily towards the secondary end of the continuum, reaching its lowest point near the second year of college. It then reverses again approaching a maximum at the primary end during advanced graduate work.

The Chinese model is quite different. The first grade teacher has an extreme form of a secondary relationship with his pupils possessing knowledge of the student's name and academic performance and little more. He should not be warm; rather, he should be extremely harsh, a style of behavior considered best by teacher and parents alike. Indeed, parents will criticize a teacher on the basis that he doesn't look "fierce" enough. The new principal who assumed the position during our study experienced some problems establishing her competency because she was a female. Villagers felt that no female could be quite as frightening to a child as a male and therefore, she would not be able to properly fulfill the principal's main function of discipline. The secondary relationship is maintained with almost all students throughout primary school although a few

876 of the better students will become "teacher's pets" and
171 receive extra attention and tutoring. (Each year the best
pupils receive scrolls to be displayed in their homes.)

For further contrast, although not relevant in terms of vil-
lage life, the high school teacher often establishes primary
relations with his students to such an extent that his stu-
dents will continue to send letters advising of their prog-
ress to one or two high school teachers and visit them
periodically the rest of their lives.

562
867 Pre-school children have played together with little
regard for sex although some games are sex related and some
duties are sex related, i.e., boys copy father and girls,
mother. As the children pass through school there is a
gradual separation of sexes as girls become very shy and by
graduation, talk or play very seldom with boys. Females
will not reestablish a free and easy relationship with
males until well after age 30. Although the primary schools
are coeducational, most junior and senior high schools are
distinct for each sex.

Young Adults

482
729 Graduation from grade school marks a significant
step in the life cycle, often celebrated with a small party
during which the graduation certificate is displayed in the
lung ting and placed on the ancestral table to inform the
ancestors.

883 The child can now assume a regular full-time job but
464 girls have much better opportunities than boys for there
are many clothing factories in the general area which employ
girls as low-paid unskilled operators. Only a few boys are
able to get jobs in factories or as apprentices. Addition-
ally, since most of the farm labor work for females is com-
pensated on a piece-work basis while the bulk of that for
males is on a daily rate, girls have another advantage over
boys because the payment on a piece-work basis is less risky
[562] because one only pays for results, not efforts. Since girls
[178] now produce more income than boys, many villagers remark,
"Perhaps girls are worth more than boys!" (See Glossary C.)

885 Achievement of adult status is blurred; there is no
real agreement in many cases. Marriage is nearly the only
means for girls. Because of the increasing age at marriage
and the fact that men are older at marriage and some never
marry, it is possible for some boys to become men before
marriage. There is not full agreement even on marriage al-
[275] though everyone agrees that parents are adults. People note
when an individual earns enough to fully support himself and
a boy rarely smokes before reaching this stage.

572 Boys and girls have little to do with each other.
Boys pal around in intimate groups which often eventually
become sworn brothers associations and in this way, a
friendship relationship is institutionalized which is likely
to last the rest of the boy's life. Girls too have intimate

434

572 groups but these are much less likely to continue after marriage. A girl is likely to establish a close relationship with no more than one or two other girls that may persist if their homes are not far apart after they are married.

593 Most of the money young adults earn is turned over
[434] to the family but a small allowance is usually retained and parents buy extras or furnish money for such things as clothes. Instead of asking for money, a young adult hints broadly for what he desires. (Even after marriage, if residence is in an extended household, the money is still
[983] likely to be controlled by parents.) It is the family's responsibility to save sufficient money for a boy's wedding and since the dowry of a girl from a "good" family will equal or exceed the bride price, the parents of girls too must save. In rare cases, it appears that girls are just sold at marriage with parents pocketing the entire bride price.

561 There is an occasional ceremony to mark a boy's sixteenth birthday which features food and worship with special-
702ists. Since Taiwan now has universal military training, almost all boys are drafted for one to three years of military service. Families often hold a going-away party for the boy and quite a few villagers accompany the boy to the military
[403] bus in Hsin Tien where local officials make speeches. Since
[983] the pay in the service is only \$100.00 per month, a boy's family often provides a subsidy and because of the low pay,

902 boys are not expected to marry until after completing ser-
vice. This expectation has served to raise the average age
of boys at marriage.

Marriage

584 Marriage has been discussed in Chapter V. To review
briefly, there are a number of different ways to classify
marriages. In terms of decision making, there are three
types: 1) arranged, with parents fully in control of the
decision; 2) veto, with parents making the initial arrange-
ments but the bride and groom each possessing veto power;
and 3) love, where everything is decided by the bride and
groom. Historically, changes have occurred from a majority
of arranged marriages to the veto type and more recently
to the love although all three types appear to have always
been present in Chinese society. Currently, each consti-
tutes about one third of the marriages in the village.
There is some difficulty in obtaining accurate assessments
of the frequency of each type because there is an attempt to
disguise others as if they were the arranged form which car-
ries the highest prestige.

584 In its ideal form, an arranged marriage is achieved
through a process of negotiation between the two families
through a matchmaker and the couple do not meet until the
wedding day. Even at the engagement, the groom's mother goes
to the bride's house and puts the engagement rings on the
prospective bride's finger.

584

In the veto form, the prospective groom accompanies his parents and the matchmaker to the girl's house and while the adults chat and the girl serves tea and cookies, the boy and girl look each other over or alternatively, they may attend the same affair in separate groups such as a movie while negotiations are in process. Each then has the right to say no but this is rarely so boldly stated. Examples of veto statements include such as, "He doesn't look very strong." "Doesn't he look sickly?" "She looks like she might have expensive tastes." Acceptance statements are, "You know best." "Whatever you think." (See Glossary C.) One recently married village boy vetoed five girls before getting married but now claims to have a fully-arranged marriage. Another claims the same, stating he and his bride first met at the wedding, although both grew up in the same village which had a total population under 400 and both were on the same tag-ball team in school.

Finally, after a couple make a love match, they often go through the whole process of negotiations with a matchmaker as if the proposal was not a foregone conclusion. Love matches are extremely common among older couples or the remarriage of widowers or widows.

591

In terms of residence after marriage, there are three major forms: patrilocal, matrilocal, and neolocal. Patrilocal is most common and still carries the highest prestige. As discussed in Chapter V, matrilocal marriages are more frequent in Sanlei than in Taiwan as a whole. Neolocal

591 marriages are most often of the love type. There is difficulty in assigning individual cases to a type of standard residence categories. For example, in one form of marriage, 584 siaosiv, the girl is adopted as a baby and the future 591 spouses are raised as brother and sister so that when the marriage occurs there is no change of residence for either. The original adoption can not be classified as part of the marriage for at the time of the adoption, the completion of the marriage is not certain. The girl may yet be married out in the same way as a natural daughter.

591 Another problem influencing the classification of residence is related to the time the census is made. There are such limited quantities of land that a son may get a job in town while his father works the farm. His marriage is celebrated in his father's house in the village but he and his wife, who may continue working, establish residence near his job (neolocal). However, when his wife has a child or when his father starts to become feeble, he returns to the village and takes over the farm, living in his father's house (patrilocal). Another example of a problem in classification which depends on the time of the census may be found in the case of an adopted-in husband (matrilocal) who may later establish his own home (neolocal).

582 Another means of classifying marriages is on the basis of the origins of spouses. Aside from the adopted daughter, there is a strong preference for village exogamy

582 and a lesser preference for li exogamy. Villagers are valued much more than the town people who are said to be lazy and who probably possess expensive tastes. Most couples were both raised in the area around Hsin Tien although brides brought in from down island carry high prestige.

Although marriages between people with the same surname are legal and villagers are aware of examples in town, they do not occur in the area around Sanlei. An interesting unconscious patterning was revealed by the fact that on every occasion when the possibility was discussed, someone made the same remark, "That's just like the pigs!" (See [325] Glossary C.) There is a shared belief that pigs are dirty and have no morals.

There are two other types of surname exogamy. Some surnames are said to be both descendants of the same ancestor and therefore should not marry, for example Liao and Chien, although a violation of this rule is not as serious as would be the marriage of two people with the identical name. There was an example in the village and although the marriage had lasted many years, there was still much gossip about it for some people considered it a form of incest. Finally, two lineages may have had a fight and pledged that their descendants will never intermarry. This does not mean the proscription is for everyone with these surnames but only for the descendants of the pledgers who possess their surnames. There were three such pairs known to villagers

582 who regarded the proscription as binding although no one could remember the story of the fight which caused the pledge to be promulgated.

602 Gallin has discussed the significance of matri-
581 lateral and affinal relationships in a Taiwanese village (1960) in a manner which is equally valid in Sanlei for such relatives are very important. In a dispute or when one has problems, affinal relatives are sources of support and they have important roles in weddings, funerals, etc. Any marriage then, is likely to establish permanent relationships between two families. Many an adopted-in husband is without a family at the time of marriage, i.e., originally his parents had few children and are both dead, because the absence of a family is a defect lowering the value of a man as a marriage prospect, thus promoting a chao fu marriage.

581 There are other personal and socioeconomic factors affecting the selection of marriage partners. For example, it is best if the boy's family is a little richer than the girl's. In Sanlei, there is a tendency for tea-processing families to intermarry in order to preserve requisite skills and knowledge within a limited group. Also, efforts are expended to make sure the bride and groom are about equal in terms of popularity, physical beauty, etc., as many people claim great differences are more likely to lead to divorce.

171 The ritual for a regular marriage is not unlike that
585 described for other parts of Taiwan (Gallán, 1966; Wolf,
584 1965; Diamond, 1969). In brief, the matchmaker, usually a
part-time occupation, completes the negotiations between
the two families. A priest to ascertain ritual suitability
583 may be consulted (See Chapter VII). There will usually be
a bride price plus gifts totaling nearly \$7,000.00 although
the bride will bring a dowry which should equal the bride
price but rarely does. There are periodic gifts to be ex-
changed between the two families with the total amount ex-
584 changed marking the status of the two families. The en-
gagement ceremony is performed at the bride's house while
585 the bride faces away from her family altar. The wedding,
some months later, is at the groom's house where the bride
is fetched by the groom's family and friends in the morning.
Upon arriving, they first worship while facing the boy's
family altar and then retire to the bedroom where they will
remain for most of the next three days. During the day
they receive guests, coming out only for elimination, a
luncheon party for family intimates, and a huge dinner party
that night. Guests at dinner bring a monetary gift to pay
their share of the cost because before the invitation is ex-
tended, everyone is aware of the proper amount. Ten people
sit at each rented table and the status of the boy's family
is rated by counting the number of tables. After three
days, the newlyweds will return to the bride's home for
lunch and to report the wedding to her ancestors. The

585 wedding of an adopted-in husband is nearly the mirror image of this, the wedding feast held at the home of the bride.

Of course, many marriages are not this elaborate.

184
585 In the case of a marriage between very poor people, many older people living alone, or if between a son and adopted daughter, there may be no marriage party or ritual recognition at all. Villagers refer to these kinds of marriage 587 as "putting the shoes under the bed" (See Glossary C). The latter type is also common for remarriage after divorce or death of a spouse for there is some disapproval of a second marriage, but nevertheless, everyone agrees a man or woman with small children must remarry fairly quickly. Only 586 people with older children regularly fail to remarry. In a divorce, children are expected to remain with the father or, if he was an adopted-in husband, shared between father and mother.

587 The remarriage of a widow with children is expected to be with an adopted-in husband. By bearing a child, a woman has been fully incorporated into her first husband's family who will therefore probably play a part in the selection of the second husband. The second husband agrees to provide financial support for her previous children and if she had had several (which would likely reduce her marriage prospects), one may be given in adoption to a second husband as a marriage inducement.

587
765 There is no long period of mourning holding up a remarriage. The day after the funeral of a miner killed in

442

587 Erhlei during our stay, the whole area was rife with gossip
[765] as to who her new husband would be. Since she had three
children, one recently born, and could not continue alone,
marriage would be expected as soon as a suitable suitor
[162] could be found, perhaps in a few weeks. Given the sex ratio,
females have an advantage over males in obtaining a never-
married spouse for a second partner and the overall shortage
of women in the area has probably added to the elevation of
their status.

Married Life

593 There is much less originally expected from a spouse
after marriage than in America, i.e., only respect and a
level of nurture but it appears that more is received. Vil-
lagers say, "If love and excitement come or if the two people
enjoy talking together, that would be nice" (See Glossary
C). Companionship may be provided by other members of the
family, neighbors or for a man by his sworn brothers or for
a woman by her age cohorts in the village; love could come
from the same people and surely from the children. Of
course, if two people live together intimately on a basis
of respect and care, love nearly always comes and if it
does not, it was never really necessary nor expected and
the marriage can be a success in spite of the void.

581 The marriage usually starts in very strained circum-
stances for in a majority of the cases, the couple have lit-
tle personal knowledge of each other, perhaps not even

581 meeting until the wedding day, and even many "love" mar-
585 riages are between relative strangers. Yet, the first
night should be witness to consummation. There are cul-
turally provided mechanisms to ease the establishment of a
relationship. On the wedding day, there have been many
guests and activities allowing the newly-weds no time alone
with each other and the first evening, the groom and bride
are both a little high but neither is really drunk. Nor-
mally, a host will kan bei (bottoms up) with guests, one
at a time, but a groom is permitted to use his best friends
as proxies. A toast is normally in three parts: a salute
with the glass, drinking it down, and another salute which
demonstrates the glass is empty. The groom performs the
first and last part with his male friends doing the drink-
ing, but he and the bride both have a few drinks with the
more important guests. When they enter the bedroom, they
will be isolated for a three day period of adjustment, even
their food will be left outside the door. They may use a
chamber pot but many sneak out to use the toilet.

593 After this, further cultural provisions help ease the
strain. For example, since married couples are not per-
mitted to show public affection, they do not have to pretend
affection; they do not have to pretend in public everything
is wonderful in spite of the fact they have quarreled in
private.

It is usually many years before a married couple
walk together and stand close in public as when watching an

444

593 opera. A few older couples may hold hands in public at
[178] night if it is dark. Today, many young couples do things
together that their parents would never have dared such as
going to a movie together.

[551] Terms of address between married couples are difficult for use of the given name or an affectionate name is improper and there is no appropriate term of address until after a child is born when teknomony can be used. Before the birth of the first child, they just avoid addressing each other with a term. A woman often "follows her children" in using their terms for her husband's relatives. While a woman does have a term used for address and reference, "Kuan - ren", which roughly translates as "lord and master," the term should not be interpreted as descriptive of the relationship. Like many terms, it has a meaning not directly based on its roots as illustrated by the fact that it is not too uncommon to hear a woman address her husband as follows, "Lord and Master! Go feed the pigs. Right now!"

Women have much control in the household. They very frequently control the household budget, doling out money to husbands as needed and even when the husband is fully in charge or where there is shared control, the woman still does much of the shopping for everyone agrees women can best bargain to obtain lower prices. In general, the longer the marriage lasts, the greater the amount of power the woman acquires. Of course, there are many exceptions. If she is

593 in a joint household, she usually does not take much part in money management or training for money management until about age 30 or more. In a few households, the man is extremely dominant.

Sex

836 Most brides and grooms are virgins. Today, several
[178] of the young men have previously visited houses of prostitution while in the service and many visited tea houses in Hsin Tien where they play with women but do not have intercourse. When the bride is not a virgin, she has usually only had relations with the boy she marries in a love match.
[148] Some of the girls who work in the factories have had illegitimate children arousing reluctance among some villagers about letting their girls go to work.

864 Even small children know a lot about sex for the village is rural and children observe the mating of farm animals and know the function. Given the sleeping arrangements and the proper site for sex, i.e., in a bed which will be shared with sleeping children, it is likely they have also observed human intercourse. I remember one occasion when the barber, a bachelor, was building a new three-room house because he planned on marriage. A group of 9 to 10 year olds were showing me around and when we came to the prospective bedroom, a boy said, "He is getting married and this is where he will stick it in her" (See Glossary C). Men and old women talk about enjoying sex when children are

864

within hearing distance although someone will occasionally
864 shush them. During the wedding party in front of all the
842 guests and children too, the bride is given a flower to
585 hold, the name of which has exactly the same sound as the
common term for penis, for the purpose of helping to pro-
duce male offspring. Earthy remarks though resound softly
throughout the audience such as, "Do you think it is too
big?" "Have you ever squeezed one before?" or "That's not
the only one you will get today" (See Glossary C).

833

Sexual intercourse is a natural function, to be en-
joyed by men and women alike. It is recognized that there
may be differences in a married pair's respective sexual
appetites and an agreement that it is the responsibility of
each to provide for the other. Male appetites are large at
marriage but women usually take time to develop them, not
reaching a peak until after age 30. Females are quite shy
and rarely initiate sexual intercourse until married quite
a while although there are exceptions.

Sexual intercourse is only properly performed in
bed at night after dark, preferably at midnight, by a married
couple who are seldom fully unclothed. The children sharing
the bed should be asleep, checked by pinching them. Chil-
dren learn to face away from the center of the bed and lie
still for it is not proper for anyone to acknowledge that
intercourse has taken place although with the crowded
houses and the walls reaching neither floor nor ceiling,
everyone can hear the creaking beds and distinctive sounds

833 of sex. Sexual foreplay includes nibbling, blowing, and
[812] manipulation of erogenous zones. The only common position
is the classical "man on top." Intercourse continues while
physically possible but the frequency declines with age.

837 There are a few women whose husbands are unable to
satisfy them. Currently, there are three such women in the
village who have assignments regularly with other village
men, two with a regular partner, while the third is insati-
able. People say her husband is impotent. If the latter
woman has relationships with any reasonably happy married
man, his wife gets very angry as has happened several times
and once there was a hair-pulling and scratching fight.
Illicit sex within the village is usually in the mountain
fields and almost never in a village house.

837 Although men in some Taiwanese villages frequent the
548 wine houses⁴ in the city (Wolf, 1965), this characteristic
184 is absent in Sanlei. One man in Erhlei is a habitue how-
[275] ever and everyone knows about it but most of the criticism
directed at him is not on a moral basis; rather, he is
considered foolish for wasting his money. A few li girls
who have become prostitutes in town return for visits and
festivals but do not practice their trade in the village.
They are not morally condemned and are welcomed at all li
affairs.

842 Old methods of birth control included the use of
herbal solutions by women and coitus interruptus by men

448

842 neither of which was extremely effective. Recently, there has been much use of "Inter-Uterine Devices" for they prove fairly effective and only a few women experience difficulties with them. Although available at a public health clinic in Hsin Tien, village women prefer a much more expensive private hospital. Women alone decide when they will use an I.U.D. although their husbands may put up a vigorous argument. Only rarely will a woman use the I.U.D. before she has borne three children although if she does decide earlier, no one can do anything about it. Older people, men and women alike, often say the young women are lazy today, they cannot be bothered with many babies. In fact, a major reason for many babies was the high death rate and thus, the necessity for many to assure raising some to maturity, but with the increasing life expectancy and improved diet and health care, the odds of success have significantly changed.

Birthdays

527 After the first birthday, the next birthday of any
561 importance which is celebrated with a party is the thirtieth although others may be recognized in the family with special food such as an egg. The thirtieth is for a married male with children and given by his wife's parents while the reverse is less frequently provided for a woman by her husband's family. In either case, it is a small party but with rich food. Most birthdays continue unrecognized, but

527 when they are celebrated, there is usually greater emphasis
561 for those of a man. After the thirtieth, every tenth year
will be celebrated in special ways as a ta sheng jih (big
birthday).

561 The first big birthday party is at age 60,⁵ called
527 hsia shou (small longevity). As described in Chapter IX,
805 the Chinese calendar has a cycle of 60 years. When one
886 reaches age 60, he has completed an entire cycle and is
starting over again so that every year after 60 is consid-
ered to be a gift of the gods. At age sixty, a man is ex-
pected to turn over control of the family to his sons and
live as if on a pension but still contributing limited
amounts of labor. Of course, there is often a disparity
between chronological age and the level of physiological
aging. Some men withdraw happily while others resist, but
527 a son should not press a reluctant father very hard. There
886 will be a big sixtieth birthday party with many guests who
each present a red envelope gift which contains an even
amount of money sufficient to more than pay his share of
the cost of the party. Local politicians will send cards
of congratulations. A man without grandchildren will not
have a big party and there will only be a family affair
without many guests for a woman reaching sixty whether she
has many grandchildren or not.

888 Old age⁶ tends to be a pleasant period of life in
the village. The aged have a lot of leisure and yet enjoy

888 great quantities of respect. Rules for behavior are greatly relaxed and many can now do things younger people are not permitted. Old women attend meetings which are normally for males and some smoke for enjoyment only while women under 60 who smoke make an excuse that it is necessary for a particular affliction, "an itchy nose." Old women are the ones who talk "dirty" and act as the village clowns and teasers. Up to age 35, females tend to be extremely shy in public but once past 60, they are the most aggressive. I was sitting in front of the village store in a group one day while four young married girls were washing clothes across the street in a bent-over position. A woman of 80 nudged me and in a loud voice exclaimed, "That girl over there is waving it at you. Go over and ~~stick~~ her!" She and the other old women laughed loudly as several men smiled or snickered but the girls blushed deeply (as I did) and pretended we were not there. When an old woman in a social group clears her throat preparing to speak, others stop talking and listen intently, expecting to be amused.

527 If the first digit is even for the tenth year birth-
561 day, the occasion is more important.⁷ The 70th birthday is
888 recognized and has a special name of chung shou (middle longevity). Cards will be sent and there will be a family party but not many guests come. On the other hand, the eightieth birthday, shang shou (high longevity), is the next big occasion, but for males and females alike. In addition to the big party and monetary gifts, cards will

527
561
888 come from all over the island. An interview will be recorded in the local newspaper, the provincial governor and other important officials send small scrolls and even Chiang Kai-shek himself sends a scroll of congratulations which will proudly be displayed on the wall in the kung t'ing.

The 90th, chi shou (senior longevity) is rather an echo of the 70th but will be reported in the newspapers. No one in the village area had been known to reach one hundred but there were hopes for a man over 90 in Erhlei. There was believed to be a special name for the hundredth birthday but no one could recall it although several felt the term had something to do with eating. My questions stimulated much speculation about what gifts and recognition a hundred-year old would receive. One man suggested the gifts would probably include a letter from the head of the United States and several people nodded in agreement.

Recreation

521 The most important form of recreation was conversation which took significant portions of every day, particularly the evenings between dinner and bed-time. Almost any topic was open with gossip about others endemic for everyone knew each other's business. When anyone waited at the bus, every person who passed by asked, "Where are you going? What are you going to do?" When returning on the bus, similar questions were heard, "Where have you been? What did you do?" With a purchase, the question is "What did you buy

521 and how much was it?" No matter what the price, the constant response was, "I could get it cheaper!" (See Glossary C). There are few secrets inside the village, but the villagers united against outsiders.

524 Games requiring physical exertion are played by children only. There is only one organized game with rules, the tag ball played in school. Children's games are similar to what would be called "free play" in American schools. There are few toys and most of these are home made. Among adults, only men play games and these are sedentary games of skill such as a card game or chess. There will be chess games a couple of times per week but there are usually more kibitzers than participants. Mah Jong is illegal but there is a game about once or twice a month among the Mainlanders in the area.

545 Religious and life cycle events are colorful affairs which are interesting to observe. For many such events, entertainers are hired such as the crew of 15 or more required to present a Taiwan Hsi (opera) which may last eight or ten hours. Cheap entertainment might include a puppet show, juggler, sword dancers, etc. About once a month or so, a sales crew puts on a show which features songs, dances, and jokes to draw customers. The show
443 is punctuated by the entertainers passing through the audience selling medicine and since the length of the show is determined by the amount sold, some people buy in order to

543
443
207 prolong the show rather than because they are convinced of
the efficacy of the medicine. Every evening people gather
to watch the television set which faces the street at the
front of one of the village stores as the storekeeper sells
soft drinks and ices. Finally, nearly every home has a
radio which blares loudly from early in the morning to late
at night. Although farmers listen to a few reports on
weather and the occasional news report, the usual program
features Taiwanese opera or some of the new popular music
featuring singers with guitars which is preferred by young
people.

546
571 Occasionally, trips are made to a cheap movie house
in Hsin Tien by middle-aged women in groups of 4 or 5 for
a matinee or unmarried young people in groups which are
separated according to sex. There is some dating but the
boy and girl must sneak off and meet in town. Some young
married couples now go to the show together but this is a
new trait and still partially condemned by older people.

517
574 Also, people leave the village for recreation in the parks
and to see sights such as the zoo. However, most people
getting on the bus alone are usually going shopping or on
business and most family groups are usually going to visit
relatives. Relatives, friends, and former residents often
come to the village to visit. Some middle-aged village men
occasionally visit a small restaurant in a nearby village
to chat, drink cheap wine, eat light snacks, and play word

454

275 games and a gambling game something like paper, rock, and
265 scissors.

484
177

Middle-aged married people, without their children, go for a two to five day sightseeing tour on a bus, a unique form of recreation started by the Japanese. Two men from Erhlei organize a trip once every eight or nine months for forty people or so, all from Talei Li. The trip is not very expensive and everyone seems to have a good time and later, talks about the trips for years.

574

Dinner and drinking parties are also important and being a host is both enjoyable and establishes one's social position. Men play drinking games at dinners because one never drinks without also eating. During a dinner, one can not drink alone; he must find someone to drink with. Toasts in the previously described manner are kan bei (bottoms up), ban bei (half the glass), or swei bien (as much as you like). A goal of the drinking game is to stay sober while getting others drunk for to become drunk is to lose face. People become very skilled at the drinking games based on a strategy that when your glass is near empty, you should get a man with a full glass to kan bei (bottoms up) in the hope to have him drink much while you drink little. He should, in this situation, try to get the toast to be swei bien (as much as you like).

Death and Beyond

76
128
184 Death and burial have often been described for Chinese communities (Gallin, 1966:219-30; Fei, 1939:75-9; M. Yang, 1945:86-90; C. K. Yang, 1967:28-53). Although there are regional differences, significant elements are reasonably similar in Sanlei and due to limited space, the below account will not be detailed nor elaborate. Instead, remarks are restricted to particular local variations not adequately described in the literature or to those which bear directly on the problem focus of the paper. The reader is referred to the literature for more complete accounts.

764 Death ritual varies in accordance with age, sex, marital situation, the number of descendants, and the financial status of the family. In general, the greater the wealth, age, and/or number of descendants, the larger and more elaborate the ceremony. As already stated, death before reaching the first thirty days of age is not ritualized at all and the death of a child at any age is seldom accompanied by any ceremony. There is considerable resentment 766
562 directed against a male who lived some years but died before producing offspring for villagers claim he has cheated his parents by failing to repay their investment in him with grandchildren. There is no corresponding attitude toward the early death of females unless they have only a few siblings, none of whom are males, and in this case, the resentment is related to the fact that there were plans for an

761 adopted-in husband marriage which was supposed to produce
562 children but which will now be impossible.

764 Regular funerals are usually held only for married
593 people with children⁸ and the kind of ceremony held does
602 furnish a clue to the relative status of males and females.
562

In similar social positions, the ceremony for a male will be more elaborate than that for a female. In a single household however, it is likely that the ceremony for a married-in female who has borne several children will be much more elaborate than that for her husband's unmarried male brother although both died at the same age. This fact does support my contention that the woman with children is fully incorporated into her husband's chia. The bulk of the most elaborate funerals ever witnessed in the village area are those of females but this is not due to a preference for females but only due to the fact that women tend to outlive men. The oldest people are usually females and as stated, the more descendants a person has, the larger the funeral ceremony.

761 There are significant differences relating to natural death versus accidental death. Natural death is the result of old age or disease while accidental death involves violence such as a fall or a mine cave in. Natural death is
[762] celebrated in the kung t'ing and if it looks like someone is about to die, he is moved to the kung t'ing to await death.
[764] On the other hand, a body of an individual who had an accidental death may not be brought into the kung t'ing or any

457

761 other part of the house and the funeral must be celebrated
764 in the courtyard outside the house.

761 An accidental death always generates much additional
775 fear in the village area for it is said that the spirit of
a man who dies in violence is very angry and will always
take another person with him for company, i.e., someone
else in the village will quickly die after an accidental
death. There was one miner killed in a mine cave-in during
our stay in the village and his body remained out in the
courtyard. Although villagers prefer internment within two
days at the most, his body lay out three days because the
government insurance inspectors who had to view his body
before releasing the insurance proceeds were delayed. Be-
fore the funeral was over, indeed, in the midst of the
ceremony, a small child in the village died of pneumonia.
Everyone agreed that the death was due to the spirit of the
dead miner and although saddened by the death of the baby,
everyone was greatly relieved for the danger was now over
as the spirit's need for a victim was sated.

764 There is a public cemetery started by the Japanese
765 in the Wulei area which permits free burials for Talei Li
765 residents and charges \$25.00 for outsiders. About seven
years after burial, if there are descendants, the body is
exhumed and a specialist puts the bones in a special ceramic
pot in the proper order as if the individual were in an up-
right position. This pot is then placed in a good location

765 in Sanlei Ts'un, one which possess good feng shui coordinates. A few bodies are placed directly after death in family burial plots but this is relatively rare. More often, if the family owns a burial plot with elaborate accoutrements, the body is first buried in the Wulei cemetery, exhumed after seven years as described, and the pot of bones is then placed in the family site rather than in an individual unique location.

769 Following the funeral, worship of the individual is directed towards a special side-wall table for the first twelve months. At the end of the year, the tablet, if any, and worship and objects are transferred to the regular ancestral table. The period following death is still considered a part of the normal life cycle for even though he is dead, the individual may continue to influence village affairs. He will probably be worshipped separately on his death anniversary for a number of years, the length of time varying in accordance with his age at death and the family status.

Eventually, worship directed towards an individual will be merged with that for the other ancestors and rather than on his own death anniversary, he will be worshipped on the regular days set aside for all ancestors in general. As the generations pass, memory of him will gradually be lost, and by the fifth descending generation, little more than his name will likely be left in the memory of villagers.

CHAPTER IX

CYCLES IN TIME

178 Time is subdivided into many different categories
805 which play a significant part in structuring social life in
Sanlei Ts'un. For certain kinds of divisions, adherence to
which of two conflicting systems for reckoning time pro-
vides a key to evaluating the level of modernization
achieved by an individual. For example, years are sub-
divided according to both a traditional lunar calendar and
a modern Western solar calendar. Although farmers place
prime emphasis on the lunar calendar, businessmen and urban
dwellers rely on the solar calendar and both calendars are
important for determining village activities.¹

Another relationship between the level of moderniza-
tion and the type of time system employed may be seen in the
new emphasis on clocks. Clocks were unimportant in rural
traditional Chinese villages and according to older infor-
mants, Sanlei Ts'un had no clocks when they were children.
As late as 1950, there were still only a few clocks in the
village. Currently, almost every village house has a clock
and an electric clock in the kung t'ing has almost become a
necessary status symbol in spite of the fact no member of

460

178 the household pays any attention to its time. Punctuality
805 according to a clock is important for miners, factory workers, and those who work in town. For other villagers, only the bus and the school operate according to time scheduled by a clock but even then, the school bell and bus passage through the village ten minutes before leaving for town make the clock unnecessary.

805 The traditional Chinese conception of the passage of
822 time in general is that time movement is cyclical. That is, time proceeds as if it were traveling down a corkscrew. Whatever is happening has happened before in the past and will happen again in the future. I have employed the analogy of a corkscrew rather than a closed circle because of the recognition that although events are individually unique, the general patterns are repeated.

In addition to this contrast with the American view of time as if it were passing along a straight line into infinity, there is a comparative long-range approach in opposition to the American short-range approach. Illiterate villagers are aware of events which occurred hundreds of years ago or at least an idealized reconstruction of the events and the memory of the events remain important factors
173 in decision processes in the village. For example, some
805 village family lines were said to have originated in Honan, emigrated to Fukien 500 years ago, and then to Taiwan 130 years ago. Other village family lines with the same surname

173 were said to have originated in Fukien and also emigrated
805 to Taiwan 130 years ago. Villagers carefully distinguish
between the two lines. A member of a Honan-originated line
can list all other lines in the area which also supposedly
originated in Honan and most claim that those who came from
Honan are more like each other than outsiders although I
believe it to be nearly impossible for an outsider to de-
tect any differences.

The biggest subdivisions of time are labeled according
to dynasties. A sequence of calendar years starts over
again at the beginning of each new dynasty. Since the last
dynasty was overthrown in 1911 when the Republic was estab-
lished, years have been numbered in sequence since 1911 as
year 1 in a manner similar to this traditional pattern.
Within dynasties, there were also occasional references to
the reign of particular emperors as a means for dating
events, i.e., in the 16th year of the reign of the Emperor
K'ang Hsi. No comparable phenomena is observed for the most
recent period although this lack may be related to the rela-
tively short perspective or to the dominance of Chiang Kai-
shek and Mao Tse-tung for such a long period in their re-
spective spheres of influence.

The Sixty-Year Cycle (Chia Tzu)²

805 There is a system for naming years to be discussed
below which generates sixty different terms and thus, a
sixty year cycle. At the end of a sixty-year period, the

805 sequence is repeated. Completion of life through the entire
791 cycle is a primary factor supporting the stress on the six-
805 tieth birthday for any person who lives longer than a full
cycle is considered to have been necessarily favored by the
gods. This belief in god's favor applies to males and
females alike. The sixty-year cycle results from the inter-
action between three sets of factors which are each a com-
plex religious concept with exceedingly intricate complexi-
ties and ramifications. Although each will be discussed
briefly below in turn, it must be realized that little more
than a cursory examination is offered.

805 The first set is related to the Chinese view of the
812 world as if it were bipolar for not only does everything
have its opposite, opposites are both necessary and comple-
mentary to each other. "These opposites tended to merge
into each other and even to become each the opposite of its
former self" (Thompson, 1969:3). One of these principles,
yang, stands for activity, light, heat, dryness, hardness,
and masculinity; the opposite, yin, for quiescence, cold,
darkness, humidity, softness, and femininity (Bodde, 1951:
21).

812 The eternal interaction of the above two general
82 principles, the yin and the yang, produce the wu hsing (five
805 primary elements): fire, water, earth, wood, and metal
(Bodde, 1951:21-2). The Chinese word hsing, which sino-
logues have usually translated as element, is actually a

805 verb meaning to walk, to go, to act and therefore, perhaps
812 better translations of wu hsing might be the "five opera-
82 tional qualities" (Thompson, 1969:4) or the "five movers"
or "five agents" (Carroll, 1963:8). Correlated with the
five elements are a number of other five-members sets such
as directions, notes, colors, tastes, odors, sacrifices,
organs, etc. The five elements produce the t'ien kan (ten
celestial stems), a yin and yang form of each element. It
has been suggested that perhaps the ten celestial stems
were once employed for counting the days of a ten-day week
(Carroll, 1963:12), but if true, the knowledge has been
lost in Sanlei Ts'un.

The third set of important categories are the ti chih
(twelve terrestrial branches). There are also many correla-
tions with the twelve branches and a number of twelve-member
sets such as the compass points, tones of a quasicromatic
805 scale, etc. (Carroll, 1963:13). However, the most popular
812 correlation is with the twelve animals, in order: Rat, Ox,
825 Tiger, Rabbit, Dragon, Snake, Horse, Sheep, Monkey, Cock,
Dog, and Pig. The odd-numbered items are considered to be
yang and the even-numbered, yin.

805 "The chia-tsu cycle of sixty terms is made up by
82 combining the stems and branches so that each of the yang
(odd-numbered) stems occurs once with each of the yang
branches and each of the yin (even-numbered) stems occurs
once with each of the yin branches" (Carroll, 1963:16).

805 Every adult in the village could name the branch and stem
82 of the current year and most could immediately predict both
for the following year. When asked to predict some year
farther into the future, most adults could satisfactorily
figure them out. The question usually produced a response
set which featured recitation of a sequence while counting
on the fingers. The two cycles of five and twelve were
figured separately and then combined by adjusting the yin
or yang form of the stem to agree with the branch in order
to produce the name of the year.

805 Every villager, with the exception of very small chil-
825 dren, knew the animal (branch) associated with his birth and
almost everyone also knew the stem (element). Older people
were often not sure of either their ages or the year in
which they were born, but their approximate age plus the
name of the animal associated with their year of birth al-
ways allowed accurate discovery. When we later obtained
official records, there were only a few discrepancies between
the recorded age and the age computed by use of the animals.
Each discrepancy could be explained with a story which
claimed the official records were not correct. For example,
one Sanlei man had been registered two years later than his
actual birth because his father was with the bandits in the
mountains. In each case, the "animal" designation was cor-
rect and the official registration was inaccurate.

805
787 There are similar pairs of two characters specifying the month, day, and hour of one's birth. The eight characters, pa tsu, thereby produced are employed in determining compatibility or incompatibility of persons about to be married,³ and are also used in fortune-telling. However, most people in the village could not immediately recall their own eight characters although most said they could be figured out.

Calendars

805
178
527 There are two important calendars which function simultaneously in the village. The first is the standard Western calendar with which all readers are familiar. It has become more important in the past few years, especially for those employed in modern firms because work schedules and payrolls are based on the Western solar calendar. The only major events in the village area which are determined by this calendar are the national holidays such as Restoration Day, Independence Day, and Chiang Kai-shek's Birthday. Meetings of government agencies and dates for paying taxes are set according to this calendar too.

805
[59A] The second calendar, the lunar, is the traditional form and is employed to determine the traditional religious holidays. Individual months are of 29 or 30 days duration, intermixed so that each new moon falls on the first day of a month. Months are simply numbered from one to twelve. Years are of unequal length, having either twelve or

805 thirteen months according to the year's position in a
[796] nineteen-year intercalation cycle (Carroll, 1963:4-5). The
extra month is assigned the same number as the month immediately preceding it. Villagers would say, for example, that 1966 had two "third" months. Although religious holidays based on a monthly cycle would be celebrated during the extra month, those based on a yearly cycle would only be celebrated during the first of the duplicated months.

Because of the differing length of the months and the differing number of months in any one year, the lunar and solar calendars do not match. Lunar New Year commences sometime in January or February of the solar calendar. Without exception, villagers were all aware of the current date at any moment in time according to the lunar calendar. On the other hand, most villagers were not aware of the current date according to the solar calendar. The awareness of solar dates was related to structural factors. As would be expected, those who worked in businesses or factories as well as those who did business regularly in the city were more knowledgeable and therefore, on the average, men were more aware of both kinds of dates than women.

The Yearly Religious Cycle

796 In traditional China, there was no custom of a five-day or six-day week followed by one or two days for rest and recreation. Nevertheless, an equivalent relief period was provided by the celebration of various religious

79% festivals which punctuated the yearly cycle; these served as a functional alternative by special interspersing recreation days in the work schedule. Most of the special days were regularly scheduled, some on a yearly basis and some on a monthly basis. As previously described, some were specially scheduled in addition such as that for the Fire Purification Ceremony. Each of the major events in Sanlei's cycle will be discussed briefly below with dates indicated in accordance with the lunar calendar.⁴ The particular events and/or the dates for their celebration vary for different regions of China, but nevertheless, the overall frequency appears to be about the same everywhere.

The listed items are not all of equal importance. For some, the activities might be restricted to a few hours in the evening and involve only the household members and even then, in only a minority of village homes. For others, the activities may last several days, involve many guests, and include 100% village participation. In general, most holidays always involve extra worship activities and special food in the evening at dinner. The presence of guests is nearly always evident for the more important affairs.

The year starts with the Hsin Nien (New Year's) celebration on the first day of the first month. This is the most important festival in the yearly cycle and the whole li cooperates in its celebration. Entertainment is always hired and usually retained for a full three days. Actually,

796 the preparations start several days before New Year's Day and extend several days beyond encompassing many parties and celebrations. Gifts are received from employers and [431] gifts are provided to all regular vendors with whom an individual does business. There is a considerable amount of [574] visiting with friends and relatives in the village and in the surrounding area as far as Taipei. Inscriptions are placed on the doors and New Year's evening itself is enlivened by firecrackers all night long. Virtually 100% of villagers participate in the various celebrations.

The New Year Season closes with the celebration of Shang-yuan (Lantern Festival) on the first month, fifteenth day. In addition to the elaborate food, worship, and firecrackers there is parading in the evening while carrying colorful lanterns which have candles inside. This affair [787] is most popular with children. Villagers believe that a single girl may learn something about her future husband and whether she will get married during the current year by interpreting the first thing she hears after setting out on the [777] parade with a lantern. Children are able to obtain good luck for an entire year by stealing vegetables growing in the fields without getting caught. Village adults rush about and loudly complain about thieves but are careful not to catch any children stealing. Most village families participate in Shang-yuan; the only exceptions are households without children.

796
769 Ch'ing Ming Chieh (Clear and Bright) is celebrated during the third month sometime between the first and fifteenth.⁵ The primary worship is of gods and ancestors with an important task of cleaning and decorating ancestral graves. At this festival, many kinship units larger than a single family gather to worship together and clean the common graves. Most people prepare and serve special cakes. Almost every household in the area participates with the exceptions made up of a few immigrants who do not have a family burial plot in the area. The day before Ch'ing Ming Chieh, about one third of the households build no fires and therefore, eat only cold food in remembrance, villagers say, of an event during the period of the "Warring States." On the day of Ch'ing Ming Chieh itself, many villagers who have migrated permanently to the city return to Sanlei Ts'un for worship and celebration.

796 The second most important yearly event in Sanlei is the Matsu procession which occurs on the fifteenth day of the fourth month and as previously stated, is the only religious affair for which cooperative activities extend beyond the confines of Talei Li. Beyond the li boundaries, the cooperation in the touring entertainment and god's procession lasts only one day, but inside Talei li as well as inside several other li in the Hsin Tien area, the celebration usually lasts three days. There are usually elaborate hired entertainment programs such as an opera, many dinners

796 and parties, and the visitation of many guests from outside
[796] the village area. Although legend claims that Matsu had
special powers over boats and weather and special relationships
with fishermen, today her powers are considered to be
[782] most general. Village women now make special worship of-
[84] ferings to her with reference to pregnancy, childbirth, and
the care of children.

[801] There are special meanings connected with many repeated words in the Chinese language.⁶ For holidays, the day of the month which is the same number as the month itself has special powers. The next festival of importance in the village is of this type, the Dragon Boat Festival, which occurs on the fifth day of the fifth month and is often called the Double Fifth. In addition to the usual activities, there is a special food, glutinous rice wrapped in a leaf, and doors are decorated with branches and leaves.
[262]
[515] An afternoon bath⁷ is supposed to help keep one healthy for the entire next year. There are boat races in town as part of the festival but only a few unmarried young people from the village go to observe them.

706 On the fifteenth day of the seventh month is Chung
769 Yuan (Festival of the Hungry Ghosts) especially set aside
701 for the worship of the Hao Hsiung-ti (Good Brothers, an euphemism for unworshipped ancestors) although some worship of the Good Brothers occurs periodically all during the year. All ancestors are worshipped, both the personal

796 known and unknown ones as well as ancestors in general and
769 any ghosts who happen to be wandering around. There is a
775 common Chinese belief that any unworshipped souls may cause
much mischief. In Talei Li, it is felt that there are more
hungry ghosts today than ever in history because of the many
Mainland soldiers who are now slowly dying off without leav-
ing descendants to carry on their worship. Once again, food
sacrifices are very important with pork and fruit featured
in particular. Some food is left out over night on the
street so that any passing ghost may serve himself.

796 The Moon Festival or Mid-Autumn Festival falls on
796 the fifteenth day of the eighth month as does the birthday
821 of T'u Ti Kung (the Earth God). As part of the worship
[782] affairs in the afternoon before dinner, about sixty per cent
of village households offer sacrifices at the small Earth
God Temple at the edge of the village. There are also spec-
ial sacrifices to Tai-yin (Goddess of the Moon) and the
majority of the villagers stay up late at night to observe
the moon for legend claims that the moon is more beautiful
[431] this night than during any other time of the year. Special
yueh ping (moon cakes) are sacrificed and given to friends
[362] and relatives as gifts. The Moon Festival is a yin event
[842] (the female end of the yin-yang dichotomy previously dis-
cussed) and therefore, features special activities by women
in order that they may conceive, obtain a husband, or receive
[875] long life. In Talei Li, gifts are also sent on this day to
[431] the li school teachers.

796 the 11 school teachers. In spite of the fact that moon
776 cakes and the festival are yin, some moon cakes are sacri-
821 ficed to T'u Ti Kung who is a male and therefore yang.

796 The second of the double number festivals is the
562 Double Ninth, the ninth day of the ninth month. Since this
[801] is a yang holiday, the counterpart of the above for the
yang or male part of the yin-yang,⁸ it is often also termed
the Double Yang. On Double Ninth, men like to have many
guests for dinner with a tendency to prefer male guests
only, so many of the Sworn Brother Associations schedule
one of their regular yearly banquets. Young people in the
area climb to the top of the small surrounding mountains
(foothills might be more descriptive) and try to run all the
way down without falling. Since this is difficult, the
sight of the clumsy falls provokes much laughter in the
village.

796 Tung Chieh (Winter Solstice) falls during the elev-
782 enth month, the day varying with the calendar cycles. Once
[262] again, there are the typical sacrifices and worship plus a
special food, winter dumplings. In Sanlei, the farmers sac-
rifice dumplings all over the village, leaving some out in
the fields and attaching some to each of the pig pens. Most
farmers worship also at the temple of T'u Ti Kung.

796 The New Year festivities commence on the twenty-fourth
776 day of the twelfth month with a ceremony to send off the
gods. Earthly gods ascend to heaven to report and will not

796 return until after New Year although part of their respon-
796 sibilities are borne by Heavenly gods who come down to serve
[356] as substitutes. Because the substitutes are not as con-
[582] scientious in maintaining their vigils and reporting mis-
deeds, many activities not normally permitted are carried
out during the absence of the regular gods, i.e., the house
is thoroughly cleaned and many marriages are consummated,
especially those that might be of questionable value as for
instance, with an adopted daughter or between two people
with surnames who should not marry. The gods are sent off
with special ceremonies and will be welcomed back with
another set of ceremonies on the fourth day of the first
month. A household distributes New Year cakes to friends
and to anyone who has not experienced a death in the family
during the year.

796 For most of the above events, although details vary,
782 worship activities include food sacrifices, fire crackers,
[798] and the burning of paper money. Worship activities always
are held in the kung t'ing of the family home or in the
courtyard immediately outside. Frequently there is worship
as well in the Sanlei temple and the T'u Ti Kung temple and
796 less often in the li temple in Erhlei. Where possible,
594 there should be dinner parties with guests. Since everyone
in the area is usually celebrating the calendric holidays
on the same day, guests are difficult to obtain. Some mi-
grants come back from the city to participate and poorer

796
514 villagers eat at the homes of richer villagers.

796
562
782 Most villagers claim that men are responsible for carrying out the worship activities connected with religion and also for arranging the events. On the other hand, in another breath, the same villagers will say that the responsibility is borne by the head of the household. There is an implied assumption that the terms man and head-of-household are nearly synonymous but as pointed out previously, many heads of households are females in Sanlei Ts'un. From an observational point of view, there is little doubt that women are prime organizing forces in planning the celebrations. Ordinarily, for the very minor occasions, they do much of the actual worship itself but on one of the special days described above, when the family and guests gather to watch a worship activity, an older man will perform if one is available in the family. If one is not available, a woman will worship. The family identification is more important than the sex for on several occasions I observed women performing the worship activity although there were old men present as guests who were not members of the family. On the most important days, those with worship activities at the village and li temples, there will always be some women observed among the celebrants. They are well accepted and will evoke no disparaging remarks as long as they have no man in the family who should be assuming the responsibility.

796
291 The above events serve to break up the year. More-
over, the period of the year when the required agricultural
activities are at a minimum, from the middle of the twelfth
month to the middle of the first, is witness to the most
festive period which commences with the last monthly-cycled
event of the year and ends with the first monthly-cycled
event of the new year (see next section).

527
178
369 There are also the national holidays which are sched-
uled according to a calendar, but in this case the western
calendar. These are not as important in the village as the
religious affairs but are growing in importance as time
passes and there is a greater degree of urban contact and
more individuals start working in factory, business, and
mining occupations. Businesses tend to close for the im-
portant events and thus, the workers remain home. There
are usually parades and decorations in the cities and many
of the younger people go off to observe. The major events
are Double Tenth (the establishment of the Republic),
President Chiang Kai-shek's Birthday, the Birthday of Con-
fucius, and Restoration Day (the return of control over
Taiwan to the Republic of China).

The Monthly Religious Cycle

796 In accordance with the lunar calendar, there are two
pairs of worship days each month devoted to gods, ancestors,
and the Good Brothers which also serve to punctuate the
calendar with religious events. One pair falls on the first

796 and fifteenth and the other, on the second and sixteenth.
996 Some villagers claim the first pair is for gods, soldiers,
463 and their horses and the second, for the Good Brothers but
there is much disagreement over this contention. There is
agreement that the first pair is primarily for worship by
farmers and the second, for worship by businessmen. Most
village households worship on one pair of days or the other
but no household worships on all four days in any one
month. If a household worships on the first day of the
pair, it always worships again on its corresponding mate,
i.e., if worship is made on the first day of the month,
there will be worship again on the fifteenth, but not wor-
ship on the second or sixteenth, etc. However, a few
households alternate the pair of holidays each month. For
example, the Liao Chin-wei family who operate both a farm
and a store worship on the first and the fifteenth of one
month and on the second and sixteenth of the next.

796 In the past, most Sanlei families tended to worship
178 on the first and fifteenth but currently, there is an in-
crease in worship on the second and sixteenth accompanying
the growing importance of business and mining. In the
clothing factories, the owners provide the workers with a
free lunch on the second and sixteenth of each lunar month
as part of the ritual worship activities even though the
factory itself is operating in terms of the solar calendar.
Presently, over eighty-five per cent of the households in

796
[178] Sanlei worship on one or the other pair of days regularly.

The worship activities on these days do not seriously interfere with the normal work activities but most farmers usually quit work a little early. The family will have a big dinner with rich food although guests are extremely rare. After dinner, there is a longer leisure time in the evening as compared with a normal day and instead of performing any constructive tasks, almost everyone just sits and chats.

The first of the monthly-cycled days of the year (the fifteenth day of the first month) and the last of the monthly-cycled days (the sixteenth day of the twelfth month) are major holidays.

The Weekly Cycle

177
178
527
[805] The growing importance of the week of seven days, Sunday in particular, is strong evidence of Westernization in Taiwan and its penetration into Sanlei Ts'un. There was a traditional ten-day week in China but few living villagers were aware of its details or operation. Almost every villager could quickly name the current day of the week according to the Western calendar when asked. Although there were no Christians in Talei Li according to villagers, Sunday has become a special day with greatly reduced productive work [369] activities. This is related to the fact that many business places are now closed on Sundays so the workers who live in the village stay home while many residents in the city

478

177
178
527
369
come to the village to visit. Villagers, in turn, visit relatives who live in the city more often on Sunday than any other day.

There were a number of different factors contributing [511] to the institutionalization of the Western week. The li school, in accordance with national directives, operated full days Monday through Friday and a half day on Saturday with Sunday, a school holiday. Several of the mines were closed on Sunday as were all but one of the factories where villagers were employed. Many of the businesses and stores in town and city were also closed on Sunday. Thus, Sunday has become a day of rest and few farmers now work a full day on Sunday. Except during the busiest season, there are few labor exchanges on Sunday and few farm workers are hired on Sunday. Most farmers who do work on Sunday are only working on their own fields.

517
527
571
882
Village young people often go off to town on Sunday, to the parks, the theaters, the zoo, and merely to walk around and see things. Where boys do meet girls for the secret dates which would be disapproved by parents and village elders, they are usually arranged for Sunday afternoons when both are most likely to have available leisure time.

[574] As previously stated, migrants to the city often come back to the village for visits on Sunday and more recently, villagers are going to the city to visit relatives and friends now living there.

The Function of Religious Holidays

121
461 There have been innumerable anthropological accounts of the significance of religion and religious events in community life in such areas as intensification of normative standards, promotion of community solidarity, etc. Often seemingly overlooked are the effects of religious holidays in promoting work efficiency. Ever since the Hawthorne studies in the United States in the 1930's (Landeberger, 1958), industrial engineers and sociologists have recognized the importance of work breaks, short periods and full days alike, in increasing output. Although breaks seemingly mean a loss of gainfully employed man hours, output increases on the level of unit man hours as would be expected but more important, in total as well. That is, a man works fewer hours but produces a larger output if he has sufficient work breaks. Although this latter effect was surprising at first, it is now clearly recognized and accepted.

121
466
464 In a study of farm unemployment, C. K. Wu and T. K. Lee (1963) estimated that about 19 per cent of the total (potential) labor units and 24 per cent of the available labor supply in the early 1960's in Taiwan were unemployed. However, not all these people could be removed from the labor force without a deterioration in production because of the seasonal nature of farm activities (Koo, 1968:27-43). As previously stated, in Sanlei, at certain times of the year, there is a shortage of man power. Nevertheless, the

121 original figures of Wu and Lee (1963) are based on some
466 assumptions which I feel to be unreasonable as well as others
464 which are sound. They assume each adult male constitutes a
full labor unit with each female and child counted as a per-
centage of a full unit. The figures appear reasonable in
village terms as is their allowance for housekeeping labor
requirements which are related to the size of the house-
hold.

121 However, I do not feel that their estimate of the
466 working hours bears sufficient relationship to reality.
Wu and Lee assume (1963) and Koo agrees (1968) that an
adult male is expected to work ten hours each day for 330
days per year. Both the number of hours in the normal work
day and the number of working days in the calendar year ap-
pear high on the basis of my observations in Sanlei Ts'un.

464 The normal workday in the village was about eight
461 and a half (8-1/2) hours. Only in the very busiest seasons
was the work day any longer. All hired labor was figured on
the 8-1/2 hour day with an uncompensated period for lunch.
Lunch breaks were longer in the warm weather so that most
villagers had sufficient time for a short nap in the middle
of the day. Men took naps more often than women. As pre-
viously described, there was a considerable amount of labor
exchange and any one day's labor was considered the equiva-
lent of any other day's labor no matter what the task. How-
ever, in the busiest seasons, people did work overtime but

466 the extra hours were not compensated on an hourly basis.
461 Rather, work went on until dark (with a dinner break) and the day's labor was counted as a long day. It had to be repaid with either another long day or a regular day plus something extra such as an afternoon of a second day. Even when working on his own fields, a man would not average ten hours a working day over an extended period of time as assumed in the above described research project.

461 The work year of 330 days, allowing 35 holidays, also appears to be rather high. As described above, there are regularly scheduled religious holidays which yield about 15 days per year when there is no work. There are periodic but unscheduled holidays which add another two days per year to the vacation schedule. Life crises events such as funerals and weddings also detract from the regular work schedule for funerals take at least one full day and weddings another. Weddings are usually scheduled such that they fall in a relatively slack agricultural period. In Sanlei, the weddings and funerals of both relatives and neighbors are usually a customary obligation. Also, there are some regular reductions in work activities related to the bi-monthly worship days and on Sundays. In all, it appears that the number of regular work days in a single year, given a high demand for labor would still be less than 330.

461 There was a second method employed in examining the
461 normal number of work days. Some 11 men are full-time

461 miners at a mine which operates seven days per week the
466 year around and pays on a piece-work basis. The owners encourage the men to work every day all year except for the three days mines close for Lunar New Year. I reviewed the records and found that full-time miners from the village area averaged 308 days per year, 9 hours per day, in spite of the fact that the number of days they could work was unlimited. The men's estimates of the number of days worked usually were 26 to 28 per month, a figure that would closely agree with actual yearly records. Additionally, several full-time farm laborers with good reputations for hard work were checked (men who owned or rented no property) and in each case, they averaged about 26 or 27 days work per solar month, once again yielding a figure near that of miners, just over 300 work days per year.

461 The evidence from Sanlei Ts'un, admittedly a small
182 untypical sample of all Taiwan, suggests that the assess-
[466] ment of underemployment in rural Taiwan may be overestimated. Even when unlimited work is available, few men approached the norm suggested above of 330 ten-hour days. The average seems to be about the equivalent of a nine-hour day six-day week, less national holidays. This does not deviate too far from the schedule found in the United States 30 years ago. I would suggest that this kind of schedule may approach the maximum period of time that a man can perform on a job at the highest levels of efficiency .

461 over extended periods of time. Functionally, there is like-
182 ly to be some culturally specified alternative to provide
such a proportion of relief time from a potential seven-day
work week at twelve hours per day, a period for renewal and
relaxation. In China, the traditional alternative is pro-
vided through religion as it is in many other parts of the
world. Due to the nature of all functional explanations,
it is not possible to specify why some other alternative
could not have served as an adequate substitute.

The Yearly Work Cycle

316 Those work activities unrelated to agriculture are
221 spread relatively evenly across the year. For example,
mining is approximately the same all year, only slightly
higher production is required during the cold weather.

221 Listed below by month is the yearly cycle of agricultural
241 activities with an approximate indication of the general
need for labor. In order to promote continuity, the cycle
is started with February which comes closest to marking a
natural starting point.

243 February--Busy. Prepare paddy fields and transplant
245 rice seedlings. Fertilize orange orchards.

221 March, April--Light. Fertilize and weed paddy fields
twice. Prepare rice seed bed for second crop. Weed
tea plants and commence heaviest harvest. Weed orange
trees and apply insecticide.

May, June, Early July--Very Busy. Harvest first rice
crop. Prepare paddy fields and plant second crop.
Weed tea fields and continue harvest. Weed orange
trees, fertilize, and apply insecticide.

484

243
245
221

Late July, August, September--Light. Fertilize, weed, and apply insecticide to paddy fields twice. Fertilize and cultivate orange orchards. Weed tea fields and continue harvest.

[244]

October, November--Very Busy. Harvest second rice crop. Prepare fields and plant vegetables. Complete last small harvest of tea.

244
245
221

December and January--Moderate. Harvest vegetables and oranges. Plant and transplant tea bushes and orange trees.

241 The above schedule provides a general picture of the agricultural activities devoted to the major crops but there are many other minor crops which are not listed. Vegetables are planted, fertilized, weeded, and harvested during various periods all year around. For example, onions and leeks are planted and harvested during nine different months of each year. Finally, during any slack period, trees may be cut down and left on the ground in open piles until sufficiently dry to be carried down the mountainside for home consumption or sale.

182
464 Currently, the ecological adjustment is such that the demand for labor is spread relatively evenly over the entire year. There are now only two periods lasting a total of about eight weeks when there are serious labor shortages and conversely, only about six or seven weeks when there is a moderate to heavy labor surplus.

178
244
243
464 When the village was first established, the main crops were subsistence vegetables and paddy rice. Rice production in a double cropping area necessarily involves large seasonal variations in the demand for labor.

485

178
245
464
Tea was added later and since the demand for labor inputs in tea production tend to occur during relatively slack periods in the cycle of rice production, tea helped even out the demand for labor.

Oranges, which were added more recently, are a second leveling factor in the seasonal labor demands because the date when most required work such as fertilizing, spraying with insecticide, and weeding must be completed is not crucial to eventual production quantities. This technology is unlike that for rice which permits few delays in many steps without serious reduction in the eventual size of the harvest. The only requirement in citrus cultivation for large prompt labor inputs comes during the harvest season which falls in December and January when both rice and tea cultivation activities are either non-existent or are at their slackest periods.

178
562
464
245
464
This ecological and technological adjustment has been a prime factor contributing to the elevation of the status of women. Some agricultural tasks such as tea picking and tea sorting are considered appropriate only for women, and other tasks such as orange orchard weeding are considered appropriate for either men or women. Because there are jobs such as coal mining readily available for mature men in the immediate area around the village, there has been little surplus of male labor exerting pressure to replace women with men. In the younger age groups, the

178

562 operations of the cloth and clothing factories around Taipei
464 which require relatively unskilled labor inputs of a nature
[288] which can be accomplished by women, again draw on the female
labor pool in Tabei Li. Together, these various factors
function to make female labor valuable and this fact neces-
sarily means a level of relative economic independence for
females. Moreover, in terms of agricultural activities
alone, the addition of citrus cultivation to tea cultiva-
tion has made possible employment for women every month of
the entire year since the demands of each have very little
overlap. The combination covers the entire year fairly
evenly.

The Daily Cycle

512 From the above facts, it can be seen that there is
[22] no such thing as a typical day in Sanlei Ts'un. There are
seasonal differences due to the great differences resulting
from the major agricultural activities being performed at
[796] the particular moment in time. There are at least 60 special
[527] religious holidays each year, some relatively minor, when
the daily pattern of behavior varies and a few national
secular holidays as well with similar varying behavior pat-
[891] terns. Monday through Fridays differ from Saturday which
has a half-day of school instead of a full day and even more
from Sunday when the school and several factories are
closed. A greater number of visitors come to the village on
[891] Sunday and most farmers reduce their work loads. The summer

512 vacation period for the school alone marks significant
[87] changes in the patterns of behavior. Perhaps unexpectedly,
mothers have more free time or at least more time to work
in the fields during the school vacation periods because
older children are available to care for their younger sib-
lings. In spite of these problems, I will attempt a de-
scription of a "normal" day which might be described by a
villager as a day when nothing much happened.

Midnight marks the beginning of the day. The village
[354] is very quiet as no one appears to be awake. In almost all
village houses, a single low-wattage bulb is burning in the
kung t'ing or kitchen. Through the night, few people will
[514] be seen. Four or five men may go outside to eliminate but
most people use a chamber pot in the bedroom or kitchen if
[625] it is necessary. During the New Year season or after a rob-
bery, two men of the I Ching carrying sticks very quietly
walk through the village every half hour. Periodically,
their muted voices may be heard together with the other two
men on the patrol and the female who prepares the tea and
noodles in her kitchen. The village is quite dark since the
bulbs emit but little light and the surrounding countryside
is even darker, punctuated here and there with the scattered
glows of light in surrounding villages.

The first man to arise is the vegetable peddler at
[443]
[515] 3:30 a.m. After a quick wash with cold water in the kitchen
[262] and a meal of cold rice covered with pickles and spicy fish,

512
[318] he peddles off in his three-wheeled cart alone for the city
[262] to arrive in the market by 5:15 a.m. About 4:00 a.m. the
[443]
[782] second man in the village is up and quickly heads for the temple carrying incense sticks and flowers for worship in fulfillment of a pledge to the gods for relieving his prostrate trouble. The noise he makes starts others stirring.

[314] As people rise, they usually head for the outhouse and then
[515] into the courtyard or kitchen to wash. The wash water is at air temperature and therefore, often chilly in the cool morning at dawn's light.

[296] By 4:30 a.m., the first group of six women is off to
[264] the river to wash clothes together. They have eaten a handful of cold rice and will prepare and eat breakfast after they return about an hour later. By the end of the next
[264] hour, there are few silent households. The active married women are up first and after ablutions, start the fire for breakfast although about one of five families will have a cold meal. Women are followed by the children, awakened by the noise in the kitchen. Few people are ever formally called and told it is time to get up. The active mature men are last to arise except for the occasional old person who may sleep until very late.

512
782 Before breakfast, a representative for each household worships in the lung t'ing with incense sticks. This is supposed to be the oldest male in the household but it appears that women perform the task about half the time. Although

512 people say that the entire family should gather to observe
782 the ceremony, rarely is anyone other than the worshipper and
512 small children present. Instead of eating breakfast at the
264 table in a group, as each person is ready, he takes a bowl
to the cook who dishes up his food and provides a cup of
tea, hot only if a fire has been made. Breakfast is eaten
wherever room is available, often while squatting in the
courtyard.

512 The first bus passes through the village at 5:45 a.m.
466 picking up two men heading for work in town. By 6:30 a.m.,
[494] all the people who work in town will be gone, two girls on
[493] bicycles joining the two on their way from Tzulei, two
factory trucks each picking up their complements of girls,
[316] and the remaining men off to town on bicycles. About this
time the miners walk off towards the mines so as to be
[241] ready for work down in the shaft at 7:00 a.m. Those working
in the fields, men and women alike, leave at various times
depending on travel distance so as to reach the work loca-
tion by 7:15 a.m. at the latest.

512 All the children in the fifth and sixth grade and
871 half of those in the first through fourth grade head for the
Erhlei school which starts at 7:15 a.m., joining the chil-
dren who are walking from Tzulei. Since anyone late to
school will be punished with a whipping, most children ar-
rive early and play on the slides and in the school yard
while waiting.

512 Until lunch-time, the village is relatively quiet. The only people to be found are the babies and small children, half the children in the first four grades, a few young unmarried females, old people, and the mothers who are not working in the fields, most of them with small [857] children to tend. The children are playing but seldom stray far from home. Some women are off to do their washing for very few women leave it until the afternoon. Two work teams of older women are busy sorting tea, a few small children playing on the ground beside them.

[494] Every hour or so the public bus rambles through the village to the end of the line and back. After the first couple runs, about two to five people will get on and the [443] same number get off on each passage. All during the day a few women will be going to Hsin Tien to shop. Skipping one return trip allows a woman a full hour for the market, sufficient time to buy for herself and three or four others as [494] is usual. Also, the Communication Bureau bus periodically passes through the village as well as an occasional truck, empty on its way through, brimming over with coal on its [857] return. Children collect the coal spillover from the roadside for the kitchen.

512 By 11:30 almost everyone is home for lunch. Only
264 when working on rice harvesting and planting or when working in fields far up in the mountains do people carry a lunch [262] like the miners in a flat tin can. Lunch is invariably hot,

512 usually including a soup accompanied by rice or sweet po-
264
[262]atoes and vegetables. Lunch is eaten in a manner similar
512 to breakfast, individually in scattered locations. In the
hot weather with its longer days, most field workers have
a nap after lunch but in the winter with short days, the
[87]workers return to the fields within an hour. The school
children have an hour for lunch and in the afternoon, the
other half of the first four graders attend.

[574] The afternoon period is similar to the morning. Most
[476]women have their washing completed now and there is more
visiting and more time for cooperative shared tasks such
[54]as grinding rice or preparing soy sauce. About two times
per week, a group of women go into Hsin Tien to a movie.
However, the groups vary so that no one sees a movie more
[99]often than once a month or so. By 4:00 the children are
[85]home from school. They have few tasks other than feeding
[23]the farm animals. Many women turn over the care of the
[313]small children to the older students so they can go to the
[358]mountains for a load of wood. The temple caretaker has
cleaned the temple and is busy now chasing children out who
are running and making too much noise.

There have been a few more people in the village
than the above might suggest. Since fields are scattered,
some men pass through the village on their way from one
[313]task site to another. A man hauling dry wood from the moun-
tain will make six or seven stops during the day. The

The

512 vegetable peddler returned by 10:00 a.m., sold out the last
443 of his load, had a nap, and will work in the fields most of
the afternoon. Typically, five or six salesmen will come
through the village selling cloth, clothes, medicine,
brooms, etc., directly to householders or to call on the
two village stores. The pig man sells to fu every other
day, and when he arrives people gather to make purchases
and gossip. The village secretary from Hsin Tien visits
[624] about three times each week and the policeman from Pouti
[625] rarely misses wandering around part of each day.

512 Dinner time varies, later in the hot weather, but
264 usually around 5:30 to 6:30 p.m. Dinner is always hot and
is the meal most likely to be eaten as a family unit while
gathered around a table but since some families are large
and many tables are small, the women who cook often eat
while standing up in the kitchen and the children, who
[855] started earlier, squat in the doorway. A small child will
sit in someone's lap and be helped with food and encouraged
to eat. Evening worship is performed in the same manner as
[782] morning worship. On religious holidays it always precedes
dinner but on other days it may either be before or after
dinner.

[356] After dinner, women will clean the kitchen while men
512 repair tools. Both men and women who work in the fields
461 will plan and discuss the next day's activities for few
people enjoy working alone and even when labor is not being

493

512 exchanged or hired, men with small contiguous plots will
461 plan activities so there is someone nearby working too so
that during periodic breaks, they can enjoy a cigarette
and conversation together. Even men who are usually silent
claim to feel more comfortable when someone else is around.
As I observed village activities over a period of time, I
was struck by the fact that it was quite rare for someone
to be isolated for more than a few minutes. The detailed
plans made in the evening to work near each other indicate
this fact is by design.

512 After cleaning up the kitchen and preparing for
515 breakfast the next morning, women have a little leisure
[855] time before giving the small children baths in the kitchen
and putting them to bed. Slightly older children are bathed
and dressed in pajamas but they may play quietly or study
for a while before going to bed. The older children and
adults now take their baths in approximately age order al-
though unmarried adults are often far behind. Fires would
rarely be specially started for hot water so that if one
desires hot water for his bath, he must take it soon after
dinner, making use of the stove which is hot from cooking
dinner.

512 After bathing, there is leisure time for recreation.
561 Several conversational groups tending to consist of age-
571 graded neighborhood clusters gather in the courtyards. Once
517 past age 30, most husbands and wives will be in the same

494

517

512 conversational groups. About thirty or forty people will
511 be watching the television set in front of the store and
purchasing an occasional cold soda pop or ice cream. There
will be several groups of single young women sitting in one
member's bedroom conversing. Most of the young unmarried
512 men in the village will be together in a single group. Few
people will be in town since the last bus leaves at 6:30
p.m. and the road at night by bicycle may be dark and dif-
[443] ficult, especially in the rainy season. The last visitor
to the village is the man peddling the delicatessen cart
from which villagers purchase the fish and pickles to ac-
company breakfast in the morning.

[358]

About 10:00 p.m., the caretaker locks up the temple
and by 10:30 p.m. most people are in bed. The stragglers
are usually the young unmarried men or a few middle-aged
married men who have been to the drinking place down the
road. If one of the bi-monthly medicine shows is in town,
everyone will stay up later. By 11:30 p.m. the village is
usually silent once more and another day is about ready to
commence.

CHAPTER X

SUMMARY AND CONCLUSION

128
362 The immediately preceding eight chapters constitute a brief ethnographic description of Sanlei Ts'un with particular attention focused on the role of women. The role behavior of women is quite unlike the brief description abstracted from traditional accounts which was considered in the first chapter. Provided below is a more extensive review of the traditional literature followed by an explicit contrast with the observed female behavior patterns in the subject village. Although part of the differences between observed and expected role behavior may be due to regional variations and the cultural and social changes accompanying modernization and industrialization, it will be demonstrated that the previous case for the lowly position of women has been exaggerated. The last section of the chapter explores possible reasons for the errors and concludes with a suggestion for further research.

Traditional Accounts of the Position of Women

114
562 Perhaps the best manner to capture the flavor and fact of traditional accounts explicating the role of women

114 in Chinese society would be to provide a series of direct
562 quotations from the literature. Although these have been
taken out of context, efforts have been exerted not to dis-
tort the impression created by the original author. Al-
though many of the statements may appear to be over-simpli-
fied and absolutistic, i.e., without exception, the fault
is that of the author and not mine. The eight examples
are as follows:

The domination of age over youth within the old-style family was matched by the domination of male over female. Chinese girls in the old days were more likely than baby boys to suffer infanticide. A girl's marriage was, of course, arranged and not for love. The trembling bride became at once a daughter-in-law under the tyranny of her husband's mother. In a well-to-do family she might see secondary wives or concubines brought into her household, particularly if she did not bear a male heir. She could be repudiated by her husband for various reasons. If he died she could not easily remarry. All this reflected the fact that a woman had no economic independence. Her labor was absorbed in household tasks and brought her no income. Peasant women were universally illiterate. They had few or no property rights. . . The inferiority of women imposed upon them by social custom was merely one manifestation of the hierarchic nature of a society of status. . . While male and female were both necessary and complementary, one was by nature passive toward the other. Building on such ideological foundations, an endless succession of Chinese male moralists worked out the behavior pattern of obedience and passivity which was to be expected of women. These patterns subordinated girls to boys from infancy and kept the wife subordinate to her husband and the mother to her son. Forceful women, whom China has never lacked, controlled their families by indirection, not by fiat (Fairbank, 1958:30-1).

In China, the expression "an article on which money has been wasted" is a common paraphrase for designating a young girl; and the most ideally perfect daughter, vis. she who possesses the virtues of the

114
562 eighteen Lohans according to a Chinese proverb,
is not equal to a club-footed son. . . A Chinese
woman may even be repudiated by her mother-in-
law; a Chinese who admits to having beaten his
wife to death escapes any penalty if his pretext
for doing so is that she failed in her filial
duty towards his parents. . . A Chinese husband
would blush if he were surprised in the act of
conversing with his wife. In a group composed of
several couples, the women always keep to them-
selves and the men do the same without any com-
munication between the two sides or any sign
which would betray who is married to whom. . .
If the Chinese woman has no son and gives birth
to a series of daughters her existence in the
home becomes a hell (Herbert, 1965:221-36).

Girls have been generally regarded as much less
valuable than boys and sayings in common circula-
tion appraise sons as infinitely preferable to
daughters. One such proverb states in effect
that the most beautiful and gifted girl is not so
desireable as a deformed boy. . . Among the very
poor, the killing of female infants has been by
no means unknown. While statistics are lacking,
it seems, indeed, to have been very common. . .
In ordinary homes, especially of most of the
farmers and the poor, girls and women have led a
life of hard labor (Latourette, 1959:679-80).

The present position of woman in China is a heri-
tage of the remote past, as is illustrated by the
most ancient Chinese literature. . . The essence
of Chinese classical teaching on this subject is,
that woman is as inferior to man as the earth is
inferior to heaven; and that she can never attain
to full equality with man. According to Chinese
philosophy death and evil have their origin in the
Yin, or female principle of Chinese dualism, while
life and prosperity come from the subjection of it
to the Yang, or male principle; hence it is re-
garded as a law of nature to keep woman completely
under the power of man, and to allow her no will
of her own. The result of this theory and the
corresponding practice is that the ideal for women
is not development and cultivation, but submis-
sion. . . We must, therefore, regard the position
of women in China, as the ultimate outcome and a
most characteristic fruitage of Confucianism. In
our view it has been a bitter fruit (Smith, 1899:
305-6).

114
562 The low status of Chinese women whether in the family or in society is proverbial. In traditional Chinese fiction the female character was frequently introduced by the line "unfortunately she was born a woman." K'ang Yu-wei, the precursor of modern reformers at the end of the last century, listed being born a woman as one of the calamities of life. . . To hold women in general, and young and middle-aged wives in particular, to an inferior status where mistreatment abounded and even death lurked, the authority of the family was supported by all the repressive features of the traditional institution of arranged marriage. . . In addition to concubinage, which posed a constant threat against the wife, and the absence of freedom of divorce, which served to block the wife from a peaceful means of escape from an unpleasant situation, there were three other traditional limitations which applied not only in marriage but to the general status of women in Chinese society: loss of her name, seclusion, and lack of education (C. K. Yang, 1959:106-111).

The second element [in summarizing the culture of West Town] is what I call estrangement between the sexes. On the one hand this pattern prescribes sex inequality, and on the other it necessitates the elimination of all erotic expression. Both measures are means for subordinating the husband-wife relationship and enhancing the father-son relationship. In West Town we see an outright superiority of men over women. Not only are husbands above their wives, but brothers are also superior to their sisters. This inequality is implied in the life of the people and clearly stated and recognized by both sexes without reserve or hesitation (Hsu, 1949:241).

The low position of women in China is due to a combination of several economic and ideological factors. . . The traditional Chinese philosophy provided a theory of women's inferiority that was an ideological justification of her lower status in the society of imperial times, and helped to perpetuate it. . . Buddhism, in which woman is the personification of all evil, added new ideological propositions to the idea of woman's inferiority. For twenty-two centuries, hundreds of male and female Confucian writers wrote scores of books on the position of women and their role in family and society, and devised practical rules for their

562 education and conduct. With slight variations
114 all these books presented the same teachings. Obedience, timidity, reticence, and adaptability were the main virtues of women. Three rules of obedience to man shape a woman's life, "An unmarried girl should obey her father and elder brother, a married woman--her husband, a widow--her son." . . . The legal status of a woman was inferior to that of her husband. . . Chinese women had practically no property rights. . . It is not surprising that girls were the main, if not exclusive, victims of infanticide, which was practiced in the poor families of China from time immemorial (Lang, 1946:42-6).

A woman's social position in ancient China was even more deplorable [than her legal position]. Politically, she was a mere nonentity but socially, she was an inferior species of mankind--a human chattel, slave of men's caprices. Being considered inferior to men, she was regarded with indifference, if not with studied contempt, not only by the men but also by her own kind. Her birth was an unimportant event and even the name that was given her by her father at the time of her birth was not supposed to be known beyond the family threshold, and the education she received, or was entitled to receive, was negligible; for it was deemed improper for women to possess too much knowledge. . . The so called "Three Obediences and Four Virtues of Women," which have shackled the Chinese women for thousands of years, derive their origin from the belief in the superiority of men over women and from the attempt of the ancient moralists to hold women in lifelong subjection. By means of the three obediences a woman is constrained to obey the paterfamilias at home, to render obedience to her husband after marriage and to be obedient to her eldest son after the death of her husband. By means of the four virtues a woman is made to preserve her feminine qualities, to be gentle in disposition and pleasing in appearance, to be chary of speech, and to be assiduous in the performance of her domestic duties (Chiu, 1966:18-20).

An easily-provided larger listing of many more examples by other equally renowned authors with similar viewpoints and arguments would only provide quantitative rather than

114
562 qualitative changes for I feel the above sample is representative of a wide body of literature. The above authors are drawn from such fields as anthropology, history, religion, sociology, law, and philosophy and are members of such nationality groups as French, English, Chinese, Russian, and American. In each case the cited item was written after extensive field work in Chinese society or by a sinologist who has extensive familiarity with Chinese sources.

In spite of the fact that lengthy segments were used in order to preserve the author's intent, in all fairness to the cited individuals, it should be made patent that several did list exceptions to the dominant patterns. For example, although stressing that such women were exceptions, Herbert does state that China has had many female priests (1956:223), empresses (1965:225), and poets (1965:227). In a chapter solely devoted to what he describes as the degraded situation of women, Smith (1899:258-311) scatters about contra-indications such as in his discussion of noisy women and their "hen-pecked" husbands (1899:304-5). The anthropological accounts in particular appear much more sophisticated in this regard with a greater recognition of actual variation and a lesser emphasis on the ideal patterns.

In summary, China is usually described as patrilocal, patrilineal, and patriarchal. Females were always inferior to men and at birth, boys were desirable and appreciated

while girls were a sorrow. The practices of infanticide and the sale of children as servants or prostitutes usually involved only females and rarely, males. The arranged marriage was especially hard for a female because she lacked freedom of choice and her residence changed to a home in which she was a virtual stranger with little status, under the control of her husband's family, with her husband never permitted to champion her cause or show any public affection. Her essence was yin, acquiescent, passive, and dark as opposed to the male essence, yang, active masterful, and bright. All her life, a female was expected to be subordinate to males, in turn father, husband, and son. She was expected to be uneducated, obedient, submissive, untalented, economically useless,¹ unprotesting, subordinate, timid, reticent, and passive. 114 562

The Contrasting Position of Women in Sanlei Ts'un

The position of women in Sanlei Ts'un bears little resemblance to the patterns delineated immediately above which were abstracted from the traditional literature. This discrepancy might be explained on the basis it is due to the fact that the patterns presented in the traditional literature were inaccurate, Sanlei is deviant, or that social and cultural changes have been so great that the patterns which were accurate for an earlier period in history are no longer relevant. A few examples are listed below to illustrate that the first hypothesis (traditional patterns are 121 562

121 inaccurate) is true; although change is endemic, the data in
562 Sanlei is consistent with concrete data in the traditional
literature in spite of the many converse generalizations.

562 It is supposedly a Chinese value that women in tra-
871 ditional China should not be educated (Fairbank, 1958:30;
C. K. Yang, 1959:111; Chiu, 1966:19). Currently, education
in Sanlei village is compulsory for a full six years for
boys and girls alike. One of the three junior high school
graduations ever achieved by Sanlei residents is a female.
Even eighty years ago, two of the fifteen village children
[212] in school were girls. One of the original female settlers
was semi-literate and was said to possess a fine form for
[178] characters.² Although change to near equality of education-
al opportunity has occurred (See Chapter VIII), it was not
from an initial position of total denial of education for
females. Rather, females went from a minority position in
education to one of near equality with males.

We are unable to fully assess the nature of Sanlei
villagers' attitudes towards the education of women in the
[532] past but we can attempt an educated guess. Today for in-
stance, although it is felt that education is more important
for males, any man who goes beyond elementary school should
[53] not marry an illiterate woman. This belief is related to
the general proposition advanced in the section on marriage
(Chapter VIII) that spouses should not be extremely differ-
ent from each other in any major attribute³ such as

562 popularity, beauty, intelligence, wealth, etc. This proposi-
871
[391] tion was also strong in the past but we cannot be sure if
education at that time was one of the qualities designated
for minimal disparity.

562 We do have evidence from history and literature that
871
174 among the wealthier classes in society, there were many edu-
212 cated females. Indeed, Herbert points out that "in the
[565] Great Chinese Encyclopedia, out of 1628 volumes, 376 are de-
voted to famous women." Seven deal with "the literary pro-
ductions of women" (1965:227). This kind of evidence is
only partially supportive because the relationship between
the patterns of the Great Tradition of the wealthier classes
and the Little Tradition of the village is only problemati-
cal.

It is granted that there is still a disparity between
rates of literacy among men and women although the percent-
age of literacy historically was low for both. In a survey
conducted in North China in 1930 among 400 farm families,
Gamble found that the literacy rate of 25% among men age
41 to 50 was more than 30 times as high as the rate among
women in the same age bracket. These figures, suggesting
an educational system operating between 1890 and 1900,⁴
clearly indicate discrimination but do not suggest total
562 denial of educational opportunities for females. The dif-
871
182 ferences in rates may well merely reflect the uses to which
education could be put. Education was expensive in terms

562 of the cost of tutoring and in the loss of the labor units
871 for food-getting pursuits contributing to family sustenance.
192 A major goal of education was for the student to pass the
civil service examination and thereby acquire a government
position. Since the examinations and government positions
were both denied to females, there was correspondingly lit-
tle material advantages to be achieved by educating girls.
In spite of this lack of any opportunity to achieve economic
returns from an investment in the education of a female,
the figures furnished by Gamble do show many literate women.
Perhaps the point may best be illustrated by analogy. There
are three Michigan schools which teach adults how to drive
large highway trucks. Although none of the three discrimi-
nate against women, there are few female enrollees or grad-
uates (two of about 350 in 1968) because of the extremely
limited job opportunities for female drivers.

562 Another area of discrepancy between traditional lit-
593 erature and actual life revolves around the assignment of
superordination to male and subordination to female statuses.
There are strong statements in the literature that a female
is always subordinate to a male. At various stages in her
life cycle she is subordinate to father, then to husband,
and eventually to son (Fairbank, 1958:30; Smith, 1899:305;
C. K. Yang, 1959b:106-11; Hsu, 1947:241; Lang, 1946:42-46).
These three levels of relationship are each discussed below.

362 The literature suggests that boys had an easier life
593 than girls. In Sanlei, girls do work harder than boys, but
in general, are usually closer emotionally to mother than
boys. Fathers seem strained and formal in their interaction
with sons and more relaxed with girls; not a few men are
quite indulgent towards their daughters. According to Lang
(1946:29), "the mother was chia-tze, the symbol of kind-
ness, the father chia-yen, the symbol of dignity and stern-
ness" in the Chinese family.

Children in Sanlei, male and female alike, were ex-
[861] pected to be obedient to parents. Yet, child-rearing tech-
niques tended to be quite permissive and small children
often refused to carry out parental commands and the child
[581] who threw a temper tantrum was ignored. Many young adults
refused marriages arranged by parents, a few ran away but
quite often, they were able to assert their will and remain
[434] at home. Children who work outside their homes turn over
their money to parents at about the same rate whether male
[882] or female. Girls however, tend to be watched more carefully
and strictly but most girls are still able to exert consid-
erable influence and control over their own destinies.
Many girls show little hesitation to challenge parental
decisions as illustrated in connection with the previous
discussion of marriage, sex, dating, and work.

The converse of the above would be the relationship
between mother and son. It should be obvious that during

562 the stage of extreme dependence, while the boy is a baby,
593 the mother has absolute control and even later, during early
childhood, nearly absolute control, but the traditional literature does not seem to take cognizance of this social fact. Moreover, elements of the behavior pattern established between a son and his mother are likely to persist after the son reaches maturity as social scientists have established in the study of socialization and habituation. This latter fact probably has value in explaining the lesser amounts of conflict found in a patrilocal as opposed to a matriloca household which was discussed in the explanation of the postulates introduced in Chapter V.

114 Another element related to the above argument is found
562 in the requirement that the young must show respect for the
593 aged. The traditional literature frequently includes statements about the respect due from females to males and from
[34] young to aged in the same paragraph and even in the same
[888] sentence (Chiu, 1966:17; Fairbank, 1962:31) without ever confronting or considering the obvious fact that these two requirements are necessarily in conflict in the relationship between a son and his mother. A simple exercise in logic should make this clear but similar neglect of aspects of logic abounds in the literature.

[606] For a third example of this failure to follow through, note that after much discussion about the lowly status of women in one section of an article or chapter of

114
562
593
[606] a book, there will be a discussion of the stage of life in
which a Chinese woman comes into her own with high status,
i.e., when she is a mother-in-law with daughters-in-law to
supervise and a home to manage (Smith, 1899:277; Fairbank,
1962:31). There is an implied assumption, occasionally made
explicit, that a woman often possesses great power and
authority in the domestic sphere in spite of the fact her
husband may have sole control of external relations between
the household and the outside world. Once more the obscuri-
fication is continued in that the discussion focuses on the
relationships between the females within the home and neg-
lects the relationships between the older woman and her
husband and married son. For example, in an outstanding
work which stresses various relationships within the family,
Lang (1946) devotes a special section to each of the fol-
lowing roles or role relationships: Father and Son (26-9),
Mother and Son (29-30), Father-Daughter (30), Daughter-in-
law (47-8), Wife (48-50), Mother (52), Widow (52-3), Old
Man and his Married Son (229-31), Old Woman and her Married
Son (231-2), and Mother-in-law and Daughter-in-law (232-7).
The only one of these categories which might suggest the
relationship between a woman and her husband and son as com-
pared with her daughter-in-law in the same household is the
category, Old Woman and Her Son (231-2) but the topic is
neglected in this section and nowhere in the book does Lang
really confront the dynamics of this issue in a single house-
hold.

562
114
593 Assume an old woman does have the power in the domestic sphere which is implied in the literature and explicitly described for Sanlei Ts'un. Also consider our more recent awareness that the vast majority of Chinese households contain only nuclear families. The combination of these two factors makes it likely that some of the women's authority must be over men. There is no question about the fact that Sanlei has many domineering women and I have met many in Taipei. The traditional literature always describes some domineering women but terms them exceptions (Smith, 1899: 304; Fairbank, 1958:31).

Some of the literature explicitly suggests the duties of a male towards his mother in which her superiority is implicit. Confucius discussed the responsibility of a child towards both of his parents. He is said to have taught in the Hsiao Ching:

In serving his parents a filial son renders utmost respect to them while at home; he supports them with joy; he gives them tender care in sickness; he grieves at their death; he sacrifices to them with solemnity. If he has measured up to these five, then he is truly capable of serving his parents. . . . When parents are alive, to serve them with love and reverence; when deceased, to cherish their memory with deep grief--this is the sum total of man's fundamental duty, the fulfillment of the mutual relations between the living and the dead, the accomplishment of the filial son's service of his parents (Kublin, 1968:42-3).

Many generations of Chinese children were raised on "The Twenty-Four Examples of Filial Piety," short stories which serve as models for proper life, each emphasizing the duties of children to parents by example. In one story,

114 Kuo Chu, burdened with a wife, child, and mother to sup-
562 port in hard times with little prospects, sets out to bury
593 his child alive so that the child's food can be given to
the old mother. In digging the grave, a pot of gold is
discovered and the moral of course, is that proper filial
behavior will be rewarded. The great Chinese novels con-
stantly illustrate the same general theme. In All Men Are
Brothers, a victim speaks of his old mother rather than of
his wife or children in order to evoke an expression of
compassion or mercy from the robber.

562 However, the most important relationship under con-
593 sideration in this section is between husband and wife, one
in which the wife is supposed to be thoroughly dominated by
her husband. Most, but not all, brides in Sanlei Ts'un have
little to say and are clearly dominated by their husbands
and perhaps a mother-in-law if one is present in the house-
hold. By the time a woman reaches age 30 in Sanlei, she
usually has considerable power in her own home. Women take
major responsibility for raising children and play a con-
siderable part in structuring the day's activities, plan
the menus, do most of the shopping, and in many houses,
control the budget or substantial portions of it. Not a
few women are completely dominant in relationship to their
husbands.

Almost everyone pays lip service to the myth that
men are fully superior to women and concrete social action

562 also serves to maintain the pretense. A casual observer may
543 easily be fooled for in many cases, it appears that the vil-
lagers are actually fooling themselves. There is no common
kinship term that a man can use to address his wife. Until
the children are born, permitting tekonymy through them, a
man avoids using any term at all other than the equivalent
of "hey you." However, the wife can both address and refer
to her husband as "Lord and Master." While the idea of
subordination-superordination is conveyed by the term, it
may be used by a domineering wife as part of an order to
her husband to perform some task. To illustrate, Liao
Wei-yu (one of the men in the six-family compound described
in Chapter V), his cousin Liao Wei-I, and I spent about four
hours one afternoon sitting in his courtyard trying to re-
pair a tea presser. During the first three hours, his wife
sent Wei-yu on several errands such as fetching water,
bringing wood to the kitchen, putting up a bamboo pole for
drying clothes, etc., each time ordering the task in an im-
perious tone although the command was prefaced by the usual
"Lord and Master." Wei-yu complained to us, softly so his
wife would not hear, that to refuse her requests would only
cause trouble. After about three hours, the li secretary
stopped by to review some tax record changes with Wei-yu,
a village lin chang (neighborhood leader). Because the sec-
retary is an important official, the four of us went into
the kung t'ing and sat around the table while Wei-yu ordered

562 his wife to serve tea. She quickly complied, brewing a
543 fresh pot and poured the tea into our cups, eyes downcast
and meek. She came back a couple of times to ask if her
"Lord and Master" desired more tea. Immediately after the
secretary left, while we were still sitting around the
table finishing a cigarette before returning to the court-
yard to finish the job, the "Lord and Master" was sent by
his wife to immediately fetch two buckets of water from
the river. For the outsider (the secretary), Liao Wei-yu
is the master of his house; among his intimates and neigh-
bors, everyone knows his wife is the boss.

121 Questions by an anthropologist will evoke all kinds
542 of statements about the superiority of men and their author-
ity over women. However, if material is carefully elicited
and logically analyzed, a different picture is likely to
emerge. For example, achieved status with a strong tendency
for it to focus on the family unit rather than on the indi-
vidual is extremely important in Sanlei as it is in most of
562 China. In any discussion about the manner by which a family
577 achieves prosperity or success, much of the material will
593 relate to the importance of women. It is believed that a
woman can make a man work hard and it is her thriftiness
which allows a family to accumulate money and achieve pros-
[58] perity. A man will brag about his wife's ability to save
money and a woman's potentiality for thriftiness is an im-
portant attribute to be considered in selecting a bride.

562 The belief about the importance of a woman's ability to save
577 necessarily means she has some power or control over the
593 family budget and implies she also has the power to be ex-
travagant. Every story of financial success in the area
save one⁵ included a hard-working man and a hard-working
and thrifty woman in the cast of characters.

562 There was a corresponding belief that in bargaining,
437 a woman could always obtain the lower price which may have
been part of a self-fulfilling prophecy for everyone believed
it. Shopkeepers claimed that they asked the same high price
for certain items regardless of sex but they had two under-
lying basic acceptance prices, the lower one for women.
Men claimed women were better bargainers because they had
little fear of shaming themselves, i.e., they had little
"face" to protect.

562 This concept of prevention of shame contributed to
593 the difficulty of obtaining accurate data about money man-
agement. In spite of the emphasis on women's thriftiness,
men want to be known as the budget managers. However, on
several occasions while we were sitting around chatting in
an evening, a group of us decided to go down the road for
a glass of beer or wine. About half of the men had to go
home to get money from their wives first, even some of the
men who claimed complete financial control.

As previously explained, it is felt that a good wife
in Sanlei will be thrifty and will drive her husband to

562 work hard. Indeed, this role activity is considered neces-
593 sary for the family to achieve success. It appears to me
that the majority of Chinese husbands that I met were hen-
pecked, some obviously but others, less obviously. That
is, it has been explained that a woman makes her husband do
things but also praises his status as a man who is the
"lord and master" for all the world to see. This is not the
only report of the nature of family life in China which
114 finds many henpecked husbands. Hu Shih, for example,
562 strongly denies that the woman's position in the family has
593 in actual fact been nearly as low as commonly believed:

The position of women in the old family was never
so low as many superficial observers have led us to
believe. On the contrary, woman has always been
the despot of the family . . . No other country can
compete with China for the distinction of being a
nation of hen-pecked husbands (1934:104-5).

D. J. Lee, a popular columnist for the China News, a Taiwan
daily English-language newspaper, wrote that:

In no country in the world does one hear so many
stories of henpecked husbands as in China. . . No
husband can be henpecked unless the wife is the
supreme ruler of the house. . . It is also the
traditional belief of the Chinese that being hen-
pecked is a virtue, because henpecked husbands are
destined to be more successful in the world. After
all, as far as the husbands are concerned, a wife is
only a person who has the best interest of her hus-
band at heart. The truth is that the Chinese are
proud of being henpecked even if they are reluctant
to admit it (1967).

562 Let us repeat two of the innumerable stories of henpecked
593 husbands but with the understanding that humor suffers in
522 translation from one culture to another. Both of these

562 stories are considered extremely funny by the men and women
593 alike in Sanlei village:
522

A club for henpecked husbands was having a meeting one day. The wives of the members of the club got wind of it. Armed with brooms, clubs, sticks and things, they marched to the club to have it out with their husbands. Having been warned ahead of time, the husbands took to their heels and made good their escape. When the wives arrived, they found only the chairman had the courage to remain where he was. But when they took a good look at him, they found he was dead.

In an attempt to determine how many of the officials in his palace were henpecked, the Chinese Emperor summoned every married man in his palace to his presence. He ordered those who were henpecked to stand on the right side of the room and those who were not henpecked to stand on the left side of the room. Before long, the Emperor saw that they were all standing on the right side of the room with two exceptions--one man chose the center and one man chose the left side.

"What made you choose the center?" the emperor demanded of the man who was neither on the left nor right side.

"Your Majesty, I didn't know which wife you meant," was his reply.

The Emperor then turned to the man on the left, "Do you mean to tell me that you are the only man in my entire court that is not henpecked?"

"No sir," he replied. "When I was leaving my house this morning, my wife warned me not to go along with the crowd!"

562 The above discussion of many domineering wives and
593 henpecked husbands is largely based on an assumption (all
591 houses are patrilocal and supposedly patriarchal) that makes it extremely difficult to argue convincingly. The assumption is simply not true. As we have seen for Sanlei and for other places wherever reasonably complete data are provided, there are significant deviations from this pattern. Many households were neolocal and a considerable

562
[591] number were matrilocal (see Chapter V). Moreover, many
[595] households have officially registered female heads. W.
562 Gamble points out that while "some authorities say that a
592 woman is never recognized as the head of a family," he
found that four per cent of the official heads among 5,225
families surveyed in 1930 in North China were females (1954:
28).

Whenever concrete data are provided in place of the
more frequent set of summaries or abstractions, the same
picture of numerous exceptions emerges. Too often, the ex-
ceptions have been simply dismissed, even when the excep-
tions are more numerous than the ideal dominant pattern.

The numerous exceptions to the normal patrilocal
male-headed households found in any Chinese village pro-
vided alternative models for the behavior of women living
in the traditionally structured households. If all women
were living in the same kind of structural situation, there
would likely be but few major role patterns. In fact, in
Sanlei, there were women who were heads of households (with
and without living husbands), women living in extended
families, nuclear families, and stem families, etc. Since
women's work groups are quite intimate and living conditions
are such that no one has much privacy, everyone is soon
aware of the content of each other's role relationships.

562 Outside the household, women are undoubtedly inferior
to men in Sanlei Ts'un and probably in most of China as

562 well as illustrated by the fact that they have no "face" to protect and that only men were admitted to the traditional examination system. There are many notable exceptions however. Many women hold high political offices in Taiwan today and throughout history, there have been periodic Chinese empresses as rulers of the kingdom and more often, females existing as powers behind the throne, engaging in palace intrigues and influencing men.⁷¹ To my knowledge, only one period in Chinese history prior to the present was witness to significant efforts to establish the equality of women to men. During the Taiping rebellion, the rebels claimed that:

Women, like men, . . . could take the state examinations and could hold civil or military offices; there were special female contingents in the Taiping army. Foot binding, so common among the higher classes since the twelfth century, was strictly forbidden, as was prostitution; white slavery and rape was punished by death. Monogamy was obligatory; women and girls who did not have the protection of male family members were particularly taken care of (Franke, 1958:47-64).

Both the Nationalists in Taiwan and the Communists on the Mainland, following the lead advocated by Sun Yat-sen, are promoting the establishment of the equality of women.

562 As we have seen, there are several females numbered
716 among the most important dieties in the Chinese pantheon of gods. It appears that currently, two of the most important gods in Taiwan are females, Kuan Yin and Ma Tzu. The degree of emphasis on female gods in China is revealed by the fact that Kuan Yin is the Chinese name for the male Indian god
A (This should be footnote 6--Analyst)

562 Avalokitesvara who "hears the complaints of mankind" (Eich-
776 orn, 1964:192). Although originally male, in about the
eleventh century in China, Avalokitesvara becomes a female
divinity who is the embodiment of beneficence (Eichorn,
1964:192).

562 In the practice of religion, although the majority
771 of religious functionaries are men, there have always been
a number of temples and monasteries staffed entirely by
women. In Sanlei, as in most other Chinese villages, women
actually perform much of the ritual activities in spite of
the value which specifies that they should be performed by
men, especially the required ritual. One merely has to ob-
serve celebrants in any Chinese temple a few hours to find
that a majority of the worshippers tend to be women.

Some writers have claimed that Confucius and Con-
fucian doctrines are responsible for the lack of esteem in
which Chinese women are regarded and the comparatively low
position they are said to have in society (Smith, 1899:
303-6; Lang, 1946:42-6; Straelen, 1936:43) but the evidence
is not certain. O'Hara, for example, cites a great body of
Confucian teachings supporting the opposite position (1955;
1963). For example, O'Hara cites the stories of Confucius
and his relationships with women (1955:163-4) in which he
acceded to their wisdom. Confucius also taught that wives
and favorite concubines were responsible for ruling the in-
ner apartments and encouraging men to behave properly (1963:
79-80).

562
462
178

There is some suggestion in the literature that the woman's status has been recently elevated only by her economic contributions to the family. This contention has been most strongly expressed in some of the Japanese material (Koyama, 1959). It should be realized that the traditional literature clearly indicates that rural girls and women have always worked hard and made valuable contributions, especially in the majority of the Chinese households which were poor. The two facts of the importance of economic contributions in elevating status and the large numbers of contributing working women, although juxtaposed in the literature, are rarely logically confronted with each other. That is, no one seems to consider the logical implications of the two sets of beliefs. This is not unlike the many other examples of this inconsistent behavior we have demonstrated. The number of women who were economic contributors was always probably high for it appears that about 85% of China's population were peasants living in villages and the majority were fairly poor. There is little concrete data on the extent of female participation in general farm work but it appears to be significant. In addition to these regular contributions to the family farm work, there were agricultural specialties in various parts of China which largely depended upon the labor and contributions of women such as the silk industry described by Fei (1939) and the tea industry discussed in Chapter III. For

562 many centuries, such industries which covered large areas
462 of China meant that women's work constituted valuable addi-
178 tions to the farm family income. Tawney (1932:117-149)
discusses the significance of female labor in cottage in-
dustry and in small factories but provides no percentage of
male to female contributions. If the recent argument that
the contributions of females served to elevate their status
is true, then the status was elevated long ago.

121 As stated in the beginning of this dissertation,
562 because the official historical record from the past con-
tains few facts about the peasant or the nature of rural
life, we are forced to make many assumptions and guesses.
One kind of clue may derive from fiction for the fiction
which tends to endure in any society usually embodies the
ethos and values of the society. An analysis of the part
females play in most of the classical stories reveals roles
usually quite unlike the traditional normative standards
abstracted from the Great Tradition but very similar to
what we have described for Sanlei. It is argued that the
ideal normative standards of the Great Tradition for women
in China are not in accord with the facts on the actual
level for both Great and Little Traditions nor on the ideal
level for the Little Tradition, i.e., peasant men seem to
prefer a wife to be somewhat thrifty and domineering so they
can achieve success.

There is a phrase in Shakespeare which seems
appropriate, "Methinks he doth protest too much." It is

(2) considered axiomatic in anthropology that there will be cul-
562 tural elaboration around items and problems which are con-
sidered important in the society. These items are subject
to fads and fashions, that is, they may change with time.
For example, pollution is recognized as a major problem to-
day in the United States and one finds an enormous amount
of material discussing it although twenty years previously,
there was little material in spite of the fact pollution
levels were nearly identical. The very great quantity of
literature in China, most of it written by men, encompassing
extended periods of time, devoted to the lowly position of
women, describing their proper relationships to men, setting
forth a multitude of laws to insure proper behavior, etc.,
may well be because women simply refused to behave as men
demanded. In other words, there is so much literature on
the ideal level because the behavior of women on the actual
level so rarely conformed.

In addition to the above, there appears to be a fre-
quent failure to come to grips with conflicting statements
in a single account with the goal of resolving them. This
failure may be related to the segmental personality, the
situation-centered phenomena described by Hsu (1953; 1963)
which I considered in Chapter VII. Several examples have
been presented in this section but to emphasize the point,
one more will be considered in some detail.

562
586
671 With regard to divorce, Ch'ing law states that a man can divorce a woman for seven reasons which are known as the Ch'i Ch'u or Seven Ousts: (1) Failure to serve the husband's parents and disobedience to them. (2) Failure to give birth to a son. (3) Dissoluteness of manners. (4) Jealousy. (5) Malignant disease. (6) Loquacity. (7) Larceny (Chui, 1966:61-8). Adultery is not listed here but was also a compelling reason for divorce. However, in the same law may be found the San Pu Ch'u or Three Non-Ousts, reasons why a wife cannot be divorced by her husband except on the grounds of adultery: (1) Mourned her husband's parents for three years. (2) Husband's poor family became rich after marriage. (3) She has no home to return to (Chiu, 1966:69-71). Chiu makes the point repeatedly that according to the law, men have "an exclusive right of divorce in ancient China" (1966:58). Even in divorce by mutual consent, traditionally permitted in China, the divorce is "effected in the name of the husband" (1966:60). Other scholars consistently agree, i.e., "divorce became exclusively the man's privilege and was practically equivalent to repudiation of the wife by the husband" (Lang, 1946:40).

However, a careful reading of Ch'ing law together with analysis of a sample of court decisions, does not support the above argument. All of the above facts are true but important omissions were made. The usual presentation implies the husband had the power to divorce his wife on the

562 grounds of any of the Ch'i Ch'u unless she possessed a San
586 Pu Ch'u. Additional laws clearly point out that not all
671 such divorces were optional, i.e., divorce was sometimes mandatory. For example, one law states, "He who fails to divorce a wife who has committed a crime involving a breach of the marital relationship, shall be subject to 80 strokes" (Chiu, 1966:95). In other words, if a woman violated one of the Ch'i Ch'u and her husband refused to divorce her, he would be punished by receiving 80 lashes. A wife who wanted a divorce could misbehave, accuse her husband of failure to divorce, and effectually cause him to be punished with 80 lashes. This could be repeated until the divorce was received. In other words, a wife did have the means to obtain a divorce but it was not as easy for her to initiate a divorce action as it was for her husband and the process also required her personal misbehavior. Both Chiu (1966:96) and Alabaster (1899:183) cite examples of mandatory divorces due to women's actions and Barclay (1954:210-37) suggests divorce was often initiated by females.

114 Most authors have ignored the above mandatory aspect
562 of traditional Chinese divorce law. When a few have con-
586 sidered it, the seemingly overwhelming insistence on the
671 primacy of male prerogatives results in an illogical or incomplete account. Lang for example notes three kinds of divorce including "divorce by the compulsion of the authorities" in one section (1946:40) but denies it in another

114
562
586
671

section (1946:44), "Divorce, as already stated was entirely a man's privilege." But let me illustrate in greater depth with an extensive quotation from an otherwise scholarly account by a distinguished Chinese jurist and educator, Dr. Vermier Y. Chiu, Ph.D., D.C.L., LL.B., M.A., Ph.B.:

... the compulsory clause in the Ch'ing law of divorce, which makes it obligatory on the husband to divorce his wife when the latter is guilty of an offence involving a breach of the marital relationship which by law requires a divorce on pain of receiving 80 strokes on the buttocks if he fails to send her away, is both obnoxious and absurd. Whatever its motive might have been--such as, for instance, a desire to adhere to the doctrine of the "Three Obediences and Four Virtues of Women," to preserve the unity of the clan and to maintain the harmony of the family--the clause referred to is fraught with misgivings. In the first place, it is inconsistent with the husband's exclusive right of divorce, and in fact it interferes with his discretionary power of exercising or not exercising that right. Secondly, if the husband is magnanimous and has forgiven his wife who has been guilty of a crime involving a breach of the marital relationship--such as adultery, for instance, which is considered an unforgivable offence tending to disrupt the unity of the clan, disturb the harmony of the family and bring disrepute upon the husband--it will be highly ridiculous for the law to interfere and punish him for his magnanimity and his readiness to forgive, both of which are virtues respected by every Chinese. Besides, the clause in question is likely to encounter difficulties in enforcement because any deliberate act tending to alienate the affection of husband and wife is deemed an iniquity in China and magistrates are not, in conscience, too ready to take the responsibility upon themselves to forcibly sever husband and wife who are determined not to be separated.

Dr. Chiu recognizes that the law is "inconsistent with the husband's exclusive right of divorce." However, instead of logically concluding that this necessarily means man does not have an exclusive right to divorce, he calls the law

562 "obnoxious and absurd" and "fraught with misgivings" which
586 it may well be but this is irrelevant to the fact of ex-
671 clusiveness. As is quite clear from the facts, man does not
[114] have exclusive rights to divorce in China and as far as I
121 am able to determine, he never did have exclusive rights
562 but since acknowledgement of other than complete right of
586 males to divorce would be inconsistent with the theme of
671 the Great Tradition which emphasizes the male prerogatives,
it is nearly impossible for the scholar to either confront
or overcome the exceptions. Instead, there will be a ten-
dency previously discussed in conjunction with cognitive
dissonance theory to either "deny the facts which are not
in agreement with the previous knowledge" as is illustrated
immediately above in the example of Chiu or to ignore the
contrary evidence entirely as in Lang's discussion of
divorce (1946).

Conclusions and Suggestions for Future Research

121 The Great Tradition of China maintains that the
362 social position of women is extremely low when compared to
the social position of men. I have demonstrated by means of
a case study of a contemporary Chinese community on Taiwan
that women do have a lower status than men but that the dif-
ferences are not as great as would be expected from a cur-
sory examination of the literature and moreover, that many
women play roles simply not permitted by the supposed value
system, i.e., household head, political official, potmaster,

121 school board official, etc. It is further demonstrated
562 that although changes leading to increased status for women
178 are in process, even at the time when the village was
originally established, women were playing roles similar
to those found today, i.e., the changes are quantitative
rather than qualitative in most respects. In summary,
Sanlei Ts'un is not congruent with the patterns portrayed
in the traditional literature.

121 As suggested at the beginning of this chapter, this
184 deviancy from traditional patterns might be explained on
562 the basis that Sanlei was not like most Chinese communities.
In order to refute these possibilities, Sanlei was tested
for its degree of uniqueness by comparing it with other
Chinese communities in space and time. Women's labor was
found to be important in most rural Chinese communities and
special tasks in cottage or factory industries or in connec-
tion with certain crops such as tea or silk were commonly
assigned to women in many other communities. In any major
attribute such as the value of labor contribution, family
size, practice of religion, etc., Sanlei did not appear to
be unique. That is, the village was a unique combination
but the general patterns were found in many other villages
whether separated by time or by space. Rates of some items
varied (when provided) but such practices as adopted-in
husbands, neolocal residence, girls fleeing to the city for
work, etc., were found everywhere. Sanlei did not seem

121 sufficiently different from other Chinese villages to sup-
184 port any claim that the research results were not reasonably
562 applicable to an understanding of women's roles for much of
China.

121 Therefore, an assumption was made that the null
562 hypothesis, i.e., the nature of women's roles discovered
in Sanlei were accurate and that the Great Tradition was
wrong was confirmed. Anthropological ethnographies and
traditional accounts were re-examined in minute detail for
supporting and refuting evidence. Only rarely did any gen-
eralized statement or summary support the assumption (Hu
Shih, 1934:104-5), but there were multitudes of concrete
facts which were highly supportive of the assumption. In-
deed, it appeared that the more carefully collected the
data and the more detailed and concrete the presentation,
the greater the support for my description of the role of
114 women in Chinese society. Whenever an author included both
121 good data and summaries pertaining to women's roles, the
562 two were often in disagreement as previously demonstrated.
However, in most cases, material which would bear directly
on the problem focus of the paper were simply omitted.

For example, in an excellent detailed Chinese eth-
nography of a single rural village, Pei discusses some of
the relationships with the chia, particularly in reference
to parents and children (1939:34-8) and daughter-in-law to
mother-in-law (1939:45-50). He discusses marriage

114 (1939:40-45) but has little material on authority patterns
121
562 between husbands and wives. In the discussion of the
daughter-in-law, Fei stresses her relationship with her
mother-in-law and completely ignores the role of the father-
in-law in the home and only briefly discusses the combined
role of son-husband in such as his duty to support his
mother in a conflict between the two women in the household
and his occasional failure to fulfill this obligation
(1939:49). Although Fei claims "the mother-in-law repre-
sents authority," this summary interpretation is not ex-
tended to the whole complex of roles found in the house-
hold but only to the daughter-in-law. Interestingly, he
does provide a typology of the 359 families in the village
(1939:29) and it appears that there are only 12 which cer-
tainly have a mother-in-law daughter-in-law relationship in
the home and 138 more which might have, i.e., only 12 house-
holds (3.3%) are fully extended and 128 households (38.4%)
have a married couple plus extended relatives, some of whom
may be mothers-in-law. In other words, he omits considera-
tion of the most common patterns of authority relationships
to be found in the home and concentrates on the role of the
mother-in-law dominating her daughter-in-law although this
pattern must be a minority pattern in village households.
Consideration of the omitted material might support the
ideals of the Great Tradition, i.e., male dominance, but I
suspect women in Kaihsienkung are or were actually playing
roles similar to those reported in Sanlei.

121
562 Now that the particular problem of conflicting interpretations of the nature of female roles in Chinese society has been identified, future field research hopefully will settle the issue. As more scholars focus on the role of women,⁹¹ both in current field research and reconsideration of previous data, I am sure that my delineation of the nature of women's roles will be confirmed.

121 There is a larger problem of which this whole case is merely an example, how did such errors of interpretation occur and what can be done to prevent similar errors in the future? The mechanism leading to misinterpretation was suggested in the introductory chapter and is briefly reviewed below:

1. Every civilization has a Great Tradition expressed in a literary record which sets forth the society's "ideal" value system.
2. Indigenous scholars and foreign anthropologists alike become steeped in the "ideal" culture delineated in the Great Tradition.
3. As explained by means of cognitive dissonance theory, it is extremely difficult to overcome a belief once it is internalized, i.e., evidence which is contrary to existing knowledge will be denied.
4. Therefore, it is likely that both evidence and conclusions derived from research in civilizations by "experts" in the culture will be unconsciously biased in favor of the Great Tradition.

In addition to the above, there is a kind of style in anthropological research which contributes to the problem: an emphasis on social organization and social structure. There has been an attempt to find and describe that which persists

^ [This should be footnote 8--Analyst]

121 in the dynamics of relationships between people. There is
no necessary causal relationship between a structural ap-
proach and an emphasis on "ideal" culture rather than
"actual" culture ¹⁰¹ with a concomitant dismissal of excep-
tions. Nevertheless, there tends to be a strong positive
114 relationship. According to Firth (1951:31), some anthro-
121 pologists have attempted "to see a social structure in sets
of ideals and expectations alone." Firth goes on to dis-
tinguish between structure and organization, largely on the
basis that social structure is timeless, persisting, and
not concrete (1951:31-40).

Marion Levy provides one of the most convincing dem-
onstrations of the anthropological emphasis on "ideal"
rather than "actual" culture patterns (1965:1-63). In
essence, Levy claims that the vast majority of the popula-
tion in any society is likely to spend the bulk of their
lives in elementary family units. Nevertheless, anthropolog-
ical accounts are likely to focus on the cultural ideal,
i.e., the unilineal extended or polygynous household, which
constitutes a small minority and seemingly ignore the domi-
nant (in terms of quantity) pattern.

12 I would suggest that the number of misinterpretations
could be reduced by the following techniques: (1) enumera-
tion of rates and cases, (2) a processural approach, (3) re-
duced emphasis on a single culture, and (4) comparative
field studies by non-specialists. Each is explained and
1 [This should be footnote 9--Analyst]

12 discussed briefly in turn below.

The enumeration of examples and/or rates would increase confidence in the author's abstraction or summary. For example, assume an investigator reports that the oldest male in the senior generation is usually the head of the lineage. Doubt derives from the term usually. The information that there were but three exceptions out of 225 surveyed lineages would produce a picture quite different from a statement there were 100 exceptions. We would feel the latter, at least, required explanation and the author would also likely feel some constraint not to dismiss the exceptions. I am also assuming the original author is particularly sophisticated and thorough for he added a key word in the original statement, "usually." In fact, we often find absolute statements in the anthropological literature while there are few absolutes in real social life.

To illustrate this point consider one example from Fei Hsiao-tung whom I regard as a competent and honest anthropologist. In one ethnography he claims an expanded family is "the basic social group in the village" (1939:27), but after discussing its importance, he does provide the data that this basic group constitutes less than ten percent of the village families (1939:28). It is only because of his thoroughness and enumeration of cases that we discover his apparent dismissal of 90% of the data in favor of the 10% which exemplifies the Great Tradition. It is

12. probably true that the extended family is the "ideal" social group in the village Fei studied. Fei's concrete data (1939:29) claiming 223 of 359 families contain a single married couple and 99 more do not include a married couple at all does not support his argument the extended family is "basic," at least on the "actual" level.

In the processural approach, extensive detailed case studies often provide enough data for a second investigator to make his own analysis rather than relying on the presented abstractions and more than one interpretation should aid in preventing errors. In each historical case of a restudy of the same community by different anthropologists, i.e., Lewis and Redfield or Goodenough and Fisher, contrary interpretations have been offered. Presentation of extensive detailed case studies which is characteristic of the processural approach permits a kind of restudy because it is one level closer to the actual social facts than is normally presented, i.e., observation rather than interpretation. In other words, there are social events which occur in the village; the anthropologist records these more or less completely in his field notes; and finally, he usually furnishes an interpretation in his presentation. In many accounts, we rely primarily on the interpretation of the anthropologist. In accounts featuring a processural approach, we often find the extended observational reports which furnishes, so to speak, an

12 examination of the author's field notes. These may still be incomplete, i.e., the reporter was a poor observer, or they may be unrepresentative, i.e., the author has not selected the proper cases, but nevertheless, they are less abstract and closer to reality than most former approaches.

As a secondary effect, the processural approach which includes "real" cases rather than mere abstract principles will aid in the misplaced concreteness on "ideal" culture.

The third and fourth suggestions are two sides of the same coin. A traditional belief in anthropology is that some research should be conducted in a society other than the society in which the investigator was originally enculturated. It appears that it may be possible for the anthropologist to become socialized in terms of the Great Tradition of the society under consideration to such an extent that he loses the objectivity which constituted the rationale for the original insistence on cross-cultural research. Yet, history and the Great Tradition are sufficiently complex to require years to master reasonably and so important that they cannot be ignored. This apparent impasse may be overcome by (a) developing specialists in great civilizations but strongly encouraging them to conduct field research in a third culture to provide comparatively-derived objectivity, and (b) encouraging anthropologists to conduct field research in a Great Civilization in which they are non-specialized. In other words, the

- 12 anthropological study of China would likely be improved if the Sinologist were more often to punctuate his research in China with a venture into another area such as India or Africa and if a specialist in Indian or African cultures were more often to conduct a field study in China. Too narrow a specialization in one society is probably dysfunctional for anthropology as it is currently practiced.

Finally, as anthropology matures, it is becoming increasingly concerned with research methodology and techniques. It is possible to go too far down this road which may become a blind alley as perhaps has happened in mathematical sociology and experimental psychology. Yet, we have probably not gone far enough. I believe the above suggestions would eventuate in improvements but I am not unduly pessimistic with reference to the ability of anthropologists specializing in great civilizations to break through with new interpretations of cultural material using current techniques. For example, in spite of the Great Tradition and the concomitant problems such as those discussed above, anthropological sinologists have recently "discovered" and reported the true composition of the Chinese family (Hsu, 1943), the importance of affinal relatives (Gallin, 1960), the nature of lineage organizations in South Eastern China (Freedman, 1958; 1965), and the nature and importance of clans and lineages in the urban areas (Fried, 1968). The

4:Barnett E-4,5 (1965-1967) 1970 AD5 Taiwan Hokkien AD5
Sanlei Ts'un.

534

12 nature of female roles in Chinese society presented in this
dissertation should add to our understanding of Chinese
society in spite of the contrast with "The Great Tradition."

NOTES

Chapter I: Problem and Approach

000

- 1 The role of women as portrayed in the traditional literature is abstracted more fully later in this Chapter and in Chapter X.
- 2 The concept of the "Great Tradition" and the "Little Tradition" are explicated in Redfield (1956).
- 3 Although the emphasis on the word typical was not in the original presentation, the term was used in the title and the introductory remarks.
- 4 The concept of "social distance" was developed by Bogardus to measure the degree of closeness or acceptance members of one group feel towards members of other groups (1958; 1959).
- 5 See Chapter V for a fuller discussion of the nature and function of sworn brothers associations which are perceived as pseudo-kinship groups.

Chapter II: The Setting

- 1 Although the population figures for Sanlei reflect the actual residence in the village, those for Talei Li are based on registration records in the township office and therefore are inaccurate as will be discussed.
[127]
- 2 "Restoration" is the official term employed to refer to the passing of control from the Japanese to the Chinese and the anniversary date is currently a national holiday celebrated with appropriate rituals.
[527]
- 3 For more complete accounts of the history of Taiwan, any of the following could be consulted: Davidson (1903), Grajdanzev (1942), Riggs (1952), Barclay (1954), Hsieh (1964), Kerr (1965), or Koo (1968).
- 4 Because of the Communication Bureau and a secret military base in the area, most government information was restricted for security reasons. Although we were not permitted to examine the local histories, an official briefly summarized them for us orally. Similar procedures were in effect for all other data except that we were permitted one day to examine household registration records for our two villages only in the township office and one day, the same for the land registration in the land office. Family histories are not very accurate but because of the shallow depth of the

000

- settlement, older informants had heard tales of the founding directly from the original migrants.
- 5 G. Myrdal explains that under British control, the petty officials at lower levels were usually members of the indigenous population and higher levels were British. There were also attempts to work through the previous political infrastructure. He contrasts this with the French rule in Vietnam where almost all levels were controlled by the French and therefore, had the highest ratio of foreign officials to indigenous citizens in the East (1968:123-4, 187-9). L. Mair (1969:32) also stresses indirect rule as a general British policy in most colonial territories. Taiwan appears intermediate between the French and British extremes for almost all government officials were Japanese, but the traditional local infrastructure of political control continued to be important.
 - 6 The pao chia system is based on a Chinese imperial edict in the eighteenth century but it is far from clear how it was applied for conflicting data exists from various areas (Freedman, 1958:65). It appears to be a system of units organized in hierarchical order to maintain control. In Taiwan under the Japanese, it functioned as follows: each chia (family or household) had a chia chang (head) who was responsible for the actions of its members. About ten contiguous chia were combined into lin headed by a lin chang (neighborhood leader) who was selected by a process of consensus and held responsible for the lin. About ten lin were combined into pao with an elected or appointed pao chang (head or mayor) responsible for communicating and carrying out government programs. Each pao consisted of about 100 chia. Since there were more than 150 chia in Talei Li, it was split into two pao.
 - 7 The average rate for all Europe is about 10 and for North America, just over 9 (United Nations Demographic Yearbook, 1966:103). The lower rate in Taiwan is primarily due to its relatively young population.
 - 8 Early in the twentieth century, flour was sacked in colorful cotton bags as a sales promotion device in the United States. The material was salvaged to make clothes which were very similar to underclothes now worn in Taiwan in terms of color and patterns.

Chapter III: The Economic Base

[192]¹ P'eng lai and tsai lai are both generic names for a large set of sub-varieties.

2 To facilitate comprehension, all dates in this chapter are furnished according to the Western solar calendar. The lunar calendar is extremely important for village affairs and is considered in Chapter IX.

[805]

- 000 3 The basis of the relationship between the tea farmer and tea processor is much more than an economic one and is considered more fully in Chapter VI.
- 4 Rice is the general term for all food in the same sense that bread is use in the Western world as illustrated by the phrase, "Give us this day our daily bread."
- 5 The hu (household) is more adequately defined in Chapter V where it is contrasted with the chia (family).
- 6 Patrilocal and matrilocal are employed with traditional meanings. The local variations are considered more fully in Chapter V.

Chapter IV: Formal Social Organization and Social Control

- 1 In the recent election of December 20, 1969, several additional seats in the National Assembly and the Legislative Yuan were assigned to Taiwan.
- 2 Subsequent to the study, Taipei was detached from the province and made a "Special Municipality" which is virtually equal to provincial status.
- 3 For more details on the pao chia system, see Note 6 to Chapter II.
- [556] 4 Most people who have enjoyed any reasonable level of financial success have invested in land. A minimal level of financial success appears to be a criteria for a leadership position. Since one goal of a man is to earn a living, by definition, a poor man must be considered ineffective and how could an ineffective man be a village leader?
- 5 For an extended discussion of Kan Ch'ing and its effects on Chinese social structure see Fried (1953: 102-3).
- [212]
[422] 6 A "chop" is a block on which the owner's name (in characters) is carved and which is dipped into an ink pad and used to stamp signatures on documents. It is considered to be more binding than a hand written signature and is the usual form which appears on checks and legal documents.
- [787] 7 The means of interpreting the shen pei which are used to question the gods are discussed more fully in Chapter VII.

Chapter V: Kinship

- 1 Although considered briefly in Chapter VII, for further elaboration, see Hsu (1949), C. K. Yang (1967) or L. Thompson (1961:34-53).
- 2 Where possible, this will be a kinship term such as son, brother's wife, etc., but if there is no kinship relationship, the listing will be "live together."
- 3 Although Lang uses the term "joint family," it appears that her explanations are more in accord with the

- 000 modern use of the term, "extended family."
- 4 The reader is referred to the original article for the detailed analysis. In brief, the restraints are related to the fact that a Stage III society is large, complex, and possesses a large number of various role specializations.
 - 5 This would assume that the "ideal" is larger than a nuclear unit; otherwise there would be no pressure for a change.
 - 6 The increased prosperity is demonstrated for both Taiwan as a whole and for the subject village in particular in Chapter III.
 - 7 It will later be demonstrated that the biological constraints may be overcome by such traditional practices as adoption and matrilocal marriage.
 - 8 The role of the potmaster and assistant potmaster are considered more fully in Chapter VI and a description of a recent Fire Purification Ceremony may be found in Chapter VII.
 - 9 The significance of the ancestral pot or censer is discussed in the last part of this chapter.
 - 10 For example, Morioka (1967:595-606) reports the number of stages for the family cycle in the United States is nine, Japan three, and China four. Each investigator for a single society often sets out his own conception of the number of stages so that there is little agreement. Glick and Parke (1967:187-8) for example, claim the United States has six stages rather than the nine cited above.
 - 11 No villagers participate in the Liao temple affairs and no one could direct me to it. The last visit was over ten years previous to my study when Liao Mo-tu copied down the next four words in his poem. He went with a Liao in Hsin Tien who is now dead. Liao did tell me we could probably find it if we just ask enough people surnamed Liao for someone was sure to know.
 - 12 There were two levels of people named Liao. One was merely those who possessed the same surname and were called ch'in tang. The other level included those who shared a known ancestor (demonstrated descent) and were called ch'in tsu although I found that in actual practice, either term might be used interchangeably. Tsu has been translated as both clan and lineage.
 - 13 Feng shui (geomancy, literally wind and water) is discussed more completely in Chapter VII.

Chapter VI: Voluntary Associations

- 1 The "Fire Purification Ceremony" is an important religious event periodically held in the area and is described in Chapter VII.
- 2 Gods are used in the same manner employed by people in the village. Westerners might call them god's statues

- but the statue is something more than a mere representation, it actually possesses some of the god's essence (See Chapter VII).
- 3 Shen pei may be used to question the gods with a fifty per cent probability of success (See Chapter VII).
 - 4 Potmasters and assistant potmasters (the pot refers to the bowl which holds the ash of an incense stick) are considered in Chapter VII.
 - 5 This is usually an informal village leader or elected official. The current li chang (mayor) lives in Sanlei and is often an ex officio member of various temple committees, particularly in connection with the financial records. The membership appointment is on a consensus basis rather than on the "god's selection" as with the shen pei.
 - 6 For example, many villagers unfairly blame him for the loss of the temple-owned land during the Land Reform programs of the national government. Villagers believe a good head could have circumvented the law.

Chapter VII: Religion

- 1 The explanation to follow in game theory is not, to my knowledge, original but I am unable to recall where I first heard it.
- 2 In terms of game theory, answers to the two questions allow a four-celled double binary outcome. A rational player will attempt to maximize his gain and simultaneously, minimize his loss (a minimax solution). The only logical choice is thus to be a believer.
- 3 According to Joseph Payne, an American who has made a hobby of collecting and identifying photographs of god's statues on Taiwan with the aid of Fr. Michael of the Asian Studies Department, Sophia University, one of the two appears to be an aborigine god. Two older men in the village claimed this was impossible but were not able to offer an alternative explanation.
- 4 Pai pai is either a bow or a dipping of the hands or both simultaneously but the term has been generalized to refer to all worship activities for a single affair and to the party and dinner which may be a part. In this latter respect, someone will say he is going to a pai pai, meaning, he is going to a party.
- 5 The incense pot or censer (hsiang lu) is a receptacle which holds ash from burnt incense sticks. When new sticks are lit, they are thrust into the ash for support in an upright position while burning. The ash may only be discarded on special occasions with proper ritual.
- 6 Of the remaining two spirits, one goes to hell and one to the grave (Gallin, 1966:220).

- 0007 As a term paper project in my undergraduate class, the late Joseph Payne conducted 50 surveys of ancestral shrines in the city of Taipei and found only 37 had ancestral tablets but all 50 had censers.
- [796]⁸ The question as to whether or not Confucianism is a religion has not yet been settled (C.K. Yang, 1967:26-7). Villagers believe that Confucius is a god who has the power to do good.
- 9 "Bad-hearted" is a literal translation. The idea which is conveyed seems to be a combination of insincerity and impropriety. On the other hand, a "good-hearted" person is usually one who does the right thing at the right time, quietly and modestly.
- 10 When invited to a wedding, the guest is expected to pay an amount in cash (enclosed in a red envelope) which is sufficient to cover the cost of his food and drink. The size of the donation which is proper varies but an informal communication system conveys the amount. I use donation advisedly for in practice, one often does not receive the formal invitation until after the donation has been delivered.

Chapter VIII: The Life Cycle

- 1 Subsequent to the completion of the study, the change to nine years has been officially inaugurated.
- 2 The children sleep in bed with their parents until about age ten (See subsequent section of this chapter).
- 3 He was often consulted by other villagers with regard to the accuracy of some line of poetry or quotation from the classics.
- 4 Wine houses serve drinks and food along with entertainment by prostitutes. Although use is made of the prostitutes, many trips are merely to drink, eat, and joke with the girls while sitting at a table with male friends.
- 5 There are a very few wealthier families who celebrate a man's fiftieth birthday.
- [886]⁶ Over age 60, everyone is considered to be old. Some people argue that old age commences at age 50.
- 7 This would mean that the 60th, 80th, and 100th are more important than the 70th or 90th although the increment of importance added by the greater age overwhelms the differences from the belief in numbers.
- 8 No one was sure what would be the nature of a ceremony for a married person who died young without having any children. The only cases of married barren people in recent memory were all those who married late in life and were both poor and with a small network of kinsmen. The ceremonies in each case were simple but this could be related to the latter two factors rather than the lack of descendants alone.

Chapter IX: Cycles in Time

- 0001 The date for celebrating the traditional religious holidays is determined by the lunar calendar and the modern national holidays, i.e., Restoration Day, Chiang Kai-shek's Birthday, etc., by the solar calendar.
- 2 See Burkhardt (1955: Volume II, Appendix II) for a complete diagram of the Ten Celestial Stems and Twelve Earthly Branches which are combined to make the full sixty-year cycle which takes its name from the first term, chia tzu.
- 3 There are poems and short books which specify the nature of each of the animals much on the order of the astrological horoscopes in the West. Since an animal is repeated every twelfth year, the year of a man's animal is considered extra lucky.
- [177] 4 Under the Japanese, there was a policy of celebrating solar New Year while the Chinese emphasize lunar New Year. In the latter part of the occupation, there was some celebration of both dates but in the village at present, little attention is paid to the solar New Year.
- 5 The particular date, exactly 105 days after the Winter Solstice, varies.
- [196] 6 Repetition of a word changes its meaning in Chinese; in the case of nouns or adjectives for example, the strength of the power or quality is increased.
- 7 Normally, baths are only taken in the evening after dinner is over and the day's work is complete although most people wash in the morning.
- 8 Negative numbers are yang and positive numbers are yin in one scheme but more commonly, even numbers are yang and odd numbers are yin.

Chapter X: Summary and Conclusion

- [463] 1 The only occupations traditionally open to women were concerned with procreation and sexual life: match-making, prostitution, procuressing, and midwifery (Lang, 1946:42).
- 2 The data is recorded in a family history and another family history she is said to have brought up to date contains a sample as does a memorial board she is said to have prepared.
- 3 Naturally this ignores the obvious and necessary physiological differences between the two sexes.
- 4 This is based on an assumption that children were most likely in school between the ages of six and twelve.
- [454] 5 A man in T'oulei once won a government lottery and invested the entire large amount in land.
- 6 There are many existing biographies of the emperor's consorts. For a review of palace intrigues occurring

- in one short period of history and which emphasizes women's roles, see H. Levy (1958).
- 7 For example, a woman is the actual domineering head of the household and a major character in the greatest of all Chinese novels, Dream of the Red Chamber.
 - 8 Norma Diamond of the University of Michigan is currently conducting research into women's roles in Taiwan and Margery Wolf, author of House of Lim is doing a study of women's roles based on field work conducted previously in Taiwan.
 - 9 See discussion of M. Levy's approach to family composition in terms of the "ideal" versus "actual" level in Chapter V.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- 113 Alabaster, Ernest
1899 Notes and Commentaries on Chinese Criminal Law.
London: Luzac and Company.
- Albrecht, Ardon and Go Sin-gi
1965 A Guidebook for Christians on Taiwanese Customs and Superstitions. Taipei, Taiwan: Evangelical Lutheran Church Mimeograph.
- Asch, Solomon E.
1955 "Opinions and Social Pressure." Scientific American, Vol. 193, No. 5, 31-5.
- Baker, Hugh D. R.
1968 A Chinese Lineage Village: Sheung Shui. Stanford: Stanford University Press.
- Barclay, George W.
1954 Colonial Development and Population in Taiwan. Princeton: Princeton University Press.
- Bavelas, Alex
1950 "Communication Patterns in Task-Oriented Groups." Journal of the Acoustical Society of America, Vol. 22, 725-30.
- Benedict, Ruth
1934 Patterns of Culture. New York: New American Library.
- Bessao, Frank B.
1964 "Some Social Effects of Land Reform in a Village on the Taichung Plain." Journal of the China Society, Vol. IV, 15-28.
1965 Research Concerning the Social Consequences of Land Reform on Taiwan. (Unpublished Manuscript).
- Bloodworth, Dennis
1966 The Chinese Looking Glass. New York: Dell Publishing Company, Inc.
- Bodde, Derk
1946 "Dominant Ideas." In China, Harley F. MacNair (Ed.). Berkely and Los Angeles: University of

544

California Press.

- 113 1957 China's Cultural Tradition: What and Whither.
New York: Holt, Rinehart and Winston.
- Bogardus, Emory S.
1958 "Racial Distance Changes in the United States
During the Past Thirty Years." Sociology and
Social Research, Vol. 43, 127-35.
- 1959 "Racial Reactions by Regions." Sociology and
Social Research, Vol. 43, 286-90.
- Broom, Leonard and Selznick, Philip
1955 Sociology, Third Edition. New York: Harper and
Row.
- Buchler, Ira R. and Selby, Henry A.
1968 Kinship and Social Organization: An Introduction
to Theory and Method. New York: The MacMillan
Company.
- Buck, J. Lossing
1930 Chinese Farm Economy: A Study of 2866 Farms in
Seventeen Locations and Seven Provinces in China.
Chicago: University of Chicago Press.
- Burkhardt, V. R.
1953- Chinese Creeds and Customs. 3 Vols. Hong Kong:
1958 South China Morning Post, Limited.
- Caplow, Theodore and McGee, Reece J.
1962 The Academic Marketplace. New York: Basic Books.
- Carroll, Thomas D.
1962 "The Hidden Significance of the I Ching Diagrams"
Journal of the China Society, Vol. II, 31-49.
- 1963 "Some Cyclical Characteristics of Chinese Astro-
logy." Journal of the China Society, Vol. III,
4-21.
- Chang Kwang-chih
1956 "A Brief Survey of the Archaeology of Formosa."
Southwestern Journal of Anthropology, Vol. XII,
371-83.
- Chang Yen-t'ien
1954 Land Reform in Taiwan. Taichung: Department of
Agricultural Economics, Taiwan Provincial College
of Agriculture.
- Chen, C.
1961 Land Reform in Taiwan. Taipei: China Publishing

545

Company.

- 113 Chen Kao-tang
1967 "Taiwan Thrust." Far Eastern Economic Review,
January 19, 96-104.
- Chen Shao-hsing
1963 "Pattern of Fertility in Taiwan: Report of a
Survey Made in 1957." The Journal of Social
Science, Vol. 13, Taipei, Taiwan: College of
Law, National Taiwan University.
- China Yearbook: 1966-67
1967 Taipei, Taiwan: China Publishing Company.
- Chiu, Vermier Y.
1966 Marriage Laws and Customs of China. Hong Kong:
Institute of Advanced Chinese Studies and Re-
search, New Asia College, The Chinese Univer-
sity of Hong Kong.
- Coale, Ansley J.
1965 "Estimates of Average Size of Households." In
Aspects of the Analysis of Family Structure,
Coale, et al. Princeton: Princeton University
Press.
- Cohen, Myron L.
1969 "Agnatic Kinship in South Taiwan." Ethnology,
Vol. VIII, No. 3, 167-82.
- Cooley, Charles Horton
1909 Social Organization. New York: Scribner's.
- Coughlin, R. J.
1960 Double Identity: The Chinese in Modern Thailand.
Hong Kong: Hong Kong University Press.
- Cressey, George B.
1955 Land of the 500 Million: A Geography of China.
New York: McGraw-Hill Book Co.
- 1964 Asia's Lands and Peoples. New York: McGraw-
Hill Book Co.
- Crook, David and Crook, Isabel
1959 Revolution in a Chinese Village: Ten Mile Inn.
London: Routledge and Regan Paul Ltd.
- 1966 The First Years of Yangyi Commune. London:
Routledge and Regan Paul Ltd.

- 113 Davidson, James W.
1903 The Island of Formosa, Past and Present. New York: MacMillan and Company.
- DeGroot, J. J. M.
1892- The Religious System of China. 6 Vols. Leyden:
1910 Brill.
- Department of Information, Taiwan Provincial Government
1962 Redemarcation of Land in Taiwan. Taipei, Taiwan.
- Diamond, Norma
1969 K'un Shen: A Taiwan Village. New York: Holt, Rinehart and Winston.
- Durkheim, Emile
1949 The Division of Labor in Society. Translated from the French by George Simpson. Glencoe, Ill.: The Free Press.
- 1951 Suicide. Translated from the French by George Simpson. Glencoe, Ill.: The Free Press.
- Eggan, Fred
1954 "Social Anthropology and the Method of Controlled Comparison." American Anthropologist, Vol. 56, 734-63.
- Eichorn, Werner
1964 Chinese Civilization. Translated from the German by Faber and Faber Limited. New York: Frederick A. Praeger, Inc.
- Elliott, Alan J. A.
1955 Chinese Spirit-Medium Cults in Singapore. London: Published for Department of Anthropology, The London School of Economics and Political Science.
- Embree, John F.
1939 Suye Mura, A Japanese Village. Chicago: University of Chicago Press.
- Emery, Robert P. and Lee, Henry P.
1967 "Economic Trends in Asia in 1966." Asian Survey, Vol. VII, 807-23.
- Epstein, A. L.
1967 "Editor's Preface." In The Craft of Social Anthropology, A. L. Epstein (Ed.). London: Tavistock Publications.
- Evans-Pritchard, E. E.
1940 The Nuer. London: Oxford University Press.

- 113 Fairbank, John K.
1948 The United States and China. New York: The Viking Press.
- Fairbank, John K. and Reischauer, Edwin O.
1958 East Asia: The Great Tradition. Boston: Houghton Mifflin Company.
- Farrell, Raleigh
1964 Linguistic and Archaeological History of Taiwan. (Unpublished Manuscript).
- Fei Hsia-tung
1939 Peasant Life in China. London: Kegan Paul, Trench, Trubner and Co., Ltd.
- Feng Han-yi (Feng Han-chi)
1948 The Chinese Kinship System. Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard-Yenching Institute, Harvard University Press (Reprinted from Harvard Journal of Asiatic Studies, Vol. II, No. 2, July, 1937).
- Festinger, Leon
1957 A Theory of Cognitive Dissonance. Stanford: Stanford University Press.
- Firth, Raymond
1951 Elements of Social Organization. London: Watts and Co.
- Portes, Meyer
1949 The Web of Kinship Among the Tallensi. London: Oxford University Press.
- 1958 "Introduction." In The Developmental Cycle in Domestic Groups, J. Goody (Ed.). Cambridge Papers in Social Anthropology No. 1. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Poster, George M.
1967a "What is a Peasant?" In Peasant Society: A Reader, Jack M. Potter, May N. Diaz, and George M. Foster (Eds.). Boston: Little, Brown and Company.
- 1967b "Peasant Society and the Image of Limited Good." American Anthropologist, Vol. 67, No. 2.
- Franke, Wolfgang
1958 Das Jahrhundert Der Chinesischen Revolution 1851-1949. Munchen: R. Oldenbourg. Translated from the German by Franz Schurmann. (Reprinted in The China Reader: Imperial China, Franz Schurmann and Orville Schell (Eds.). New

York: Random House, Vintage Books .

- Freedman, Maurice
1957 Chinese Family and Marriage in Singapore. London: Her Majesty's Stationery Office.
- 1958 Lineage Organization in Southeastern China. London: University of London, Athlone Press.
- 1963 "A Chinese Phase in Social Anthropology." British Journal of Sociology, Vol. I, No. 19, 1-19.
- 1966 Chinese Lineage and Society: Fukien and Kwangtung. London: University of London, Athlone Press.
- Fried, Morton
1953 Fabric of Chinese Society, A Study of the Social Life of a Chinese County Seat. New York: Praeger.
- 1957 "The Classification of Corporate Unilineal Descent Groups." Journal of the Royal Anthropological Institute, Vol. 87, 1-30.
- 1966 "Some Political Aspects of Clanship in a Modern Chinese City." In Political Anthropology, Marc J. Swartz, Victor W. Turner, and Arthur Tuden, (Eds.). Chicago: Aldine Publishing Company.
- Fukutake, Tadashi
1967 Asian Rural Society: China, India, Japan. Seattle: University of Washington Press.
- Gallin, Bernard
1960 "Matrilateral and Affinal Relationships of a Taiwanese Village." American Anthropologist, Vol. LXII, No. 4, 632-42.
- 1966 Hsin Hsing, Taiwan: A Chinese Village in Change. Berkeley and Los Angeles: University of California Press.
- 1968 "Political Factionalism and Its Impact on Chinese Village Social Organization." In Local-Level Politics, Marc J. Swartz (Ed.). Chicago: Aldine Publishing Co.
- Gamble, Sidney D.
1954 Ting Hsien: A North China Rural Community. Institute of Pacific Relations.
- 1962 North China Villages. Berkeley and Los Angeles: University of California Press.

- 113 Geddes, W. R.
1963 Peasant Life in Communist China. Ithaca, New York: Society for Applied Anthropology.
- Geertz, Clifford
1962 "Studies in Peasant Life: Community and Society." In Biennial Review of Anthropology - 1961, Bernard J. Siegel (Ed.). Stanford: Stanford University Press.
- Glick, Paul C. and Parke, Robert Jr.
1967 "New Approaches in Studying the Life Cycle of the Family." Demography, Vol. 2, 187-202.
- Gluckman, Max
1964 Politics, Law, and Ritual in Tribal Society. Chicago: Aldine Publishing Company.
- Goode, William J.
1963 World Revolution and Family Patterns. London: The Free Press of Glencoe, Collier-MacMillan Limited.
- Goody, J.
1958 The Development Cycle in Domestic Groups. Cambridge Papers in Social Anthropology, No. 1.
- Grajdanzev, Andrew J.
1942 Formosa Today. New York: Institute of Pacific Relations.
- Gullahorn, John T. and Gullahorn, Jeanne E.
1963 "A Computer Model of Elementary Social Behavior." In Computers and Thought, E. A. Feigenbaum and J. Feldman (Eds.). New York: McGraw Hill.
- 1964 "The Computer as a Tool for Theory Development." In Uses of Computers in Anthropology, Dell Hymes (Ed.). Hague, Netherlands: Mouton and Company.
- Hammel, E. A.
1961 "The Family Cycle in a Coastal Peruvian Slum and Village." American Anthropologist, Vol. 63, 989-1005.
- Han Suyin
1966 "Social Transformation in China." In Contemporary China, Ruth Adams (Ed.). New York: Pantheon Books.
- Heiss, Jerold
1968 "An Introduction to the Elements of Role Theory." Family Roles and Interaction, Jerold Heiss (Ed.). Chicago: Rand McNally and Company.

113 Herbert, Jean

- 1965 An Introduction to Asia. Translated from the French by Manu Banerji. New York: Oxford University Press.

Hoebel, E. Adamson

- 1960 The Cheyennes: Indians of the Great Plains. New York: Holt, Rinehart and Winston, Inc.

Hsiao Kung-chuan

- 1960 Rural China: Imperial Control in the Nineteenth Century. Seattle: University of Washington Press.

Hsieh Chiao-min

- 1964 Taiwan - Ilha Formosa. Washington: Butterworths.

Hsu, Francis L. K.

- 1943 "The Myth of Chinese Family Size." American Journal of Sociology, Vol. 48, 555-562.
- 1949 Under the Ancestors' Shadow, Chinese Culture and Personality. London: Routledge and Kegan Paul, Ltd.
- 1953 Americans and Chinese: Two Ways of Life. New York: Abelard-Schuman.
- 1963 Clan, Caste and Club. New York: Van Nostrand, Reinhold Company.
- 1969 The Study of Literate Civilizations. New York: Holt, Rinehart and Winston.

Hu Hsien-chin

- 1948 The Common Descent Group in China and Its Functions. New York: Viking Fund Publications in Anthropology No. 10.

Hu Shih

- 1934 The Chinese Renaissance. Chicago: University of Chicago Press.

Johnson, Raymond V.

- 1966 "A Northern Taiwan Village." (Unpublished Manuscript).

Kendler, Howard H.

- 1968 Basic Psychology. New York: Appleton-Century-Crofts.

Kerr, George H.

- 1965 Formosa Betrayed. Boston: Houghton Mifflin Company.

- 113 Kirby, E. Stuart
1960 Rural Progress in Taiwan. Taipei, Taiwan: Chinese-American Joint Commission on Rural Reconstruction.
- Koo, Anthony Y. G.
1968 The Role of Land Reform in Economic Development: A Case Study of Taiwan. New York: Frederick A. Praeger.
- Koyama, Takashi
1961 The Changing Social Position of Women in Japan. Geneva: UNESCO.
- Kublin, Hyman
1968 China: Selected Readings. Boston: Houghton Mifflin Company.
- Kulp, Daniel H.
1925 Country Life in South China. New York: Teacher's College.
- Landesberger, Henry A.
1958 Hawthorne Revisited. Ithaca: Cornell University Press.
- Lang, Olga
1946 Chinese Family and Society. New Haven: Yale University Press.
- Latourette, Kenneth Scott
1959 The Chinese, Their History and Culture. New York: The MacMillan Company.
- 1964 China. Englewood Cliffs, N. J.: Prentice-Hall Spectrum Books.
- Lee, D. J.
1967 "Chinese Women and Men." The China News, January 17, 2.
- Lee, Rose Hum
1949 "Research on the Chinese Family." American Journal of Sociology, Vol. 54, 497-504.
- Levy, Howard S.
1958 Harem Favorites of an Illustrious Celestial. Taichung, Taiwan: Chung-T'ai Printing Company, Ltd.
- Levy, Marion J., Jr.
1949 The Family Revolution in Modern China. Cambridge: Harvard University Press.

- 113 1965 "Aspects of the Analysis of Family Structure." In Aspects of the Analysis of Family Structure, Coale, et al. Princeton: Princeton University Press.
- 1967 "The Role of the Family." In Chinese Society Under Communism: A Reader, William T. Liu (Ed.). New York: John Wiley and Sons, Inc.
- Lin Yueh-hwa
1947 The Golden Wing, A Sociological Study of Chinese Familism. London: Kegan Paul, Trench, Trubner and Co., Ltd.
- Linton, Ralph
1936 The Study of Man. New York: Appleton-Century-Crofts.
- 1945 The Cultural Background of Personality. New York: Appleton-Century-Crofts.
- Liu Hui-chen Wang
1959 The Traditional Chinese Clan Rules. Locust Valley, New York, Association for Asian Studies Monograph No. 7.
- Liu, Paul K. C.
1967 The Use of Household Registration Records In Measuring the Fertility Level of Taiwan. Translated from the Chinese by William L. Parish. Taipei, Taiwan: Academia Sinica, Institute of Economics, Economic Papers, No. 2.
- Liu Su-feng
1966 Disguised Unemployment in Taiwan Agriculture. (Unpublished Ph.D. Dissertation, University of Illinois.)
- Lockwood, D.
1964 "Ideal-Type Analysis." In A Dictionary of the Social Sciences, Julius Gould and William L. Kold (Eds.). New York: UNESCO.
- MacKay, George Leslie
1896 From Far Formosa: The Island, Its People and Missions. New York: Fleming H. Revell Co.
- Mair, Lucy
1969 Anthropology and Social Change. London School of Economics Monographs on Social Anthropology, No. 38. London: University of London, The Athlone Press.

- 113 Maretski, Thomas and Maretski, Hatsumi
1966 Taira: An Okinawa Village. Six Cultures Series:
Vol. VII. New York: John Wiley and Sons, Inc.
- Merton, Robert A.
1957 Social Theory and Social Structure. Glencoe,
Ill.: The Free Press.
- Mitchell, J. C.
1956 The Yao Village: A Study in the Social Structure
of a Nayasaland Tribe. Manchester: University of
Manchester Press.
- Morioka, Kiyomi
1967 "Life Cycle Patterns in Japan, China, and the
United States." Journal of Marriage and the
Family, Vol. 29, 595-606.
- Murdock, George P.
1957 "World Ethnographic Survey." American Anthro-
pologist, Vol. LIX, No. 4, 664-87.
1967 "Ethnographic Atlas: A Summary." Ethnology,
Vol. VI, No. 2, 109-236.
- Myrdal, Gunnar
1968 Asian Drama: An Inquiry Into the Poverty of
Nations. Three Volumes. New York: Pantheon.
- Myrdal, Jan
1965 Report from a Chinese Village. New York:
Pantheon.
- Nadel, S. F.
1951 The Foundations of Social Anthropology. Glencoe,
Ill.: The Free Press.
1957 The Theory of Social Structure. Glencoe, Ill.:
The Free Press.
- Nicholas, Ralph W.
1965 "Factions: A Comparative Analysis." In Political
Systems and the Distribution of Power. London:
Tavistock Publications, Association of Social
Anthropologists, Monograph No. 2.
- Nuttanson, M. Y.
1963 The Physical Environment and Agriculture of
Central and South China, Hong Kong, and Taiwan
(Formosa). Washington, D.C.: American Institute
of Crop Ecology.

113 O'Hara, Albert R.

1955 The Position of Women in Early China. Hong Kong: Orient Publishing Company.

1962 "Changing Attitudes Toward Marriage and the Family in Free China." Journal of the China Society, Vol. II, 57-67.

1963 "The Confucian Ideal of Womanhood." Journal of the China Society, Vol. III, 76-83.

Okada, Uzurū

1949 Kiso Shakai - Elementary Groups of Society. Tokyo: Kobundo.

Osgood, Cornelius

1963 Village Life in Old China. New York: The Ronald Press Company.

Parsons, Talcott

1951 The Social System. London: Collier-MacMillan, Limited.

Pasternak, Burton

1967 Taipei: A Study of Agnatic Atrophy and Village Integration. (Unpublished Ph.D. Dissertation, Columbia University).

1969 "The Role of the Frontier in Chinese Lineage Development." The Journal of Asian Studies, Vol. XXVIII, No. 3, 551-62.

Plummer, Mark

1967 "Chiang K'ai-shek and the National Assembly." In Studies on Asia, Sidney D. Brown (Ed.). Lincoln: The University of Nebraska Press.

1969 "Taiwan: The 'New Look' in Government." Asian Survey, Vol. IX, 113-31.

Potter, Jack M.

1967 "Introduction: Peasants in the Modern World." In Peasant Society: A Reader, Jack M. Potter, May N. Diaz, and George M. Foster, (Eds.). Boston: Little, Brown and Company.

1968 Capitalism and the Chinese Peasant. Berkeley and Los Angeles: University of California Press.

Radcliffe-Brown, A. R.

1952 Structure and Function in Primitive Society. Glencoe, Ill.: The Free Press.

- 113 Raper, A. F.
1953 Rural Taiwan - Problem and Promise. Taipei,
Taiwan: Joint Commission on Rural Reconstruction.
- Redfield, Robert
1930 Tepetztlán: A Mexican Village. Chicago: Univer-
sity of Chicago Press.
- 1956 Peasant Society and Culture. Chicago: University
of Chicago Press.
- Riesman, David
1950 The Lonely Crowd. New Haven, Conn.: Yale Univer-
sity Press.
- Riggs, Fred W.
1952 Formosa Under Chinese Nationalist Rule. New York:
The MacMillan Company.
- Rokeach M. and Rothman, G.
1965 "The Principle of Belief Congruence and the
Congruity Principle as Models of Cognitive Inter-
action." Psychology Review, Vol. 72, 124-43.
- Sampson, R. V.
1964 "Tradition." In A Dictionary of the Social
Sciences, Julius Gould and William L. Kolb (Eds.).
New York: UNESCO.
- Shen, T. H.
1964 Agricultural Development - Taiwan Since World War
II. Ithaca, New York: Comstock Publishing
Associates.
- Siegal, Bernard J. and Beals, Alan F.
1960 "Pervasive Factionalism." American Anthropologist
Vol. 62, 394-417.
- Skinner, G. William
1957 Chinese Society in Thailand: An Analytical His-
tory. Ithaca: Cornell University Press.
- Smith, Arthur H.
1899 Village Life in China. New York: Fleming H.
Revell Company.
- Straelen, H. V.
1936 The Japanese Woman Looking Forward. Tokyo:
Kobundo.
- Sweetser, Dorian A.
1964 "Role." In A Dictionary of the Social Sciences,
Julius Gould and William L. Kolb (Eds.). New York:
UNESCO.

- 113 Takekoshi, Yosaburo
1907 Japanese Rule in Formosa. Translated from the
Japanese by George Brathwaite. London: Longmans,
Green, and Co.
- Tan Giok-lan
1963 The Chinese of Sukabumi: A Study in Social and
Cultural Accomodation. Ithaca: Cornell University
Press.
- Tawney, R. H.
1932 Land and Labor in China. London: George Allen
and Unwin Ltd.
- Thelin, Mark and Li Wen-lang
1963 "Religion in Two Taiwanese Villages." Journal
of the China Society, Vol. 3, 44-57.
- Thompson, Laurence G.
1969 Chinese Religion: An Introduction. Belmont,
California: Dickenson Publishing Company, Inc.
- Thompson, Warren S.
1959 Population and Progress in the Far East. Chicago:
The University of Chicago Press.
- Topley, Marjorie
1968 "Chinese Religion and Rural Cohesion in the Nine-
teenth Century." Journal of the Hong Kong Branch
of the Royal Asiatic Society, Vol 8, 9-43.
- Tregear, T. R.
1965 A Geography of China. Chicago: Aldine Publishing
Co.
- Turner, Victor W.
1957 Schism and Continuity in an African Society: A
Study of Ndembu Village Life. Manchester: Man-
chester University Press.
- United Nations, Statistical Office
1968 Statistical Yearbook. New York.
- United Nations, Statistical Office, Department of Economic
and Social Affairs.
1967 Demographic Yearbook. New York.
- Waley, Arthur
1941 170 Chinese Poems. London: Constable and Company.
- Ward, Barbara E.
1954 "A Hong Kong Fishing Village." Journal of Orient-
al Studies, Vol. I, No. 1.

113 Wilkinson, H. P.

- 1926 The Family Life in Classical China. Shanghai:
Press of Kelly and Walsh, Ltd.

Wolf, Arthur P.

- 1965 Marriage and Adoption in a Hokkien Village.
(Unpublished Ph.D. Dissertation, Cornell University).
- 1966 "Child Association, Sexual Attraction and the
Incest Tabu: A Chinese Case." American Anthropologist, Vol. 68, 883-96.
- 1968 "Adopt a Daughter-in-law, Mary a Sister: A Chinese
Solution to the Problem of the Incest Tabu." American Anthropologist, Vol. 70, 864-74.

Wolf, Margery

- 1968 The House of Lim. New York: Appleton-Century-Crofts.

Wu, C. K. and Lee, T. D.

- 1963 The Demand for and Supply of Farm Labor of the
Vocational Students. Taichung, Taiwan: Chung
Hsin University.

Yang, Martin C.

- 1945 A Chinese Village, Taitou, Shantung Province. New
York: Columbia University Press.
- 1962 "Changes in Family Life in Rural Taiwan." Journal
of the China Society, Vol. II, 68-79.
- 1963 "Land Reform and Community Development in Taiwan." Journal
of the China Society, Vol. 3, 65-75.

Yang, C. K.

- 1959a The Chinese Family in the Communist Revolution.
Cambridge: Harvard University Press.
- 1959b A Chinese Village in Early Communist Transition.
Cambridge: Harvard University Press.
- 1961 Religion in Chinese Society. Berkeley and Los
Angeles: University of California Press.

GLOSSARY A

PROPER PLACE NAMES

103

二聖村	Erhlei (Erh Lei Ts'un)	四聖村	Szulei (Szu Lei Ts'un)
福建	Fukien	臺北	Taichung
河南	Honan	臺南	Tainan
新店	Hsin Tien	臺北	Taipei
花蓮	Hualien	臺中	Taitung
高雄	Kaohsiung	大聖里	Talei (Ta Lei Li)
基隆	Keelung	臺灣	Taiwan
廣東	Kwantung	頭聖村	T'oulei (T'ou Lei Ts'un)
良地村	Pouti (Pou Ti Ts'un)	五聖村	Wulei (Wu Lei Ts'un)
三聖村	Sanlei (San Lei Ts'un)		

GLOSSARY B

CHINESE TERMS AND SHORT PHRASES

104 Characters	Romanization		English Equivalent
	Mandarin	Taiwanese	
章	Chang	Chiu	Signature stamp
招夫	Chao fu	Chiao hu	Adopted-in husband
拆伙	Ch'ai hwo	Chiat hoe	Family division (Separation of stove)
招弟	Chao ti	Chiao ti	Adopt a child in order to attract a baby brother
襟袍	Ch'i pao	Tng sa	Tight-collared slit-sided dress
吉寿	Chi shou	Kea shu	Ninetieth birthday (senior longevity)
甲	Chia	Ka	Unit of land measure equal to about 2.39 acres
家	Chia	Ka	
家長	Chia chang	Ka taung	Head of family
甲子	Chia tsu	Ka' chu'	First term in the 60-year cycle of years, calendar
結拜兄弟	Chieh pai hsiung ti	Kea pai' hia ti	
斤	Chin	Kin	Unit of weight equal to about one and one third pounds
親戚	Ch'in Ch'i	Chhin Chiang	Affinal Relative

104 親堂	Ch'in t'ang	Chhin tung	Agnatic kinsmen by virtue of possession of a common surname
親族	Ch'in tau	Chhin tsou	Agnatic kinsmen with demonstrated descent
清明節	Ch'ing ming chieh	Chin meng tast	Clear and Bright Festival
豬人	Chu jen	Ti lang	Village to-fu salesman (pig man)
中秋節	Chung chiu chieh	Tiong chiu tast	Mid-Autumn or Moon Festival
中壽	Chung shou	Tiong shu	70th Birthday (middle longevity)
中元	Chung yuan	Tiong kuang	Festival of the Hungry Ghosts
耳手	Erh tzu	Hi tsa	Handles on censor of ancestors (ears)
法師	Pa shih	Hoat su	Shaman
房	Pang	Bong	Branch of a Clan
風水	Peng shui	Pung tsui	Geomancy (wind and water)
府	Fu	Hu'	Government district
好兄弟	Hao Hsiung Ti	Ho hia ti	Good brothers (unworshipped ancestors)
黑頭	Hei t'ou	O tao'	Priest important for funerals (black headed Taoist)
喜沖喜	Hei chung hai	Hei chon hai	Good counteracts good
稀飯	Hai fan	Mei	Rice gruel
小壽	Hsia shou	Shia shu	60th birthday small longevity)
香爐	Hsiang lu	Hiu lo	Ancestral censor

561

104 新年	Hsin nien	Chian goeh	New Year
户	Hu	Hou	Household
紅頭	Hung t'ou	Han tao'	Priest important for curing illness (red- headed Taoist)
義警	I' Ching	I' Keng	Voluntary policemen
感情	Kan ch'ing	Koung chin	Emotional relation- ships or feelings
乾杯	Kan pei	Kan poe	A toast - bottoms up
高鼻子	Kao pi tzu	To' phi a	Westerner (big nose)
觀音	Kuan yin	Kuang yim	Goddess of Mercy
鬼	Kuei	Kuei	Malevolent divine powers
公廳	Kung t'ing	Kong Tsing	Central room in house
國語	Kuo yu	Kok gi	Mandarin (national language)
里	Li	Li'	A political unit smaller than a town- ship
里長	Li chang	Li' taung	Mayor (head of a <u>li</u>)
隣	Lin	Lin	Neighborhood, an official government unit
隣長	Lin chang	Lin taung	Head of a <u>lin</u>
爐主	Lu chu	Chan tsu	Pot master (official in charge of a reli- gious ceremony)
滿月	Man yueh	Moun goeh	Ceremony for the 30- day-old baby (full month)
媽祖	Matsu	Ma tsou	An important goddess

閩南話

八字	Min nan hua Tai oan oe	Southern min, a Chinese dialect
拜拜	Pa tzu Peh li	Year, month, day, and hour of birth (eight characters)
半杯	Pai pai Pai' pai'	A ritual or the celebration part of a ceremonial event
保甲	Pan pei Pang poe	A Toast - half a glass
蓬萊	Pao chia Pou ka'	Traditional system of local government
上壽	P'eng lai Pung lai	Variety of rice
上水	Shang shou Shoung shu	80th birthday (high longevity)
上元	Shang shui Siong tsui	Village neighborhood in Sanlei (above the water)
神	Shang yuan Shoung Kuang	Lantern Festival
神杯	Shen Shen	Gods or good divine powers
神位	Shen pei Sin poe	Spirit sticks for communicating with the gods
壽	Shen wei Sin we	Ancestor or soul tablet
養媳	Shou Shu	Long life
隨便	Siaosiv Yong shin Po	Adopted Daughter Marriage
下水	Swei bien Chhin Chhai	A toast - as much as you like
香肉	Sya shui Ha tsui	A village neighborhood in Sanlei (below the water)
大家度	Syang chou Kou ba	Dog meat (fragrant meat)
	Ta chia ting Tua Ka teng	Extended family

104 大生日

歌仔戲

胎神

太陰

真人

地支

地理

頭腐

再來

村

族

土地公

土地婆

端午節

冬至

五行

陽

陰

Ta sheng
jih

Taiwan Hsi

Tai shen

Tai yin

Tao jen

Ti chih

Ti li

To fu

Ts'ai lai

Ts'un

Tsu

T'u ti kung

T'u to Po

Tuan Wu
Chieh

Tung chieh

Wu hsing

Yang

Yin

Tua sien
jit

Goa a hi

Tai' sin'

Tai yin

To jin

Te che

Te li

Tao hu

Tsai lai

Chhun

Tsuo'

T'ou te
kong

T'ou te ma

Leng chiu
tsat

Tang tsat

Go chhian

Yong

Yim

Big Birthday

Taiwanese Opera

God of the pregnant
womb

Goddess of the moon

Priests (Men of the
Tao)Twelve terrestrial
branchesVariant form of
geomancy, activities
not related to dead
Bean Curd

Variety of Rice

Village

Clan or lineage

Earth God

Wife of Earth God

Dragon Boat
Festival

Winter solstice

Five primary ele-
ments: fire, water,
earth, wood, metal
Male principle of
yin-yang dichotomyFemale principle of
yin-yang dicotomy

GLOSSARY C

CHINESE SENTENCES AND LONGER PHRASES

104

你最知道 You know best.

不論你想甚麼 Whatever you think.

把鞋子放在床下 Putting the shoes under the bed.

把他們推在一起 Pushing them together.

我會太害羞 I would be too embarrassed.

這不會很有趣 It would not be interesting.

今天的青年做更多的決定 Young people make more decisions now.

可能女孩比男孩更有價值 Perhaps girls are worth more than boys.

那就跟豬一樣 That is just like the pigs.

今天你不是只能拿那一個 That is not the only one you will get today.

104 当两个人到法庭时,他们都是输者 When two men go to court, both loose.

近亲不如近隣 A good neighbor may be more important than a distant relative.

打破饭碗 Breaking someone's rice bowl.

敢花钱 Dare to spend money.

你看起来好像娼妓 You look like a prostitute.

我会买便宜一点 I could get it cheaper.

你买了什么,多少钱? What did you buy? How much was it?

你到那裏? 你做了什麼? Where have you been? What did you do?

你要到那裏去? 你要去做什麼? Where are you going? What do you intend to do?

4: Barnett

AD5 Taiwan Hokkien AD5
Sanlei Ts'un

571

575

[Different associations may be found under variety of categories. For Money Lending Club category 525 has been used; for Sworn Brothers Association category 573, 581; for God's Association and Temple Association category 474.]

4: Barnett

613

AD5 Taiwan Hokkien AD5
Sanlei Ts'un

[Information on tsu has been filed in category 618.]